

Chapter 1701 - Mirror Scroll

Chapter 1701: Mirror Scroll

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After who knew how long, the saint carriage gradually calmed and quieted.

In the car, Zhang Ruochen had already woken up. During the “attack,” he already knew that he wasn’t dreaming. Now, he held Fairy Tianchu’s delicate snow-white frame in his arms. He calmed down all of his emotions and was silent for a long time, not saying a word.

Fairy Tianchu was like a flower after a rainstorm. She rested her pretty head on Zhang Ruochen’s right shoulder, as calm as water. The lust in her eyes had dissipated. Her slender neck, thin waist, straight legs... Her flawless body clung to Zhang Ruochen’s body like soft soil.

Even though she was naked, her serene eyes didn’t carry any impurities. She still looked like an otherworldly fairy.

Zhang Ruochen placed his hand on Fairy Tianchu’s fatless stomach. After a long while, he finally said, “This...”

He wanted to say that this was an accident, but he clearly was already clear-headed. He understood what was happening, but he didn’t stop, so he couldn’t say the word “accident.”

Fairy Tianchu was calmer than Zhang Ruochen had imagined. “You don’t have to explain. There’s no need. Since you didn’t run away and hurried back, it means that you at least are worthy. You don’t disgust me.”

“Don’t worry,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I will take responsibility for what I do.”

“If you take responsibility for me, then what about Chenjing?”

Zhang Ruochen was acting a bit awkward. He was about to explain his true relationship with the Thousand Star Maiden, but Fairy Tianchu said, “Don’t be too greedy and want to have two fairies in your arms. You won’t even know how you died.”

Fairy Tianchu left Zhang Ruochen’s body. As soon as she straightened her back, she let out a moan and furrowed her brows. She only recovered after a pause. “I’ll believe your words for now! But you have to understand, it’s too laughable for you to say that with your current cultivation. Your cultivation, background, and talent are all below me. How will you take responsibility for me? Are you sure you’re taking responsibility instead of relying on me?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at her calmly.

Fairy Tianchu seemed to realize that her words had really hurt Zhang Ruochen’s self-esteem. Her eyes grew dazed and then she said, “Cultivate well! If you can surpass me, I can give you a chance to take responsibility for me.”

She was clear that giving that chance to him now was harmful.

She had too many pursuers. Some were very extreme Evil Way figures. Not only did they have strong backgrounds, their own abilities and tactics were strong too. How could Lin Yue beat them?

But Lin Yue had a strong mind and was talented in the Spatial Way. He may not be weaker than them.

“More than half of the Harmony Pill poison has dissipated. The remaining poison can’t threaten us. With our cultivations, we should be able to refine it.”

Fairy Tianchu put on a white saint robe of ice silk and put her veil back on. She instantly turned back into a fairy who was even more beautiful.

“You’re done now? Shouldn’t you come out for a talk? Ha.”

Mo Xiaogu’s laughter sounded outside the carriage.

Fairy Tianchu’s expression faltered. She immediately rushed out of the carriage in a white streak.

“What’s going on? Why is this woman here?”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He immediately flipped over. Without time to put on clothes, he activated the Word Armor and rushed out.

The saint carriage wasn’t in the cave with chaotic Kang Qi. Someone had guided it into the dark purple valley.

Mo Xiaogu sat on the top of the carriage with a propped leg. She messed with a silver scroll and shook her head. “Lin Yue, how come I can’t open your Time and Space Secret Guide?”

Zhang Ruochen was shaken. He kept the guide with him at all times. How did it fall into her hands?

And where did the Amazing Little Taoist go?

His low cry came from under the carriage. “Amazing, amazing... Come help me. I can’t keep going...”

Zhang Ruochen focused and saw that the Amazing Little Taoist was tied by a Saint-binding Chain to the left wheel of the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. He was covered in injuries and dirt.

Zhang Ruochen struck with Sword Way Xuangang to cut the chain and free the Amazing Little Taoist.

As soon as he was freed, he scampered to Zhang Ruochen’s side faster than a rabbit.

The entire time, Mo Xiaogu didn’t stop him. Instead, she took out a scroll and waved it at Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu. “Want to know what this is?”

Fairy Tianchu lifted a hand. The ring on her finger turned into the Rain Thread Divine Sword and flew out, forming a white arc. It cut down at Mo Xiaogu’s neck.

“So you slept with a man. Do you have to kill me to keep the secret so impatiently? Oh, wait. You slept with him twice, haha!”

Mo Xiaogu disappeared from the saint carriage. When she appeared again, she was standing on a broken bone of the skeleton’s chest.

Whoosh, whoosh!

The Rain Thread Divine Sword flew out, stabbing at Mo Xiaogu's forehead as a white thread.

Roar!

The Supreme Saint skeleton roared. It extended a bone hand and grabbed the sword. It wrapped it around its wrist and pulled Fairy Tianchu toward it.

Fairy Tianchu was forced to pull the Rain Thread Divine Sword back and put distance between them.

"If we really fight, you aren't my match at all," Mo Xiaogu said. "But I don't want to fight today. I want to have a nice chat with you."

"There's nothing to talk about," Fairy Tianchu said.

Mo Xiaogu's lips curled into an eerie smile. "Not necessarily."

She opened the scroll in her hands. Many mirrored images appeared on the scroll. Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu's voices and what happened in the carriage were all imprinted on it.

The Amazing Little Taoist widened his eyes with an exaggerated expression. He only took one glance before Zhang Ruochen slapped him unconscious.

Fairy Tianchu was embarrassed and furious. "Give it to me."

"If you submit to me and promise to do something for me, I'll return it to you."

"I won't submit to anyone."

Fairy Tianchu waved her Rain Thread Divine Sword again, attacking Mo Xiaogu crazily. Countless Sword Qi condensed in the valley instantly.

Fairy Tianchu was very advanced in the Sword Way. She could form Sword Way Xuangang.

Mo Xiaogu controlled the Supreme Saint skeleton to block the attacks. "Since you won't submit, then I'll have to project my mirrored records to the entire world. I'm sure many cultivators

would love to see you without clothes on. Of course, those talented men who love you will probably be disappointed, because their lovely fairy is so embarrassing when she's moaning in bed."

Fairy Tianchu's attacks intensified, but she'd just had sex with Zhang Ruochen and used up a lot of her strength. She wasn't at her peak state. The Supreme Saint skeleton was extremely strong, so her Rain Thread Divine Sword couldn't hurt Mo Xiaogu at all.

Zhang Ruochen knew how serious this was. He was about to use spatial power to attack Mo Xiaogu. No matter what, he had to get that scroll back.

At the same time, another group of cultivators hurried to the valley.

"It really is the fairy."

"We've been tracking the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage the entire time. We won't be wrong."

"Look, the fairy is fighting with a Supreme Saint monster. Let's go help her!"

...

A dozen cultivators rushed into the valley and attacked Mo Xiaogu and the Supreme Saint skeleton.

Zhang Ruochen had seen this group before. They followed beside Fairy Tianchu and were her pursuers.

They were all the cream of the crop and some were top fighters. For example, Crown Prince Dizu, the emperor of the Zangxu Civilization, and Deity Shiqing were all as strong as King Yan and Queen Lian.

Mo Xiaogu stared at the group of strong figures attacking her and her eyes turned cold. "How dare you all? You're surrounding a Supreme Saint monster and attacking. If I wasn't controlling it, you'd all be dead, don't you know?"

Boom!

Mo Xiaogu made the Supreme Saint monster attack fiercely and many pained cries sounded in the valley.

With each strike, the Supreme Saint skeleton would severely injure a cultivator. It would shatter half of his body, or break his spine, or stab right through his chest.

A moment later, a large mass fell to the ground.

Crown Prince Dizu, the Zangxu Emperor, and Deity Shiqing grew fearful and stumbled back.

“Fairy, let’s escape! You can only fight against a Supreme Saint monster by using the Absolute Saint Weapon.”

“Yes, let’s go reunite with the Great Senior and then come deal with this witch!”

...

Mo Xiaogu let out a loud laugh. “Fairy, I’ll ask you one more time. Do you agree or not? If you don’t, then I’ll have these men see what’s on the scroll.”

Mo Xiaogu clutched the scroll, giving Fairy Tianchu the ultimate threat.

Zhang Ruochen walked before Fairy Tianchu and stared at Mo Xiaogu. “I think that we can have a nice chat.”

Mo Xiaogu grew disdainful. “Lin Yue, you’re not valuable enough and don’t qualify to negotiate with me.”

Zhang Ruochen’s lips moved. He sent a message to Mo Xiaogu. “Princess Luosha, if you dare to open the scroll, I promise you, you won’t be able to leave God-Naming Platform alive.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t sure that Mo Xiaogu really was Princess Luosha, so he just tested her.

But when she heard “Princess Luosha,” her expression faltered. Clearly, Zhang Ruochen’s guess was correct.

“It really is you.” Zhang Ruochen let out a relieved sigh.

This time, it was Mo Xiaogu who grew anxious. “Who are you?” she asked in a low voice.

“There are too many people here! Let’s talk alone,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Mo Xiaogu thought for a long while before nodding. Then she controlled the Supreme Saint skeleton to walk outside the valley.

Zhang Ruochen turned and smiled at Fairy Tianchu. “Don’t worry. I’ll get that thing back.”

Chapter 1702 - Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain

Chapter 1702: Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain

There were divine and spectacular palaces on half of the ancient mountain, but on the other side of the mountains was dark and nothing but lightning.

Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu were standing at the intersection of the light and darkness. There was lightning shuttling back and forth in the darkness, making tearing sounds.

Whoosh!

Mo Xiaogu waved her hand, and a rune flew out, forming a reticle which covered her and Zhang Ruochen.

“Tell me. How did you figure out who I am?”

A powerful force came out of Mo Xiaogu’s body, so fierce that made her totally different from the smiley girl before.

Mo Xiaogu was also a fourth-step saint king.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t release saint might to rival her. He said, “You killed Gu Feng with your mind power, didn’t you?”

“You found traces on Gu Feng’s corpse...”

Mo Xiaogu rolled her eyes and said, “We’ve met somewhere else, haven’t we? Where? And who are you?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I’m not here to answer your questions, but to get back ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’ and the scroll. Give them back to me if you want to make it out of here alive.”

Mo Xiaogu sneered and said, “What will I have to protect myself if I give them back to you?” said Zhang Ruochen.

Mo Xiaogu rolled her eyes and said, “Why should I trust you? How about this. I’ll give them back to you after I leave God-

Naming Platform, and I always keep my promise.”

“I don’t trust you.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, “You have incredible transformation techniques, so I can’t guarantee that I can’t keep you after that. Who should I go to if you get away with the scroll and ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’?”

Whoosh!

The space around Mo Xiaogu shook fiercely, and she vanished.

Zhang Ruochen kept being vigilant against her, so he also performed spatial twist and moved to the right.

Mo Xiaogu showed up behind Zhang Ruochen and penetrated the shadow head Zhang Ruochen left after shifting, and she immediately struck again after she realized she’d failed.

Fairy Tianchu gathered with the monks from Ancient Civilization Sect and looked in the distance at Zhang Ruochen fighting Mo Xiaogu.

“They’re so fast. I’ve seen dozens of shapes already. Even I won’t be able to dodge all of them.” A deity who was a fifth-step saint king was shocked.

“They’re using space power to fight each other. Can’t you see how chaotic the space around them is?”

Thousand Star Maiden was very suspicious as she could see that Fairy Tianchu look different than usual. She asked, “What happened? Why are they fighting each other? Especially that Mo Xiaogu, I didn’t expect her to be this powerful. She managed to deceive my Origin Divine Eyes.”

Fairy Tianchu was silent as she stared at Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu fighting, in silence. Nobody knew what she was thinking.

Wizard God Emperor walked toward them and asked, “Say something, Luo Ji. We don’t even know who to help now.”

Fairy Tianchu sighed and started to detail the story, leaving out the part about Harmony Pill.

After hearing what she said, all the monks from Ancient Civilization Sect looked solemn as she was a demonic woman who could control the body of a supreme saint, which scared them all.

She didn't need to fear anyone under supreme saints.

Great Senior said, "Let's go help Lin Yue. We need to go get Holy Spring now, otherwise, it'll be obtained by the monks from other sects."

Seeing the great beings from Ancient Civilization Sect attack them, Fairy Tianchu started to get worried.

Thousand Star Maiden stared at her and asked, "Sister, are you hiding something from us?"

"No," said Fairy Tianchu.

Thousand Star Maiden said, "Then why did you get so worried every time we tried to attack Mo Xiaogu? What are you worried about? Are you concerned that we can't deal with that supreme saint body?"

Another person said, "Look. They've stopped fighting."

Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu did call a truce, and they seemed to be negotiating with each other and had reached an agreement.

Mo Xiaogu gave 'Time and Space Secret Guide' back to Zhang Ruochen and said, "This is trash. I can't even open it."

Zhang Ruochen immediately put away 'Time and Space Secret Guide properly' and asked, "What's the Heart Connect Bone Melt Chain you just mentioned?"

Princess Luosha took out a set of crimson chains and said, "It means connecting our fingers using these chains, also our minds."

"The chains will only be opened when both of us want them open. If one of us tries to get out of it or attack the other person, the power contained in the chain will burn it to ashes."

"Can you rest assured now that Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain is binding us now?"

Zhang Ruochen checked the chains, and the method used to make them was indeed complex and mysterious. There was a terrific force in the chains, and the power could burn all the monks alive, no matter how powerful they were.

Zhang Ruochen transmitted his voice to Fairy Tianchu to ask her about ‘Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain’.

Fairy Tianchu transmitted her voice back to Zhang Ruochen and briefed him on the characteristics of Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain, which were almost the same as what Mo Xiaogu said.

“Okay. I can do that.”

Zhang Ruochen put one end of Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain on his left hand, and then, iron needles spread from the chain, sticking into the bones of his palms, arms, shoulders and his back.

Mo Xiaogu obviously knew that wearing Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain was a very painful process, but she had to because Zhang Ruochen was so stubborn that she was left with no choice.

The most important thing was to tie this guy to her first.

Mo Xiaogu put the Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain on her right hand, and after a piercing pain, she smiled and said, “Almost nobody at my level can rival me, both at martial way and space way. Is Lin Yue a fake name? Did you use a transformation technique as well?”

“No need to try me,” said Zhang Ruochen.

The more Mo Xiaogu looked at this ‘Lin Yue’, the more she thought he was Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, she would’ve easily defeated a space monk as a space manipulator.

Besides, she and Zhang Ruochen had linked their mind power together before, so they both knew each other’s mind power very well.

If Lin Yue was indeed Zhang Ruochen, it was natural that he could find her mind power ripples on Gu Feng’s body.

Zhang Ruochen disguised as Lord Lingquan on Merits Battlefield and ambushed Princess Luosha, seizing the Sundial, which made her efforts go in vain and severely injured her.

Princess Luosha could never forget that.

She came to Heaven Field because she wanted to practice space way and Way of Truth, but she also wanted to get even with Zhang Ruochen.

“If I confirm that you’re Zhang Ruochen, I’ll get back at you in a hundred different ways. I’ll make your life a living hell and regret what you did.” Mo Xiaogu thought.

However, she didn’t wish Lin Yue to be Zhang Ruochen.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was her man of destiny, and it was the first man who attracted her.

That man could belong only to her.

Thinking of what Lin Yue and Fairy Tianchu did in the carriage, she was dismayed as she was worried that the man of her destiny would be seized by other women.

He was her, Luo Sha’s man, and no other women were allowed to touch her.

Mo Xiaogu stopped overthinking as she decided to confirm Lin Yue’s identity after leaving God-Naming Platform. She said, “Let’s get the Holy Spring first. How about that?”

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen raised his chain and said, “We’re tied with each other now, so we have to act together.”

Zhang Ruochen then looked to Fairy Tianchu who was wearing a white saint blouse, preparing to tell her something more.

Mo Xiaogu looked triggered. She dragged Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain and yelled, “What’re you looking at? She’s the renowned fairy with countless pursuers. Why will she be attracted to you? Do you really want to marry her?”

The Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain made a penetrating pain.

Zhang Ruochen had to follow Mo Xiaogu and flew onto the supreme saint skeleton's shoulder, flying toward the peak of the ancient mountain.

The monks from Ancient Civilization Sect were all conflicted as they didn't know whether they should help Lin Yue or not.

Fairy Tianchu said, "They've both wearing Heart Connection Bone Melt Chain now, so they're restraining each other. I don't think it's necessary to fight that demonic women now. Let's head to the Holy Spring!"

Most of the monks from Ancient Civilization Sect didn't want to confront a supreme saint skeleton, so they all nodded and rushed toward the peak of the mountain.

There was a pit with a diameter of almost thirty miles at the top of the mountain, which looked like a giant bowl facing the sky.

Purple-blue mist gushed out of the pit, spreading everywhere.

There were all sorts of saint pills growing in the mist as the mist was close to the Holy Spring, which made the saint pills blossom. There were saint pills more than eighty thousand years old everywhere, and there were even saint pills that were a hundred thousand years old.

Before Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu arrived, many monks had already occupied the pit and the most convenient spots.

There were many monks from other sects, aside from Ancient Civilization Sect and Heaven Field Sect, trying to get into the pit to pick the saint pills and Holy Spring.

Zhang Ruochen saw Feng Yan who had three heads and six arms, and Ji Fanxin who was riding the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Chapter 1703 - Top Ten Godly Disciples

Chapter 1703: Top Ten Godly Disciples

“The spatial barrier is very difficult to break. How did these people come in?” Zhang Ruochen was curious.

Mo Xiaogu had been observing the cultivators present. “The top ten godly disciples acted to break apart the spatial wall.”

“How do you know?”

“I guessed.”

Dragging Zhang Ruochen, Mo Xiaogu flew down from the Supreme Saint monster’s shoulder. She pointed at the young man with half-white hair standing south of the delta. “That is Nie Xiangzi, one of the top ten godly disciples. He can pick the stars with his bare hands and has a cool temperament.”

“Nie Xiangzi.”

Zhang Ruochen looked over.

“Nie Xiangzi reached the ninth step Saint King Realm 120 years ago,” Mo Xiaogu said. “At that time, it was already difficult for him to find a match below the Supreme Saint Realm. He even exchanged five blows with a true Supreme Saint. Even though he spat out blood and fell to the ground after five blows, this battle still improved his reputation. One hundred twenty years have passed. If he fights with another Supreme Saint, it won’t be as simple as five blows.

“I heard that when he traveled the universe, he found an ancient treasure star. He spent decades to bring it to the Heaven World from millions of miles away. He placed it in the Truth Heavenly Domain and turned it into his residence.

“This is why it can be said that he picked a star with his bare hands.”

Zhang Ruochen revealed shock. “He exchanged five blows with a Supreme Saint. This Nie Xiangzi is quite an impressive figure.”

It was extremely difficult for anyone below the Supreme Saint Realm to exchange even one blow with a Supreme Saint.

The Great Elder, Wizard God Emperor and Fairy Tianchu were already the top figures of the Ancient Civilization Sect. But the three of them working together with an Absolute Saint weapon were still unable to fight against the half of the Supreme Saint monster.

A true Supreme Saint would be countless times more powerful than the half.

“The top ten godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace are all at the top of the Saint King Merits Rank. It’s common even if they have a Supreme Saint’s combat ability. The Great Elder, number one of the Ancient Civilization Sect, is nothing compared to them. They can crush him easily with one finger.

“They’ve already accumulated enough and could break into the Supreme Saint Realm at any time, but they keep repressing themselves.”

“Why?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Mo Xiaogu chuckled. “There are many reasons. For example, some want to cross the tenth level of the Ocean of Truth to snatch an incredible opportunity.

“Some want to fight the armies of Hell World in the merits battleground. As you know, only beings below the Supreme Saint Realm can enter the battleground between Heaven and Hell World and fight. Those above the Supreme Saint Realm fight in the boundless starry sky.

“Top figures below the Supreme Saint Realm like them can be very useful on the merits battleground. They may even turn the tides of the situation.”

Princess Luosha dared to come to Heaven World alone because she was sufficiently prepared. She’d read the profiles of all top figures in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

Next, she pointed out some other top ten godly disciples for Zhang Ruochen.

Just then, Mo Xiaogu pointed at Ji Fanxin. With misty eyes, she said, “Isn’t that your Golden Dragon Carriage? How come it’s with Ji Fanxin, the Hundred Flower Fairy, now?”

Zhang Ruochen was about to say something, but he suddenly stopped short. So close, he thought.

“Golden Dragon Carriage? Are you talking about the Hundred Flower Fairy’s carriage?” Zhang Ruochen asked with mock ignorance.

Mo Xiaogu couldn’t get a result, so disappointment flashed past her eyes. Chuckling, she said, “That carriage is more powerful than Fairy Tianchu’s White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. It’s a Nine Yao weapon. You don’t know it?”

“The Hundred Flower Fairy is the disciple of the Datura Flower Goddess. She has a high status. It’s normal for her to even have a Nine Yao weapon.”

Then Zhang Ruochen continued, “Some cultivators have already reached the delta and are preparing to get the divine spring. Let’s follow!”

“No hurry. That delta is covered in ancient divine patterns and Yin Qi. It’s not so easy for them to break in. Come with me to take care of some personal matters first.”

Pulling Zhang Ruochen, Mo Xiaogu walked straight to Ji Fanxin.

Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen came here with the Supreme Saint monster. They were very high-key and attracted the attention of many. Thankfully, the top ten godly disciples were there, so they didn’t feel any fear.

Ji Fanxin had many strong figures beside her. Most of them were her pursuers.

In the distance, the top figures of the Demon God Field Sect were also watching Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen’s every move.

It was worth mentioning that Ji Fanxin was one of the top figures from the Demon God Field Sect.

Does Princess Luosha have personal conflicts with Ji Fanxin? Zhang Ruochen wondered.

Mo Xiaogu was very direct. “Ji Fanxin,” she said straightforwardly. “If I saw correctly, your Golden Dragon Carriage must belong to Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant, right?”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen realized what Mo Xiaogu wanted to do. She didn’t have any personal conflicts. She just wanted to cause problems.

As expected, her words instantly led to murmured discussions.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t really care. He was just a spectator.

Who told Ji Fanxin to use his Golden Dragon Carriage for no reason? He was just keeping it with her, but she acted like it really was hers!

Ji Fanxin stood on the carriage’s side. There were all types of flowers under her feet. There were even petals fluttering in the sky. Seemingly calm, she said, “Yes, this was Zhang Ruochen’s. Now it’s mine.”

Mo Xiaogu scoffed. “He can even gift a Nine Yao weapon. Zhang Ruochen is so generous.”

“Little girl, you misunderstood!” Ji Fanxin said. “He didn’t gift this Golden Dragon Carriage to me. He just left it with me. He just hasn’t redeemed it yet.”

“Does that mean...you two have a special relationship?” Mo Xiaogu asked.

“Not exactly. We’re just friends in the trade.”

All this time, Ji Fanxin had hidden her relationship with Zhang Ruochen to avoid trouble. Now that someone had exposed her, there was no way for her to continue hiding, so she admitted it naturally.

She didn’t want trouble, but she wasn’t afraid.

Even if the Heaven Field Sect cultivators knew that she did business with Zhang Ruochen, she was sure that her cultivation was enough to deal with them.

Perhaps she'd already had enough confidence to not be afraid of exposing her relationship with Zhang Ruochen when she decided to use the Golden Dragon Carriage.

After accomplishing her goal, Mo Xiaogu didn't speak further. She dragged Zhang Ruochen straight to the delta. She had a proud smile on her face. "After this, the Hundred Flower Fairy will keep having trouble. I hope the Demon God Field Sect and Heaven Field Sect start fighting. That'll be more interesting."

"Did you come to Heaven Field just to stir up trouble?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"None of your business."

Whoosh!

Blinding light flashed past their eyes. Next came a cultivator's pained cry.

"Another ancient divine rune."

"There are too many runes here. We can't decode them at all."

...

Zhang Ruochen looked over. He saw that a Saint King had activated a divine rune in the delta and his body was cut in half.

After 15 short minutes, quite a few Saint Kings had died here.

The other cultivators who wanted the divine spring became even more careful. They didn't dare to test it brashly and were all waiting for others to open up the path.

Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu didn't act brashly either.

Mo Xiaogu was studying the runes on the ground. Zhang Ruochen studied the spatial structure here. They wanted to find the path with the lowest risk.

Right now, the strong figures of the Heaven Field Sect prepared to go for the divine spring.

They sent five people in total. Shang Ziyan and Gong Ziyan were the leaders. It was clear that these five had extraordinary figures. None of them were simple.

“Look, your cousin,” Zhang Ruochen said to Mo Xiaogu.

Mo Xiaogu rolled her eyes. “Shang Ziyan, leader of the Palace Temple; Mo Yan, leader of the Time God Palace; Xun Ya, leader of the Divine Blood War Palace; Zhou Yu, leader of Heaven Field; and Lian Xi, the Traceless Fairy of Soul Field. Not bad, they’re all top figures. If Wang Tian hadn’t died, he would be here too. It’s a pity. He had the talent to become a god, but he died by the hands of you and that 10,000-year-old saint medicine.”

Zhang Ruochen could hear that Mo Xiaogu was mocking him. She felt that he wasn’t as strong as Wang Tian, but he didn’t care. He didn’t refute her.

Shang Ziyan and the others carried a type of liquid similar to the God-killing Demon Blood. They discovered the divine patterns beforehand and used demon blood to erode them, continuing forward.

Soon, the five of them reached the depths of the delta. They were getting closer and closer to the divine spring.

It was quite strange. They didn’t pick any of the divine medicine beside them. Instead, they went straight to the center. Their goal was definite—get the divine spring.

Zhang Ruochen saw something amiss. “Other than the divine patterns, there are other risks. Shang Ziyan’s group doesn’t dare to pick the medicine.”

His guess was soon proved correct.

A rat with soft golden hair followed the path created by Shang Ziyan’s group. It rushed into the delta, wanting to take advantage of things and dig out a 90,000-year-old saint medicine.

But as soon as it dug out the medicine, the space under foot collapsed. In an instant, the entire area became a void.

That Saint King rat didn't even have time to escape before it was swallowed by the void, turning into smoke.

Countless people there gasped.

Even more shocking was that the void didn't disappear after it came to be. It was like a broken space hole was there. Black and cold, it swallowed the surrounding light and heat. It was eerie.

Chapter 1704 - Divine Spring

Chapter 1704: Divine Spring

Shang Ziyan, Gong Ziyan and the other strong figures pushed forward. When they were around 700 or 800 meters away from the divine spring, they finally ran into big trouble and couldn't continue.

Blue-purple mist shrouded the delta, blocking the sight of everyone there. They couldn't see what was happening.

Gong Ziyan set up a small one-meter-wide formation on the ground and took out four yellow flags. He put them in four places in the formation. Then he carved light runes around the formation.

Zhang Ruochen used the Divine Eyes to watch Gong Ziyan's every move. "Gong Ziyan is very fast at carving the spatial runes. He must've worked hard when studying."

Mo Xiaogu was scornful. "I can carve faster than him with just one hand. Gong Ziyan grew up in the Space Divine Pavilion and had a better learning environment for everything, but he's only at this level. What a failure."

Whoosh!

Three dots of dazzling light appeared in the small formation before Gong Ziyan. They hovered in the air like purple stars.

"Three drops of divine spring."

"What tactic was that? Gong Ziyan could actually use a formation to extract divine spring from 800 meters away."

"It really is divine spring. I heard a drop of divine spring can improve a saint pill's quality greatly."

...

Gong Ziyan didn't extract much of the divine spring, but he still caused a ruckus.

The cultivators who'd been watching couldn't stay sitting anymore. They all went for the delta.

The Ancient Civilization Sect, Demon God Field Sect, Pangu Field Sect...

All the major sects sent their top figures. They followed the paths they'd calculated and approached the spring step by step.

After careful research and analysis, Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen chose a path too.

After truly entering the delta, Zhang Ruochen finally understood what it meant to be treading on thin ice. This land left behind from ancient times was filled with all types of godly patterns. They floated in the air too. He had to be careful at all times. Any mistake could activate a godly pattern and kill him on the spot.

Mo Xiaogu was well-prepared. She held a bronze bottle that contained divine blood from a Hell Demon God.

As she continued to drip blood onto the ground, a blood-red path opened up.

Gradually, Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen reached the depths of the delta too. They grew closer and closer to the divine spring. They could even hear the water with their ears.

Around one kilometer from the divine spring, the space before them became extremely broken. Black light filled it. Chilling Yin Qi was released from the light. Clearly, they couldn't touch it.

"No wonder even Shang Ziyan and Zhou Yu couldn't continue forward. This place is filled with all sorts of terrifying powers. Even the space is incomplete."

Around 900 meters from the divine spring, Mo Xiaogu stopped. She touched her chin with a thoughtful expression.

It was already incredible that she and Zhang Ruochen could reach this step. Cultivators from the other sects were behind them, around 1500 meters from the divine spring.

The closer they were, the easier it was to extract the divine spring.

Gong Ziyán's crystal bottle already had a dozen drops now. When he raised his eyes and his gaze fell on Mo Xiaogu, he had a very surprised expression.

Shang Ziyán also looked toward Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen. "What, you know them?" he asked.

Gong Ziyán shook his head. He looked away and continued to control his formation. But his eyes kept darting back to Mo Xiaogu.

He'd learned of this cousin not too long ago. She was apparently the daughter of an uncle from his clan and was temporarily cultivating at the Space Divine Pavilion. Her arrival had stirred up a storm in the clan. Even the clan's god met her personally.

Gong Ziyán had sent people to investigate Mo Xiaogu and discovered with a shock that she was extremely advanced in the Spatial Way. She might even be at his level.

It was quite unexpected for him that Mo Xiaogu would appear in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

Looking at the spatial formation under Gong Ziyán's foot, her disdain grew. "Gong Ziyán can extract divine spring from 800 meters away with the spatial transfer technique. Lin Yue, your spatial grab is pretty good. How about you try?"

"We're still too far. We must get closer."

After that, Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mo Xiaogu's bronze bottle and continued creating a path.

Mo Xiaogu was shocked. "You still dare to go forward?"

"The space before us is broken. It's fatal for other cultivators, but we can still try," Zhang Ruochen said. "What, Princess Luosha doesn't dare?"

Mo Xiaogu indeed felt that it would be extremely dangerous to continue forward. There was no path before them. If they went forward, it was no different from suicide.

In the distance, the cultivators of the Heaven Field Sect thought the same.

They thought that they'd reached the limit and couldn't get closer to the divine spring. Thus, they stared at Zhang Ruochen who was going forward. They were confused, but they smiled, thinking that Zhang Ruochen would get killed soon.

But the scene that followed utterly shocked all the cultivators.

They watched Zhang Ruochen enter the broken space. He jumped on the spatial fragments that were like hovering islands. Around him, there were streaking lightning, rivers of ancient Yin Qi, and pitch-black voids.

But he just continued forward and landed on a spatial fragment around 700 meters away from the divine spring.

Both cultivators inside and out of the delta were shocked at this.

“This guy can move freely in the broken space. That's amazing!”

“Even Gong Ziyang doesn't dare to do this.”

...

...

Zhang Ruochen wanted to continue, but the Heart Connection Bone Melt Lock between him and Mo Xiaogu was pulled taut. He tugged at the chain and urged, “What's wrong? Do you not dare to come or are you unable to? Do you need help?”

This entire way, Mo Xiaogu had looked down upon Zhang Ruochen. She was arrogant like a white swan. Unexpectedly, she was the one being looked down upon now.

“No. I can come over.”

Grinding her teeth, Mo Xiaogu was very annoyed, but she had to comfort herself. My life is valuable, so I have to be careful. He has a lowly life, so he's not afraid of dying.

Bracing herself, she finally reached the spatial fragment and reunited with Zhang Ruochen.

“Let's continue forward,” he said.

Shocked, Mo Xiaogu said, “You still want to continue?”

Zhang Ruochen pointed at a fragment around 400 meters away from the divine spring. “That’s a nice landing spot. It’s close to the divine spring and we can extract much faster. Otherwise, if we do it like Gong Ziyan, we won’t be able to collect much even if we spend an entire day and night.”

Mo Xiaogu looked at the fragment, feeling unwilling. She hurriedly shook her head. “That fragment is too small and unstable. It might break as soon as we land. Let’s not risk it. Why do you want to collect so much from the divine spring? Do you really want to get 10,000 drops to marry Fairy Tianchu?”

“Trust me. Follow me.”

He wrapped the Heart Connection Bone Melt Lock three times around Mo Xiaogu, wrapping her up. Then he brought her toward the spatial fragment in the distance.

Mo Xiaogu didn’t think that she was timid, but she really was frightened by Zhang Ruochen this time. When they landed on the spatial fragment, her heart was still pounding.

Her legs trembled when her feet landed. She glared at Zhang Ruochen with her phoenix eyes. “Are you Zhang Ruochen or not?”

Zhang Ruochen felt much better at seeing Mo Xiaogu’s pale face. Chuckling, he said, “Princess, why would you ask that?”

“Every step that you just took requires extreme control of space and time,” Mo Xiaogu said. “Who other than Zhang Ruochen can do this in the younger generation?”

Actually, Zhang Ruochen didn’t only have an extreme control of space and time. He’d also used the powers of time to reach this fragment easily.

He didn’t reply. Instead, he squatted down and started setting up a formation on the fragment.

“You’re not replying. Are you admitting it?”

Mo Xiaogu was around 70% sure now.

She must admit that this result frustrated her. Lin Yue really was that bastard Zhang Ruochen. He was someone that she hated but also thought of a lot.

Before coming to Heaven Field, she'd already imagined everything that could happen when she met Zhang Ruochen. She even thought of how to take revenge.

They'd met now, but it had happened sooner than she'd thought. However, not only could she take revenge, she even helped him have sex with a fairy.

This pissed her off. She even forgot to collect the divine spring and just stared at Zhang Ruochen with red eyes. "Why are you setting up a space transfer formation?"

Without looking up, Zhang Ruochen said, "To escape as soon as we collect the divine spring, obviously. Or did you want to take the same path back?"

"This place is special," Mo Xiaogu said. "The space transfer formation won't work at all and it's really dangerous."

"I know, but I have my ways. Just follow me later! After setting up, we'll start collecting divine spring. And let's get things straight. We'll collect our own. Don't even think about sharing."

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu were only 400 meters from the divine spring, the other cultivators were extremely shocked. They all tried to guess who they were.

Even some of the top ten godly disciples were staring at Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu.

Chapter 1705 - Scale Rain

Chapter 1705: Scale Rain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mo Xiaogu extended a slender finger and drew in the air. Next, the spatial runes all interconnected into a long string.

Whoosh!

She grabbed in the air.

Fourteen drops of divine spring appeared in her palm.

“Pretty easy!”

She laughed. Taking out a detailed bottle, she put the 14 drops in.

When she looked toward Zhang Ruochen, she couldn't smile anymore. She watched him collect a handful of divine spring at once, getting hundreds of drops and putting them in the wooden jar before him.

Mo Xiaogu couldn't accept this. Huffing, she circulated her Holy Qi and used the Stealing Sky Technique.

Even so, she could only collect 30 drops at once. This was far from Zhang Ruochen's level.

In the distance, Gong Ziyang had a cold expression.

Being able to collect divine spring from 800 meters away had already been a powerful ability and stunned everyone. But Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu stole the spotlight. Not only did this embarrass Gong Ziyang, it also made it seem like the Space Divine Pavilion's leader wasn't as talented as others.

Gong Ziyang had always gotten special treatment and was sought after by all forces. Naturally, he wasn't willing to get

beaten by someone else.

“We’re too far from the divine spring and the collection is too slow,” Gong Ziyang said. “Ziyang, Xun Ya, help me.”

Shang Ziyang understood what Gong Ziyang was thinking. “You want to go to the spatial fragment too? Are you confident?”

Gong Ziyang actually wasn’t confident, but seeing Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu collect so much divine spring in the short period of time, he felt very annoyed. “I can try.”

With Shang Ziyang and Xun Ya’s help, Gong Ziyang moved close to 100 meters and successfully landed on a spatial fragment.

His expression grew happier and he hurriedly drew a space transfer formation on the fragment.

His collection speed indeed grew faster, but still, he could only collect around five drops at a time. He was still far from Mo Xiaogu and Zhang Ruochen’s level.

“Drat. Could it be that it’s not only an advantage of distance? Are they more advanced in the Way of Space too?”

Gong Ziyang couldn’t accept this fact. He wanted to continue forward.

But as soon as he stepped out of the spatial fragment, half of his body was frozen stiff by a beam of ancient Yin Qi. Thankfully, he had a defensive rune scroll that saved his life.

He was forced to shrink back into the spatial fragment.

Shang Ziyang, Lian Xi, Xun Ya, Zhou Yu—the top four figures of the Heaven Field Sect—stood 100 meters away and sent telepathic messages to each other.

“It’s too strange!” Shang Ziyang said. “Gong Ziyang is a space manipulator. He’s extremely advanced in the Way of Space. How can two random juniors be even more skilled than him?”

“There are still people in our generation that can match Gong Ziyang in the Spatial Way,” Xun Ya said coldly. “For example, that mysterious human who killed the four-winged red angels before.”

Traceless Fairy Lian Xi said, “That girl probably isn’t simple either. She actually has a Yin God Lotus and could use the lotus to control a Supreme Saint monster. Technically, only the leader of an ancient sect can do something so powerful.”

“There are millions of secrets in the universe and countless geniuses and top figures!” Shang Ziyan lamented.

Zhou Yu, leader of Heaven Field, scoffed. “What’s the point of guessing? In my opinion, we can attack and test them after collecting the divine spring.”

The other three nodded softly.

The cultivators of the Ancient Civilization Sect were all flabbergasted.

It couldn’t be helped. Lin Yue and Mo Xiaogu’s moves were too eye-catching. Even Gong Ziyan, leader of the Space Divine Pavilion, seemed to be weaker than them.

The Thousand Star Maiden kept looking between Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu. She was still wondering what exactly had caused these two to compromise and put on the Heart Connection Bone Melt Lock.

And what was Fairy Tianchu hiding from her?

“Interesting. Very interesting.”

A smile appeared on the Thousand Star Maiden’s face.

Anyway, she had something that Zhang Ruochen desperately needed. It didn’t matter how much divine spring he collected. It would all be hers in the end.

“That Lin Yue collected most of the divine spring,” she said to Blindman and Big Beard. “The other cultivators definitely won’t let him leave. You two get ready to help him.”

Other than her, the other cultivators were all planning actions. Some of them wanted to intercept Zhang Ruochen, some wanted to trade with him, and others were horribly jealous and wanted to make Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu unable to return alive.

Anyway, Zhang Ruochen was pushed into the spotlight due to collecting the divine spring.

Before he could finish collecting, the major forces were already pushing forward secretly.

The spring's mouth was in the center of the shattered space. It was filled with destructive forces, including the ancient Yin Qi, power of darkness, thunder, lightning, and fire.

If one looked closely, one would see that there was a majestic peak there.

The divine spring was located at the peak of a stone mountain.

This mountain seemed to have reached out of the broken space, but hadn't been swallowed by the void. It was extremely strange.

Half a day passed. Zhang Ruochen collected more than 10,000 drops of divine spring, filling a jar created with wood from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Just as Zhang Ruochen prepared to continue collecting, scales rained down on his head.

Golden scales fell down like rain, releasing a mesmerizing fragrance. With a mere whiff, Zhang Ruochen's limbs grew very relaxed and his Holy Qi rushed forth like dragons.

"It's scale rain. There's divine medicine nearby."

Eyes gleaming, Mo Xiaogu looked around.

Zhang Ruochen had heard legends of scale rains before too, so he grew excited.

According to the legends, scales would rain down where the divine medicine Scale Fern Beast Emperor grew. Beast cultivators could receive endless benefits if baptized by the scale rain. Their blood would become purer and even evolve into that of a dragon.

While Mo Xiaogu searched for the divine medicine, Zhang Ruochen took out a spatial container to collect the scale rain.

The other cultivators were stunned by the rain too. Each of them grew crazed.

Even a god would be shocked by divine medicine, let alone them.

The top ten godly disciples couldn't keep calm anymore. They all used extreme measures to rush into the delta and charge toward the divine spring. They wanted to find the divine medicine too.

Roar!

Argh!

...

Shocking beastly roars spread out.

Thousands of beastly images appeared in the miles-long delta. There were kirins, dragons, Kun, golden rocs and more. They exploded with shocking force, making all the Saint Kings shudder as if they were seeing a group of beast emperors.

These beastly shadows rushed toward the divine spring and flew around the peak.

Gradually, the peak with the divine spring sank down and the shadows faded before finally disappearing into the broken space.

The scale rain disappeared too.

“The divine medicine left and took the divine spring away too.”

“That's divine medicine! We must catch it. If it escapes, it'll be impossible to find again.”

Many cultivators lost their minds and dashed into the delta, but the top ten godly disciples stopped them.

One of them, the Thousand-Winged Silver Dragon, said coldly, “The Scale Fern Beast Emperor didn't escape. It just doesn't want to be disturbed. Its cultivation is impossibly close to the Supreme Saint Realm. If it attacks, none of us will be able to survive.”

“That divine spring must be where the Scale Fern Beast Emperor lives,” Nie Xiangzi said calmly. “It took the divine spring away, so it clearly doesn't want us to continue

collecting it. The God-Naming Platform Conference is about to end. Everyone should hurry and leave.”

The top ten godly disciples had spoken, but the people didn't plan on leaving now. Countless eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu with greed or jealousy.

The Thousand Star Maiden crossed her arms and looked confident. “Lin Yue, hurry over here. With me welcoming you, no one will dare to get ideas about your divine spring.”

The cultivators with powerful backgrounds didn't care about the Thousand Star Maiden.

“Brother Lin Yue, I need the divine spring to extend the life of an ancestor in my clan. I hope to get 10,000 drops from you. Any price is fine.”

“I am the crown prince of the Fengtian Divine Dynasty. Brother Lin Yue, can we negotiate?”

...

Many cultivators guarded the path, blocking Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu's way.

They claimed to want to trade or negotiate with Zhang Ruochen, but the atmosphere was very strange. If anyone tried to rob him, it would cause a chain reaction. Even the top ten godly disciples wouldn't be able to control things.

Plus, the godly disciples came from the various worlds too. They probably wouldn't do anything unless someone died.

Mo Xiaogu put away her 10,000 drops of divine spring and said, “Seems like you were right. We really can't go back on the same path. Next, let me see just how skilled you are.”

Without speaking more, Zhang Ruochen activated the space transfer formation underfoot.

Whoosh!

Light flashed on the spatial fragment and Zhang Ruochen and Mo Xiaogu vanished. Only gaping eyes remained.

It was indeed dangerous to use teleportation in this deadly area, but after Zhang Ruochen grew familiar with the Time

and Space Secret Guide, it wasn't hard anymore.

After leaving, he didn't immediately reunite with Xiang Chunan and Mu Lingxi. Instead, he and Mo Xiaogu left the God-Naming Platform so they wouldn't get stopped by the greedy cultivators.

They sat in a saint carriage and went to the edge of the Truth Heavenly Domain. They didn't stop until they reached a very barren mountain pass.

Zhang Ruochen jumped down and gazed at the dusk in the distance. "Now, give me that scroll and leave the Truth Heavenly Domain by yourself. I'll pretend I never saw you."

Princess Luosha recovered her original appearance. She reached out of the carriage, showing her snow-white skin, crimson hair, and alluring features. She smiled at Zhang Ruochen. "I still have very important matters in Heaven World, so I can't leave. I will continue to save the scroll for you."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened. "Don't push me. You have a chance to leave Heaven World now, so leave. Otherwise, if your identity is exposed, you won't be able to escape even if you want to."

"I have you and Fairy Tianchu under me, so I'm not scared."

Princess Luosha fluttered her lashes and changed her tone. "Of course, if you really want to get the scroll back immediately, it's negotiable. The prerequisite is that you return the Sundial to me and apologize to me respectfully."

Chapter 1706 - Secret Regarding Kunlun's Field

Chapter 1706: Secret Regarding Kunlun's Field

The Sundial was very important. It pertained to the secret of the Orion Eight Stars and Saint Monk Xumi's place of death. Zhang Ruochen still hadn't figured it out, but he definitely couldn't give it to Princess Luosha.

"You must think carefully," Zhang Ruochen said. "This is the Truth Heavenly Domain, not the God-Naming Platform."

"What do you mean?"

"If you can't control the Supreme Saint monster for help, are you sure you're still my match?"

Princess Luosha sensed the coldness seeping from Zhang Ruochen's body. Her pretty smile vanished.

Whoosh!

Turning into a streak, she flew out of the carriage and landed behind Zhang Ruochen. She had an advantageous position to fight at any moment.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and opened it.

Whoosh!

Silver light screens appeared, turning into a multi-dimensional space. It locked Princess Luosha in one of the spaces.

Princess Luosha had seen Zhang Ruochen use the Time and Space Secret Guide during the space transfer earlier. She thought that it was only an auxiliary treasure, so she didn't think much about it.

She stood in the silver light without fear. Chuckling, she asked, "What, you really want to kill me?"

Zhang Ruochen was emotionless. He just closed the Time and Space Secret Guide, collecting Princess Luosha into the book.

When the book's power burst out, Princess Luosha's expression finally looked uncomfortable. She hurriedly used the Spatial Move to escape from the book's restriction.

Unfortunately, she couldn't use spatial power at all in the multidimensional space.

When Zhang Ruochen opened the Time and Space Secret Guide again, Princess Luosha had become a beautiful picture on the silver page.

"So this book is actually a time and space treasure," Princess Luosha said angrily. "I can't believe I can be wrong too."

Zhang Ruochen directly took the scroll that recorded him and Fairy Tianchu from Princess Luosha.

After confirming that it was the right one, Zhang Ruochen was relieved. "Princess, you really can do everything, even such lowly things."

Princess Luosha huffed and didn't say anything.

The Amazing Little Taoist woke up. He poked his head out of Zhang Ruochen's sleeve. "My Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror was also taken by her. Zhang Ruochen, you must get it back for me... Oh no, I messed up. I didn't mean to say your name. How about we kill her so she can't spill the secret?"

"Don't worry. She already guessed my identity."

Zhang Ruochen reached out and took the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror from Princess Luosha too.

"You already took everything," Princess Luosha said. "Zhang Ruochen, you'll let me go now, right?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "I let you go earlier but you didn't. Now, it won't be so easy to leave."

"You still want to kill me?"

"You once led the Luosha Race Army and killed a mortal field of Heaven World," Zhang Ruochen said. "You've already become a rising star from Hell World that Heaven World must

kill. If I kill you, I'll definitely receive a great amount of merits.”

Princess Luosha understood well that Zhang Ruochen was quite cold-blooded. He might really do it, so she grew worried.

“Zhang Ruochen, we cultivated our Spiritual Power together before. Are you going to ignore our relationship?” Her tone became softer.

“Rather than talk about our relationship, why don't you answer some of my questions first?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“What do you want to know?”

Sitting on the saint carriage with the Time and Space Secret Guide, Zhang Ruochen said, “I'm curious how you, Princess Luosha, became Gong Ziyan's cousin, Mo Xiaogu? Heaven World must have spies, right? What exactly are you here to do?”

“I can't answer the first and second question, but I can answer the third one. But if I answer you, will you let me go?”

“No.”

Then Zhang Ruochen added, “But since I'm giving you a chance to speak now, it means that you have a chance of not dying. If I don't give you the chance to speak, then you'll die without a doubt.”

Princess Luosha was furious. She had never been threatened like this before.

Was Zhang Ruochen her nemesis?

She did have some powerful hidden cards, but she wasn't sure if they could break the Time and Space Secret Guide. She had to bear down and wait for a more suitable timing.

“Actually, I came to Heaven World to learn the Way of Space and Truth,” Princess Luosha said. “I don't have any ulterior motives. But I'm sure you don't believe that, so I have another more important motive. I came to find you.”

“Find me? For revenge?”

“If it was just for revenge, why would I have to come personally?” Princess Luosha asked. “You should know that if I give the order, the Luosha fighters hidden in Heaven World will take your life. I actually came because you’re someone I need in my life.”

Zhang Ruochen obviously didn’t believe her. “It’s okay if you don’t tell the truth. I’ll bring you to the Truth Godly Palace now. I’m sure those big figures there can make you reveal everything.”

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re too heartless. When have I ever hurt you? Why are you doing this to me?” Princess Luosha’s eyes reddened. She actually put on a pitiful look as if she was about to cry.

“You are a princess of Hell World. I am a cultivator of Heaven World. We are enemies. Do I need any other reason?”

On the merits battleground, Zhang Ruochen had seen the Luosha Race cultivators treat humans as biped sheep. They’d cooked humans in boiling water, roasted them in fire, and even eaten children. He’d felt unspeakable anger.

And the general of that war was Princess Luosha.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen never used death as a threat toward Princess Luosha. He truly felt hatred toward her and wanted to kill her.

Princess Luosha could feel his murderous Qi. “Heaven World is Heaven World. Hell World is Hell World,” she said hurriedly. “And we are ourselves. How will you benefit from killing me? Even if you can redeem merits, the Merits Godly Palace won’t give you any merits treasures. In the eyes of many Heaven World forces, you’re instead an obstacle. They’ll try everything to kill you.”

“Seems like you know a lot?”

“I know more than this,” Princess Luosha said. “If you free me, I can tell you an even bigger secret.”

“What secret?”

“Free me first.”

“Then, never mind!”

Zhang Ruochen closed the Time and Space Secret Guide. He drove the carriage toward the Truth Godly Palace.

“It’s related to Kunlun’s Field.” Princess Luosha’s voice streamed out of the book. “In one or two years, the Heaven and Earth Altar protecting it will be broken. By then, the Hell World Army will enter Kunlun’s Field from the various world holes from 10,000 years ago and destroy this ancient world.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately stopped the carriage. He opened the Time and Space Secret Guide. Princess Luosha appeared across from him, standing within the layers of silver light.

“Are you speaking the truth?” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

Princess Luosha chuckled. “Kunlun’s Field is a major world that has survived countless Yuanhui Calamities. There are only a dozen or so worlds like this in the universe. Each one has an ancient heritage, hiding a treasure that every cultivator would want.

“Not only are the Hell World cultivators ready to turn Kunlun’s Field into a battleground, Heaven World is preparing too. Once the Heaven and Earth Altar is broken through, armies from the various worlds will all flood into Kunlun’s Field.

“With your understanding of Heaven World, do you think they’ll truly help Kunlun’s Field against Hell World? They’ll probably be the first to rob Kunlun’s Field of its resources.

“Some worlds will even fight cultivators from Kunlun’s Field to stop it from recovering from the trial.”

Princess Luosha obviously said this because she knew that Kunlun’s Field was Zhang Ruochen’s homeland.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flickered as he pondered. If the armies of Heaven and Hell World all flooded into Kunlun’s Field, the civilians would probably fall into battle immediately. All the resources would be robbed clean.

Princess Luosha took advantage of this chance to strike with a rune scroll.

Kaboom!

A destructive force like Absolute Saint power exploded from the scroll. It shattered the layers of silver light.

With Zhang Ruochen as the center, all land within dozens of miles became barren. The center melted into red lava, forming a lake of lava.

Zhang Ruochen flew out of the lava lake and looked around. There was no trace of Princess Luosha.

“Zhang Ruochen, see you in Kunlun’s Field.”

Her voice came from the horizon.

Zhang Ruochen currently had heavy spirits and didn’t chase after Princess Luosha. Instead, he took out the priest cane from the Moon Goddess and used it to contact her.

“Is Kunlun’s Field about to be invaded by Hell World?” Zhang Ruochen asked directly.

The Moon Goddess’ projection hovered in the sky above the cane, shining with divine light. Her majestic voice said, “That is the fate of Kunlun’s Field. It is destined to suffer from war again. Cultivate hard in the Truth Heavenly Domain. Before war erupts, I will tell you what to do.”

Her projection faded, but Zhang Ruochen stood there without moving.

A moment later, he went toward the Truth Heavenly Domain. He prepared to cultivate in isolation for the following year and reach an even stronger level.

Chapter 1707 - Leader

Chapter 1707: Leader

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Before going to the Truth Godly Palace, Zhang Ruochen met with Fairy Tianchu.

The two met in a maple forest around 10,000 miles from the Truth Godly Palace. It was autumn and all the maple leaves were red and bright like flowers. It was beautiful.

Fairy Tianchu wore a pure white robe. Standing among the maple leaves, she was like a goddess in a painting and was gorgeous.

Zhang Ruochen handed her 100,000 drops of divine spring and the scroll. “This is my promise to you. I did it!”

Instead of looking at the scroll, Fairy Tianchu destroyed it immediately. After taking the 100,000 drops of divine spring, she stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen with clear eyes.

“Why are you looking at me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“If you propose to me now, I might agree.”

Unexpectedly, Zhang Ruochen just laughed and shook his head. “Why would you agree? Because of that vow? Or because we have this weird mismatched fate?”

“Is the reason important?”

“Of course.”

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, “We don’t have enough fate. Even if I propose to you now, it won’t be my true intentions. I don’t want to go against my heart.”

Fairy Tianchu suddenly felt that she couldn't understand the man before her.

One hundred thousand drops of divine spring were extremely precious. He could definitely use it for himself or exchange it for resources from other cultivators. However, this man was actually giving them all to her for a promise.

Many men in the world wanted to marry Fairy Tianchu for her beauty, her strong abilities, or the Tianchu Civilization behind her.

But he didn't take this chance and make her fulfil her promise and marry him.

What kind of person is he exactly? Fairy Tianchu thought.

Zhang Ruochen left quietly. He never revealed his true identity.

The Amazing Little Taoist had an extremely pained expression. Along the way, he kept muttering, "One hundred thousand drops of divine spring. That's 100,000 drops of divine spring and you just gave it away. Zhang Ruochen, doesn't your heart hurt? If you gave it to me, I might be able to turn into divine medicine."

Zhang Ruochen smiled uncaringly. "Fairy Tianchu vowed before all cultivators that whoever could collect 100,000 drops of divine spring for her, she would marry. If someone wanted to marry her with the divine spring, she might really do it. No matter what, she's my woman. I would feel regret if she married someone else."

Then he asked, "We've already left the God-Naming Platform. How come you haven't left?"

The Amazing Little Taoist sighed. "The world is so large. I don't know where to go either. Plus, I'm a 100,000-year-old ancient medicine plant. If someone recognizes me, I'll definitely be hunted. What should I do now?"

"I'll introduce you to someone important," Zhang Ruochen said. "Perhaps it can help you."

“Who?” The Amazing Little Taoist’s eyes shimmered. “Could it be that god who just showed up earlier?”

“No... But I’ve already sent a message to it. I’m sure it’ll reunite with me soon.”

Zhang Ruochen led the Amazing Little Taoist to Kongling Island, the cultivation land of godly disciple Feng Xi. Feng Yan had already returned to the island. Xiang Chunan and Mu Lingxi were there too.

“Haha! Third Brother, you’re finally here,” Xiang Chunan said. “Hurry and call me Second Brother.”

Zhang Ruochen laughed. “How come you became Second Brother?”

Xiang Chunan’s eyes were serious. “Before entering the God-Naming Platform, we agreed to determine our rank according to the treasures we got. Are you backing out now?”

“So, you and Brother Feng have already compared?”

Feng Yan sat in the pavilion. Smiling, he said, “We did and that’s why he calls himself the Second Brother. Otherwise, he would want to be the leader.”

“At least I’m not last,” Xiang Chunan said, chuckling.

Zhang Ruochen coughed. “Do you think that my treasures are lesser than yours? Not as precious?”

Xiang Chunan said proudly, “Your cultivation has already reached the fourth step Saint King Realm. Clearly, you’ve used a lot of saint fruit and medicine. You probably don’t have a lot left now, right? Hehe.”

Mu Lingxi walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side. She took out everything that she’d received from the God-Naming Platform and gave it to him.

Seeing this, Xiang Chunan panicked. “No, no, Sister-in-law, this is a fair competition between us three. How can you give everything you collected to him?”

“What is mine is his,” Mu Lingxi said. “Why can’t I give them to him?”

“Yeah, why can’t she?” Feng Yan followed.

Xiang Chunan grew even more panicked, but he gave in finally. “Fine, you can’t beat me even if you add in Sister-in-law’s portion.”

Smiling, Zhang Ruochen shook his head at Mu Lingxi. Then he grabbed the Amazing Little Taoist and placed him before Xiang Chunan. “I can beat you with just this 100,000-year-old medicine, right?”

Xiang Chunan’s expression changed. “This old guy counts too?”

The Amazing Little Taoist sat cross-legged in Zhang Ruochen’s palm and looked at Xiang Chunan with disdain. “Why can’t I count?”

Mu Lingxi giggled. “Brother Xiang, are you a sore loser?”

“I...”

Xiang Chunan clenched his jaw. All of his hair stood up. In the end, he sighed and said, “Fine, I have less treasures than you.”

Holding the Amazing Little Taoist, Zhang Ruochen looked at Feng Yan. “Can I be the leader?”

“A 100,000-year-old plant isn’t enough.” Feng Yan shook his head.

“Seems like you’ve found some good things in the God-Naming Platform.” Zhang Ruochen took out the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and asked, “What about now?”

Feng Yan shot up from his stone stool. Taking the mirror, he caressed it and his eyes widened. “This is...the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror from True Lord Luotian.”

“Brother Feng, you actually know it.” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

“A godly disciple once saw it at the God-Naming Platform and sketched it. Many godly disciples would search for it when they went, but none of them succeeded. I didn’t expect you would be so lucky and find it.”

Zhang Ruochen had revealed an Absolute Saint weapon, so he was obviously the leader of the group.

That night, Zhang Ruochen, Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan all got drunk.

The second day, Feng Yan helped Xiang Chunan and Mu Lingxi enter the Truth Godly Palace to cultivate. Zhang Ruochen was still waiting.

The fourth day, Blackie finally came to Kongling Island and met with Zhang Ruochen.

As soon as it arrived, Blackie complained endlessly. “You didn’t tell me about something as important as the God-Naming Platform. What is this? What treasures did you find? Take them all out so I can see.”

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Amazing Little Taoist to introduce to Blackie. “This Taoist is called Amazing. He has very advanced cultivation, but he has reached a bottleneck now. He needs to be challenged in the mundane world. You can help him while I’m gone!”

Blackie studied the Amazing Little Taoist with its round eyes and sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. “Are you giving it to me to eat? My cultivation might be able to recover entirely after eating it.”

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes. “This Taoist isn’t simple,” he said seriously. “He can control an Absolute Saint weapon.”

He’d checked the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and discovered something annoying. No matter how much Holy Qi he added into the mirror, he couldn’t activate the Absolute Saint power.

It seemed that only the Amazing Little Taoist could use special tactics and make the mirror unleash the Absolute Saint power.

“An Absolute Saint weapon!”

Blackie was very excited. It reached out two claws and captured the Amazing Little Taoist. “Why didn’t you tell me that you have an Absolute Saint weapon? Hurry and take it out so I can see if it’s real or not.”

The Amazing Little Taoist felt that this owl was looking at him with strange eyes as if wanting to eat him.

“Zhang Ruochen, you don’t want me to practice with this owl, do you?” The Amazing Little Taoist looked disdainful.

Blackie swatted his head and berated, “Little guy, why are you looking at me like that? Don’t think you’re powerful just because you have an Absolute Saint weapon. I can eat you in a minute!”

The Amazing Little Taoist grew furious. “You dare to eat me? I can use my Absolute Saint weapon to beat you up until even your mom can’t recognize you!”

They instantly started fighting and rolling on the ground.

“Stop!”

Zhang Ruochen wanted to stop them, but he was useless. They instead fought even more intensely.

Blackie’s cultivation had recovered a lot and had the upper hand in this fight, crushing the Amazing Little Taoist on the ground.

“I will use the Absolute Saint weapon now and kill you, big-faced owl.” The Amazing Little Taoist took out the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror to activate it.

Just then, Blackie stepped back. Terrible Supreme Saint saintly might radiated from its body, intimidating the Amazing Little Taoist.

“Su...supreme Saint...”

The Amazing Little Taoist’s expression changed and he couldn’t hold the mirror steadily anymore.

Blackie pushed up its thick chest and laughed domineeringly. “Now you know how strong I am, right!? Zhang Ruochen wants you to follow me because I’m strong and can teach you. Why aren’t you satisfied? So what if you have an Absolute Saint weapon? I can utter a word and destroy you.”

The Amazing Little Taoist quickly put the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror away. He had a serious expression because he didn’t

dare to attack a Supreme Saint.

“Yes!” Blackie said. “As a Saint King, you should be obedient before a Supreme Saint. I’m already giving Zhang Ruochen respect by not making you kneel before me.”

Then Blackie sent a message to Zhang Ruochen, asking, “How do you want me to challenge him? Are you sure I can’t eat him? Not even a leg?”

Zhang Ruochen glared at Blackie. “I will cultivate inside the Truth Godly Palace for one year. Bring him around and take back the rest of Guanghan Field’s dojos. It’ll count as training!”

Chapter 1708 - Isolation

Chapter 1708: Isolation

After thinking, Zhang Ruochen said, "I have another big guy here. Can you make it submit?"

Blackie didn't care about the so-called "big guy." It was wondering how it could eat one of the Psychic Sage's legs. Could that so-called "big guy" be more precious than the leg of a 100,000-year-old saint medicinal plant?

"Set up a formation first so it doesn't escape," Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie didn't think it was necessary. "Escape?" it said proudly. "My cultivation has recovered a bit, so I can suppress anything. Zhang Ruochen, stop dallying and show me your big guy. Let me help you see what it is."

"I still think you should set up an imprisonment formation first. If that big guy escapes, I'll kill you."

"So unnecessary."

Blackie sighed. Then it took out a piece of jade covered in formation runes and sent Holy Qi into it.

Whoosh!

In an instant, a circular formation disc appeared.

Zhang Ruochen checked it. He discovered that it was a grade eight formation. The runes were very complex and varied. It could restrain a strong Saint King.

Annoyed, Blackie said, "Don't worry. Since a portion of my cultivation has recovered, my formation skills are already very advanced. I'm an Earth Master among Formation Saint Masters and can easily set up a grade eight formation."

"You're an Earth Master?" the Amazing Little Taoist asked.

Blackie looked at it coldly. "Is it strange for a Supreme Saint to be an Earth Master?"

Saint Masters had three levels: Man Master, Earth Master, and Sky Master.

Most Formation Saint Masters were Man Masters. They could set up grade eight formations and use them against strong Saint Kings.

Those who were very advanced could set up grade nine formations and use them against Supreme Saints. These Saint Masters were known as Earth Masters.

According to legends, Formation Saint Masters who delved deeply into this field were the strongest in combat below the God Realm but could also use formations to change an entire world's weather and fate. They could also change the path of stars. Their tactics were incredible and unbelievable. These were called Sky Masters.

Of course, a Formation Saint Master's main power wasn't for combat but for other aspects. Thus, even a Man Master could become an esteemed guest for a Supreme Saint.

If you really were an Earth Master, your status would be even greater.

If a world could produce an Earth Master, it meant that even if it couldn't produce a god, it would still be okay.

More than half of the mortal fields in Heaven World had no Formation Earth Master.

One could see how precious they were.

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe in Blackie. If it really was an Earth Master, it would probably be even cockier now.

Blackie's formation skills had indeed improved. It could actually carve a grade eight formation on a piece of jade and run it easily. A regular Formation Saint Master couldn't do that.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and released the seven-meter-tall white jade rabbit from the pages.

As soon as it broke free, the rabbit tried to escape. Its legs were dazzled with saint light and it rushed at the door.

Boom!

The formation disc glowed and shook violently.

Blackie's grade eight formation was almost shattered. Shocked, Zhang Ruochen hurriedly used the Time and Space Secret Guide to trap the rabbit again.

Blackie's eyes darted around. "Oh my, this...this...this is a piece of emperor saint jade! What kind of place is the God-Naming Platform? You can even find emperor saint jade! When is the next conference?"

"In ten years," Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie sighed. It felt great regret at not attending this year's God-Naming Platform Conference.

"Stop sighing!" Zhang Ruochen said. "This emperor saint jade's spirit was created at the God-Naming Platform. It also ate a lot of saint medicine, reaching the Supreme Saint Realm. But it's a natural spirit and hasn't cultivated any techniques or spells. It needs a learned person to guide it..."

"Speak no further," Blackie cut in. "Zhang Ruochen, you found the right person. I am a learned person and have advanced cultivation. I am the most suitable to guide it."

Zhang Ruochen stared at Blackie. A moment later, he said, "Actually, I'd wanted to give it to the Moon Goddess and have her guide it personally."

"No! If you give it to the Moon Goddess, it'll join Guanghai Field when it grows up and become a royal figure. It might get above us too. But if I guide it, it'll listen to us in the end. Imagine having a Supreme Saint follower. You'd terrify everyone." Blackie cackled.

Zhang Ruochen pet Blackie's feathers and laughed. "Okay, I'll see how powerful you are!"

"Don't worry. I'm the most reliable."

Blackie's tactics were indeed advanced. It cast an ancient secret spell and drew dense runes on the white jade rabbit. It used the runes to turn the rabbit back into its original form, temporarily transforming into a glittering piece of jade.

That day, Blackie led the Amazing Little Taoist and emperor saint jade, hurrying back to the Moon Goddess Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen, on the other hand, was led by a first disciple of Kongling Island to a room in the first level of the Truth Godly Palace. He began cultivating in isolation.

There were three observation images in the cultivation room.

Zhang Ruochen went to the second image. He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword, placing it on the ground.

Then the sword spirit flew out of the Abyss Ancient Sword. It sat cross-legged on the sword and started observing the image.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the third image.

He'd cultivated more than 200 Rules of Truth now, so he had no need to study the second image. Only the third one would be useful.

Chances to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace were extremely rare. Crossing the fourth level of the Ocean of Truth only gave Zhang Ruochen one year and three months of time. He also had 17 days that he hadn't used up before.

This actually wasn't a lot of time.

If he used all this time to comprehend the Way of Truth, it would actually be a waste.

The Truth Godly Palace was an amazing place for cultivating. The Rules of Saintly Way were very active. Comprehending the Saintly Way here would make it countless times faster to raise one's level.

Thus, after Zhang Ruochen sat down, he lit a Honghua Vine and took out the rules emperor weapon.

After all this, he emptied his mind and went into the deep cultivation state.

His six saint souls separated. Five bodies flew out, transforming into five shadows who were identical to Zhang Ruochen. They all appeared below the third image.

Three of them studied the third image.

The other three saint souls studied the Rules of Saintly Way in the rules emperor weapon.

Time flew by. Soon, half a month had passed.

Zhang Ruochen comprehended the third image entirely. He now had 729 Rules of Truth within him.

“I comprehended close to 500 Rules of Truth in only half of a month. This is incredible.”

Zhang Ruochen loosened his arm and practiced a Luo Water Fist Technique. After adding in the Rules of Truth, his power was three times stronger.

This comprehension speed far surpassed Zhang Ruochen’s predictions.

Feng Yan, a top talent trained by the Truth Godly Palace, had been cultivating the Way of Truth since childhood. He’d studied for at least two or three years in the Truth Godly Palace, but he had less than 3,000 Rules of Truth.

As a fourth step Saint King, it was very scary that Zhang Ruochen could comprehend 500 Rules of Truth in half a month. This was enough to terrify the godly disciples of the palace.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t think he was much more talented or smarter than Feng Yan. After analyzing, he decided that it must be the five ten thousandths of the Mysteries of Truth inside him.

Without it, he definitely wouldn’t be much faster than Feng Yan at comprehending the Rules of Truth.

The accomplishments in the Way of Truth were great, but he ran into a bottleneck in the Saintly Way.

He’d cultivated for half a month, but he was basically walking in place in terms of increasing the number of Rules of Saintly Way.

To a Saint King, bottlenecks were terrifying. It could mean that this would be his final result and that he’d never get a breakthrough in his entire life.

Zhang Ruochen didn't think his bottleneck would come so soon. He was soaked in cold sweat.

After looking closely, he discovered that he only gained seven Rules of Saintly Way after this half month and they were all Rules of Sword.

He spent half a day thinking and finally figured it out. "It must be a problem in the structure of my Rules of Saintly Way," he said to himself. "I've used a lot of saint medicine and fruit these days to raise my realm. I reached 110,000 Rules of Saintly Way in a few short days.

"But most of these 110,000 rules are easy minor or major ways. Very few are Absolute Saint or Ancient Ways.

"As one of my three major ways, I only have around 200 Rules of Sword. Rules of Time and Space are even fewer—less than 50."

He didn't think there was anything wrong before checking. After checking carefully, Zhang Ruochen was frightened because this was very serious. If he didn't adjust, he probably would never reach the Supreme Saint Realm.

These were his three focuses, but the number of Rules of Sword, Time and Space were almost negligible.

This was such a terrifying fact.

Of course, this was also a drawback to using saint medicine to improve. It seemed that he was improving quickly, but he was actually using up his potential and could ruin himself in the end.

Now that he realized, he could make it up.

Chapter 1709 - Second Level of the Godly Palace

Chapter 1709: Second Level of the Godly Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Next, I'll have to spend most of my time on the Way of Sword, Time and Space, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Studying these three ways would be ten or 100 times more difficult than studying other ways.

The Sword Way was a bit better because there were a lot of Rules of Sword Way in the rules emperor weapon from the Wujin Ancestor. Zhang Ruochen could study them directly and turn them into his own Rules of Sword Way.

But the rules emperor weapon didn't have any from the Way of Time or Space.

The Wujin Ancestor hadn't studied these two Ancient Ways at all. Thus, Zhang Ruochen couldn't convert them directly. He had to study slowly by himself.

This would take a lot of time without gaining a lot.

Fortunately, the Rules of Saintly Way were all active in the Truth Godly Palace. Comprehending the Ways of Time and Space would definitely be faster than outside.

After figuring out the way to break through the bottleneck, Zhang Ruochen stood up. He went to the Abyss Ancient Sword's side and asked, "How is the comprehension?"

"I still haven't figured out the second image fully yet." The sword spirit shook its head.

“The first level isn’t suitable for me anymore,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Follow me to the second level!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword was only a sword, after all. Zhang Ruochen couldn’t spend a bunch of time waiting for it and end up affecting his own cultivation.

Plus, the Way of Truth could only help the Abyss Ancient Sword a little bit.

The first level of the Truth Godly Palace had 88,888 cultivation rooms. It was like the entry level to the Way of Truth.

The second level was the refinery level. There were 8,888 cultivation residences.

Since the rooms were so limited, it wasn’t easy to enter and cultivate. You had to fully comprehend all three images of the first level to qualify.

Coming to the second level, Zhang Ruochen saw a dozen Truth Godly Palace disciples. Two of them were godly disciples. They were clearly much more advanced and were responsible for testing, accepting, and making arrangements for incoming cultivators.

One of the godly disciples was Feng Yan’s sister, Feng Xi.

When she saw Zhang Ruochen come to the second level, an undetectable look flashed past her eyes. She exchanged glances with another godly disciple in the distance.

“So fast!”

The other godly disciple chuckled softly.

Zhang Ruochen walked over and bowed slightly. “Greetings, Senior Sister Feng.”

“Zhang Ruochen, do you know that you must comprehend all three images in the first level before coming to the second level?”

“Yes,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Does that mean you’ve already comprehended them fully?” Feng Xi asked.

“Yes.”

Feng Xi’s pupils constricted involuntarily. “But I remember that you’ve only cultivated for around one month in the Truth Godly Palace in total.”

Hearing her conversation with Zhang Ruochen, the surrounding disciples all perked up their ears.

He’d comprehended all three images in one month?

The disciples of the Truth Godly Palace all started whispering amongst themselves. They clearly didn’t believe it.

Zhang Ruochen looked nonchalant. “One month is enough. If you don’t believe me, you can test me.”

Feng Xi nodded. She led Zhang Ruochen to the northeastern corner of the square. There was an ancient bronze mirror as tall as three men standing atop one another.

“This is the Truth Mirror. You just have to activate all of your Rules of Truth and the patterns will appear on the mirror.”

Zhang Ruochen walked below the mirror and started moving the rules with all his might. Seven hundred twenty-nine strange patterns instantly appeared around his reflection. They wrapped around him like spider webs.

Looking at his reflection in the mirror, Zhang Ruochen murmured, “So these are the rule patterns.”

Behind him, the many Truth Godly Palace disciples let out surprised cries, finding this unbelievable.

Feng Xi’s expression didn’t change that much. She just took out a badge for Zhang Ruochen. “The first level is only for entry cultivation. The second level won’t be so easy.”

Zhang Ruochen accepted the badge and said humbly, “Senior Sister Feng, could you give me some tips? Perhaps I can take fewer wrong paths.”

It might have been due to Feng Yan, but the cold and frosty Feng Xi really did give him some tips.

Under a first disciple’s lead, Zhang Ruochen went to the cultivation residence.

The godly disciple standing beside Feng Xi looked at Zhang Ruochen's back and said, "So amazing! Do you think he received Mysteries of Truth?"

Feng Xi's eyes flashed. "It's best not to guess casually about this. If news spread, the consequences would be serious."

"You're right. The Mysteries of Truth are too important," the godly disciple said meaningfully.

Just then, Feng Xi's ears twitched as if she heard something. She hurriedly lowered herself to one knee and her expression became respectful.

Half a moment later, she stood up again and looked at the other godly disciple. "Our teacher sent a message. It is forbidden to spread any information about Zhang Ruochen."

"We shocked our teacher?"

"For the past century, our master has been ruling the Truth Godly Palace," Feng Xi said. "Since he has sent a divine message, we should hurry and warn the other disciples so they don't leak any information."

The godly disciple nodded but also had a strange expression. "Very few things can alert the teacher. Do you think Zhang Ruochen really did get the Mysteries of Truth?"

"I think that we shouldn't discuss this anymore."

Seeing Feng Xi's cold expression, the disciple suddenly thought of something. His expression faltered and he fell to the ground. "I didn't mean to second-guess the teacher," he said, repenting. "Please forgive me."

...

Zhang Ruochen used the badge and entered the cultivation residence. His sight brightened instantly and his view broadened. The ground became a colorful sea of flowers.

He took a deep breath and instantly smelled the fragrance.

"The second level of the Truth Godly Palace is indeed magical. One residence is like one world. Would others have a sea of flowers too?"

Looking at all the fresh flowers, Zhang Ruochen got into a good mood. He sat in the flowers and Feng Xi's words from earlier rang through his mind. "Observe the flowers for the truth. All are in the flowers."

He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and lit a Honghua Vine.

He separated his soul into six again. One studied the Sword Way, one the Time Way, one the Space Way, one the other Saintly Ways, and the remaining two studied the Truth Way.

One month later, the flowers around him changed.

Petals fell down naturally, but instead of landing on the ground, they flew in the air. They spun around Zhang Ruochen like a rain of petals.

His eyes opened suddenly. "Extinguish," he uttered.

Whoosh!

The flying rain of flowers vanished into strands of smoke.

A smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. "This is the first level that Senior Sister Feng mentioned. The flowers are not flowers. All are hallucinations. It's not that hard to understand!"

After one month of studying, Zhang Ruochen now had 2,187 Rules of Truth.

He stood up and executed a Luo Water Fist Technique. After adding in the Rules of Truth, it was four times stronger.

"Not bad. Now, I'll start studying the second level."

Zhang Ruochen continued to cultivate.

According to Feng Xi, the rooms in the second floor of the Truth Godly Palace had two levels. Completing each level represented a big step forward in the Way of Truth.

But the second level was much harder than the first.

Most of the top talents who came to the Truth Godly Palace couldn't even comprehend the first "flower, non-flower" level. Even Feng Yan, who'd cultivated in the Truth Godly Palace for many years, still remained at this level.

The second level was far harder than the first. Zhang Ruochen spent two months before he comprehended it fully.

When he did so, the plants around him all produced buds and bloomed with a speed visible to the naked eye.

Suddenly, the flowers that had disappeared came back and the fragrance hit him.

Zhang Ruochen let out a long laugh. “So, this is the second level. Flowers are life, beautiful and vibrant. Not bad, not bad. Life is the most precious.”

Zhang Ruochen now had 6,561 Rules of Truth.

Next, he practiced the Luo Water Fist Technique and actually released five times the power.

“The Way of Truth finally isn’t my shortcoming anymore.”

Before, when Zhang Ruochen fought with those top geniuses, his biggest shortcoming was mid-level saint spells and the Way of Truth.

For example, when Zhang Ruochen fought with Blue Fang in the same realm, his saint spells had been weaker because of his weaker Way of Truth. In the end, he had to use the Fire God Boxing Set to defeat Blue Fang.

Now, Zhang Ruochen’s every saint spell was five times stronger. If he fought with Blue Fang in the same realm again, Zhang Ruochen could defeat him with one punch.

His cultivation hadn’t improved that much, but his combat ability was now comparable to King Yan and Queen Lian even if he didn’t use the powers of time and space.

If he used the powers of time and space, it would be possible to defeat them too.

One could say that his improvement in the Way of Truth allowed him to become a top figure in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

Right then, the Holy Carnivorous Flower’s voice rang out within him. “Master, I’ve awoken.”

Then an extremely alluring woman walked out of his back.

While slumbering, Demonic Sound's cultivation had improved vastly. She was now a fifth step Saint King.

Demonic Sound stretched, sketching an image with tempting curves. "Master," she said with a soft voice. "I'm so hungry. Do you have any Saint Kings for me to eat?"

Chapter 1710 - Six Times Stronger

Chapter 1710: Six Times Stronger

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I don’t have saint kings anymore, but I do have some of their saint sources,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Demonic Sound said, “I can do with that.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t take out those saint sources, instead, he said, “I have some better use for those saint kings’ saint sources, so I can’t give them to you. You’re in Truth Godly Palace now, so just comprehend Way of Truth, otherwise you won’t be able to fight real great beings.”

Demonic Sound looked contemptuous and said, “Is Way of Truth really that important? I’m Carnivorous Holy Flower, and I don’t need to be afraid of anyone at my level.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “You’re a fifth-step saint king, aren’t you? I’m a fourth-step saint king now, so if you can ward off one strike from me, I’ll take back what I said and give you ten saint sources of saint kings.”

“One strike?”

“Yes, just one strike?”

“Without the power of space and time?”

“Of course not.”

Demonic Sound smiled and said, “I know you’re powerful, master, but you’ve really underestimated me. I’ve absorbed the bodies of saint souls of hundreds of talents from Yin and Yang

Field, Black Demon Field and Ten Thousand Devil Field. My cultivation has surged, and I've gained some special power. Although I'm only a fifth-step saint king, I can defeat a sixth-step saint king in a real battle and even challenge a seventh-step saint king."

"Then let me show you the power of Way of Truth since you're so confident."

"Ghost God Comes."

It was the eighteenth move of Luo Water Fist Technique.

Two phantoms, one brighter and one darker, showed up as if a God was walking with a ghost.

Demonic Sound smiled as she wasn't afraid, "Your fist technique is indeed impressive, but it's not enough to defeat me."

"Really?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

He infused the Fist Technique with more than six thousand Rules of Truth, which made Zhang Ruochen's force stronger. The Godly shadow and the ghostly shadow became larger and denser.

Demonic Sound was slightly dazed. She raised her arm, which turned into tens of thousands of vines.

There were lightning flames on the vines, which gave out powerful demonic sha Qi, looking like a cluster of dark clouds covering the sky, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Two forces clashed with each other.

The vines wielded by Demonic Sound were all torn apart, and Zhang Ruochen hit her with his two iron fists, knocking her away.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen retracted eighty percent of his power so that he wouldn't seriously injure Demonic Sound.

Demonic Sound knelt on the ground with one knee and said in pain, "Cough... How was that possible... Why did your

strength surge five times? I can't even defend myself against you."

Zhang Ruochen said, "This is the beauty of Way of Truth! Perhaps my cultivation and fighting power are both less advanced than yours, but I can easily crush you by mobilizing the Rules of Truth."

Demonic Sound asked, "Can I absorb and seize the Rules of Truth directly?"

"I don't think so."

Zhang Ruochen let Demonic Sound try to absorb the nutrients from the flowers in the cave, yet the efforts were in vain as she couldn't absorb the Rules of Truth.

"Better comprehend it yourself. Even Abyss Ancient Sword has comprehended almost one hundred Rules of Truth, which could double its power."

Zhang Ruochen then said, "I'll stay in Truth Godly Palace for about another year. If you can comprehend seven hundred and twenty-nine Rules of Truth in this year, I'll give you a huge gift."

Saint Kings who managed to comprehend seven hundred and twenty-nine Rules of Truth could boost the power of their saint spells by three times.

Which was very difficult to achieve, and most of the talents couldn't do it.

Demonic Sound wanted to get stronger after being defeated by Zhang Ruochen with one strike, so she asked, "What kind of gift?"

"A Seven-Yao Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon! If you make enough efforts, you'll be able to get it."

Zhang Ruochen put Demonic Sound back to his body, walked out of the cave and came to the square on the second level of Truth Godly Palace.

It was still Feng Xi and another Godly disciple who was guarding the second level of Truth Godly Palace, and they were both pretty surprised to see Zhang Ruochen walk out.

Feng Xi asked, “Feng Yan said you’ve passed the fourth level of the ocean domain, so you must’ve gained a lot of refining time. Why don’t you stay in the cave to comprehend more? Do you have any confusion? Supreme saints will have lectures about Way of Truth every month, so I can take you there if you need.”

Zhang Ruochen cupped his hands and saluted Feng Xi, “Thank you, sister Feng, but I’ve comprehended the first two levels of Flower Ocean Cave, so I want to go check the third level.”

“You’ve comprehended both levels?”

Feng Xi looked surprised.

The other Godly disciple, Yan Shiju, was astounded and he looked at Zhang Ruochen like he was a freak. He asked, “How many Rules of Truth have you got?”

“Sixty-five hundred and sixty-one,” said Zhang Ruochen.

He had to go through a trial if he wanted to refine on the third level of Truth Godly Palace. He couldn’t get to the third level of the godly palace if he didn’t comprehend the first two levels in Flower Ocean Cave.

“Come here and have a test.”

Feng Xi still found it hard to believe, so she took Zhang Ruochen to under the Truth Mirror to test him.

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of Truth Mirror and mobilized the Rules of Truth, and then, inscriptions showed up on the mirror.

Many disciples from Truth Godly Palace stood still in the distance, breathing heavily.

Feng Xi stayed silent for a while and said, “Do you know that many leaders from the large fields didn’t achieve as highly as you on Way of Truth. The creatures who have fully the two levels in Flower Ocean Cave are all famed great beings, and most of them have been refining in Truth Heavenly Domain for ten years. Your achievement has already surpassed many godly disciples.”

Zhang Ruochen knew what she said for some extent.

For example, the leaders of Yin and Yang Palace, King Flame and Queen Lian, had comprehended the two levels in Flower Ocean Cave, and they could exert power five times stronger.

Wang Xu who had passed the fourth level of the ocean domain when he was a half-step saint king had comprehended the first level in Flower Ocean Cave.

Feng Xi said, “You can go to the third level of Truth Godly Palace, and I’m really expecting want kind of surprise you can bring me.”

“See you later.”

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the third level of Truth Godly Palace in white.

Yan Shiju transmitted his voice to Feng Xi, “Zhang Ruochen must’ve got Mysteries of Truth. So jealous.”

Feng Xi shot him a glare and said, “You’d better not do anything against him. Zhang Ruochen is a very special man, and both Taoist sect and Buddha sect want him, not to mention he has Moon Goddess behind him. He’s not yours to mess with.”

Yan Shiju smiled and said, “Our grandmaster has already ordered us not to.

...

Only few monks could reach the third level of Truth Godly Palace, so it was desolate.

The guard on the third level was an elder in grey. He looked like an eighty-year-old with wrinkled on his face.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t feel any trace of saint Qi ripple on his body, yet it was exactly what made him more intimidating. Zhang Ruochen immediately saluted him.

The elder in grey looked at Zhang Ruochen, smiled and nodded, “Impressive, impressive indeed. You managed to come to the third level of Truth Godly Palace at such a young

age, which is very rare. If you're a disciple of Truth Godly Palace, I'll definitely admit you as my disciple."

"Feng Xi has already told me about you, since you're a friend of hers, I can teach you some tricks that might help you."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't be happier. He said, "Thank you so much, senior."

After hearing what the grey elder's instruction, Zhang Ruochen came to a metal door, opened it and walked in.

There were eight hundred and eighty-eight small worlds on the third level.

After coming to one of the small worlds, all Zhang Ruochen could see was a yellow ground. Mud, sand and stones were mixed together, and they were everything in the small world, looking lifeless.

There was no wind or wind.

The small world was so incredibly quiet that Zhang Ruochen could even hear his blood flowing in his veins.

Zhang Ruochen summoned both Abyss Ancient Sword and Demonic Sound and said, "Way of Truth is inside the mud, according to the senior I just talked to. Go comprehend it yourself."

The ground in the small world was vast with lots of different structures. Part of it formed towering mountains, some part formed deep valleys, some part had turned into desert and some were plains made of huge rocks.

Zhang Ruochen spent three days walking to every corner in the small world before igniting Honghua Vine, starting to comprehend and refine on a desert.

He still let half of his six saint souls comprehend Way of Sword, Way of Time and Way of Space.

Half a year passed.

The desert under Zhang Ruochen turned into a whirlpool, spinning faster and faster, and the sand formed a wall, covering him.

It lasted for a month.

One day, Zhang Ruochen mumbled, “Earth not Earth, Everything Void.”

Whoosh!

The sand suddenly all disappeared.

Even the desert under him vanished, turning into a brown mist cloud.

The ground disappeared, and everything around him was sky.

“Is this the first level of Earth Small World?”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his mind power, and he realized that he’d been refining for seven months, which scared him a bit. The third level of Truth Godly Palace was indeed much more difficult than the second one.

He had nineteen thousand six hundred and eighty-three Rules of Truth already, which was an amazing improvement.

Boom!

He waved his fist, which was six times stronger.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be happier. He thought, “I have five more months to refine and improve my Way of Truth. Can I comprehend the second level of Earth Small World?”

If he could fully comprehend the second level of Earth Small World, he could exert power seven times stronger.”

According to Feng Xi, there were only few monks in Truth Heavenly Domain who could reach that level, excluding the godly disciples from Truth Godly Palace.

Chapter 1711 - Seventh Level of Ocean Domain

Chapter 1711: Seventh Level of Ocean Domain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After five months, Zhang Ruochen increased the number of Rules of Truth in his body to more than twenty-eight thousand traces.

However, he couldn't touch the second level of Earth Small World. It was as if there was chasm between him and that level.

Suddenly, a vast sound rang in the small world. "Time's up."
"It's been fifteen months already?"

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes, looking feeble. It took him some time to regain full consciousness.

After more than one year of refining, he became slow, as if it'd been a century.

His biggest achievement this year was in Way of Truth, yet he didn't make any breakthrough on his mind power.

His mind power was still at pinnacle level fifty-six, so he almost didn't make any improvement on it at all.

As for saintly way, he had overcome some bottlenecks, as he increased the saintly way rules in Heaven Pass River by eighty thousand, making the total number one hundred and ninety thousand.

As for the sword Way rules, there were now more than fifteen hundred.

As for time rules and space rules, there were more than two hundred now.

Zhang Ruochen spent a lot of energy refining these three, so he balanced the number of saintly way rules in his body better.

However, this wasn't good enough yet.

As a fourth-step saint king, he was supposed to have more than one thousand time rules and space rules.

“It's too slow to refine Way of Time and Way of Space by myself, even in the best place to refine, the Truth Godly Palace. I've spent more than a year but I only managed to comprehend two hundred rules. Way too inefficient.

“It might take me a hundred years to make a small breakthrough on Way of Time and Way of Space if I'm outside.”

Zhang Ruochen now understood why Princess Luosha would take such risks going to Space Godly Palace to learn Way of Space. There were definitely valuables which could help monks comprehend space rules. There might even be rules saint weapons and rules emperor weapons left by seniors practicing Way of Space.

A rules saint weapon, or a rules emperor weapon, represented the inheritance from a senior.

If he didn't go refine in Space Godly Palace, it would take him a very long time to improve his level on it.

The leader of Space Godly Palace, Gong Ziyan, was very close with Heaven Field Sect. Even the princess of the Luosha race could get into Space Godly Palace to refine, which worried Zhang Ruochen a lot as he reckoned there was a lot of trouble with Space Godly Palace, so he couldn't go refine there.

Which left Zhang Ruochen only one option to improve his Way of Time and Way of Space.

Finding the place where Saint Monk Xumi had passed away.

Perhaps his inheritance was in the place where Saint Monk Xumi passed away, and he could improve his Way of Time

and Way of Space only if he found his inheritance, and thus his cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen was still only a fourth-step saint king because of the restraint of his Way of Time and Way of Space, both of which were very difficult to comprehend.

If Zhang Ruochen comprehended them all by himself, it might take him more than one thousand years to become a supreme saint.

“Normally, monks can only become a fifth-step saint king when they have three hundred thousand saintly way rules in their bodies. I’m very far from becoming a fifth-step saint king now, but my power is improving very fast, far superior to most of the other monks.”

After calming himself down, Zhang Ruochen summoned Carnivorous Holy Flower and the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The Abyss Ancient Sword had improved a lot. It had not only become a Five-Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon, but also comprehended eight hundred more Rules of Truth.

“I think I can start forming my sword spirit body now,” said the sword spirit.

Zhang Ruochen said gleefully, “Amazing. Let’s do this immediately after we get out. Tell me about the materials you need, and I’ll go get them for you.”

The Abyss Ancient Sword was Zhang Ruochen’s best friend, now and eight hundred years ago.

After he helped the sword spirit form a body, the sword spirit would become an actual creature. It would be able to think and refine by itself, and its quality would also surge.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Demonic Sound and asked, “How about you? How many Rules of Truth have you refined?”

Demonic Sound smiled and said, “I can amaze you when I actually put in the efforts. I’ve refined exactly seven hundred and twenty-nine Rules of Truth.”

“Really? You really did it?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit thrilled.

Demonic Sound flapped her hand without saying an extra word, and then, a lightning ball emerged on her palm.

Then, she mobilized Rules of Truth and merged them with her palm, immediately after which the power from the lightning ball surged more than twice.

The lightning ball flew toward Zhang Ruochen in a curve.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and grabbed the handle of the Abyss Ancient Sword, activating Sword Way Xuangang and forming an oval shield with a diameter of twenty feet.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen was knocked more than ten miles away by the power of the lightning ball.

After balancing himself, Zhang Ruochen dispersed Sword Way Xuangang and smiled. “Three times stronger. It seems you’ve really refined seven hundred and twenty-nine Rules of Truth.”

Demonic Sound looked up and said smugly, “Of course.”

Zhang Ruochen took out Wang Tian’s Endless Blade from his space ring, gave it to Demonic Sound, and said, “This is a Seven Yao Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon, and the blade spirit has already formed its body. If you can tame the blade spirit body, I’ll give it to you.”

Demonic Sound took the Endless Blade and played with it for a moment. Then she smiled and said, “Master, you might be defeated by me after I get this sword.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and put Demonic Sound back into his body, walking out of Earth Small World.

The elder in grey gazed at Zhang Ruochen, probably having known the number of Rules of Truth inside Zhang Ruochen’s body. He said appreciatively, “Young man, you can definitely reach farther on the Ocean of Truth given your achievements in the Way of Truth.”

“That’s exactly what I want to do.”

Zhang Ruochen bowed to the grey elder and left the third level of the Truth Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen saw Feng Xi and Yan Shiju again when he went back to the second level of the Truth Godly Palace, which kind of confused him.

Guarding Truth Godly Palace should only be a task for godly disciples, and they shouldn't be spending more than a year guarding this place, which delayed their refining process.

Little did Zhang Ruochen know that Feng Xi and Yan Shiju were also very upset by it.

Originally, they only needed to guard the Truth Godly Palace for three months before they could leave. However, because of Zhang Ruochen, their grandmaster had ordered them to stay until Zhang Ruochen left.

Which was why Feng Xi and Yan Shiju stayed in the Truth Godly Palace for more than one year.

Feng Xi saw Zhang Ruochen walk down from the third level, and her eyes gleamed. "Finally you came out. How many Rules of Truth have you refined?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "It's very difficult to comprehend the two levels in Earth Small World. I only managed to comprehend the first level.

Hearing that, the disciples standing behind Feng Xi and Yan Shiju wanted to suffocate Zhang Ruochen.

He managed to fully comprehend the first level of Earth Small World, wasn't that enough?

Even the ten godly disciples spent more than ten years comprehending the first level of Earth Small World.

After a while, Feng Xi calmed herself down and said, "You can go try and cross the Ocean of Truth now. If you pass the fifth level, you can get an additional sixteen months to refine, and if you pass the sixth level, you'll get another thirty-two months."

Obviously, Feng Xi thought that Zhang Ruochen had a chance to cross the sixth level of the ocean domain.

After all, fourth-step saint kings who could understand the first level of Earth Small World were very rare. He might make a miracle.

“Exactly what I have in mind.”

Zhang Ruochen left the Truth Godly Palace and headed straight to the Ocean of Truth.

Yan Shiju shot a look at Feng Xi and said, “Zhang Ruochen’s already taken off, so we can leave Truth Godly Palace. Do you want to go check out how he performs on the Ocean of Truth?”

Feng Xi nodded as she was very curious as well.

Zhang Ruochen came to the Ocean of Truth, boarded a Boat of Truth, and crossed the first four levels of ocean domain with ease, reaching the first level.

One year ago, Zhang Ruochen had fallen into the ocean after sailing eight miles on the fifth level of the ocean as he couldn’t balance the Boat of Truth.

However, Rules of Truth had shown their power. Zhang Ruochen sailed fast and stably on the fifth level of the ocean domain.

Zhang Ruochen came to the exit of the fifth level of the ocean domain without any trouble and met the guard.

“Broken Heavenly Road.”

Zhang Ruochen performed one move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, and the water in the ocean surged, forming a water dragon, hitting the body of the guard, dismantling his body.

He passed by with only one strike.

Zhang Ruochen passed the light screen and got to the sixth level of the ocean domain.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Ruochen reached the exit of the sixth level of the ocean domain and started to fight the guard.

The guard of the sixth level was much stronger than that on the fifth level. Zhang Ruochen only defeated it after seventeen moves.

Some monks on the shore of the Ocean of Truth noticed him when he arrived at the seventh level of the ocean domain.

“Someone reached the seventh level of the ocean domain?”

“Who’s that? Anyone who enters the seventh level of the ocean domain is a great talent who’s renowned in every field.”

“It must be the leader of a strong field, but why do I find that person to be a bit unfamiliar?”

“Unfamiliar? Are you kidding? He’s Zhang Ruochen! The creature who slaughtered almost all the monks from Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field. He’s a terrifically forceful guy!”

“Zhang Ruochen has shown up after more than a year.”

“Zhang Ruochen? Impossible! I heard that he just became a saint king. How did he manage to get to the seventh level?”

...

People were heatedly discussing this on the shore.

Many monks were shocked to their core, especially after they knew Zhang Ruochen’s identity, as they couldn’t believe what they saw.

Feng Xi whispered to herself, “He didn’t even use all his power to defeat the guard of the sixth level. We’ve underestimated him. Zhang Ruochen might thrill the entire Truth Heavenly Domain trying to cross the Ocean of Truth this time.”

Chapter 1712 - Storms Don't Stop

Chapter 1712: Storms Don't Stop

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After entering the seventh level, the difficulty skyrocketed. Even with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation and knowledge of the Way of Truth, he still felt trouble in controlling the Truth Boat.

After spending a great amount of time, Zhang Ruochen finally reached the pass of the seventh level.

Even so, deafening sounds still arose on the bank.

A cultivator who'd just entered the seventh level and one who'd reached the pass were two completely different concepts. More importantly, Zhang Ruochen was only a fourth step Saint King and still very young.

He'd already reached this step, so his future accomplishments would probably be even more unbelievable.

Almost all the cultivators near the Truth Godly Palace were alarmed. They hurried to the Ocean of Truth and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Right now, he was fully focused on the guardian of the seventh pass.

This guardian radiated with very frightening saintly might, giving Zhang Ruochen quite some pressure. He was forced to activate the Hundred Saint Blood Armor immediately and release the power of the Fire God Armor.

“Tenth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Broken Soul Song.”

Zhang Ruochen’s arms flared with flames. They were like two clouds of fire. A river also appeared, flowing between them.

His full-power punch clashed with the guardian’s fist technique.

An explosive sound rang out.

The river, thousands of meters long, was shattered into droplets of rain.

Zhang Ruochen was completely at a disadvantage in this clash. The Truth Boat under him flew back quickly, but the guardian caught up. It punched again and an ear-splitting sound rang out.

“Luo Water into Dragon.”

Zhang Ruochen performed the 35th move of the Luo Water Fist Technique. A semi-transparent dragon projected out of his body and attacked.

The powerful dragon image was shattered mercilessly by the guardian and Zhang Ruochen was sent flying again.

The guardian grew more and more aggressive, not giving Zhang Ruochen any time to breathe. By the time it struck with its 12th punch, it sealed all of Zhang Ruochen’s exit paths and went directly for his forehead.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly used the Spatial Twist and barely managed to escape from the guardian’s attack. He moved elsewhere.

It was mainly because Zhang Ruochen had comprehended more than 200 Rules of Space during isolation. He also controlled space. Otherwise, the guardian’s previous punch would’ve injured him seriously.

In the following battle, Zhang Ruochen used spatial power to the extreme. He dodged occasionally and attacked other times.

After exchanging more than 300 blows with the guardian, Zhang Ruochen finally got the chance. He swung the Abyss

Ancient Sword and performed the Time Sword Technique, uttering, “Wu Sword.”

When the sword struck, time stopped.

When the flow of time recovered, Zhang Ruochen’s Abyss Ancient Sword penetrated the guardian’s body.

“Success...”

As soon as joy appeared on his face, his stomach was hit heavily. He flew out like a scarecrow and fell into the ocean.

His sword had penetrated the guardian, but it had missed its critical organs and hadn’t been fatal.

Instead, the guardian’s one punch could kill Zhang Ruochen.

When he returned to land, Zhang Ruochen circulated his Holy Qi and most of the stomach pain vanished.

“I’m still not enough to reach the eighth level.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled wryly.

He didn’t continue crossing the ocean. Instead, he turned and left.

Even though it seemed that he wasn’t far from the guardian’s level, he knew clearly that with his current abilities, he wasn’t the guardian’s match.

His biggest shortcoming was still with saint spells.

He’d completed the Luo Water Fist Technique, a mid-level saint spell, and Sword Eight, which was amazing. However, he hadn’t cultivated physical techniques or defensive mid-level saint spells. He was still a bit away from being a true top talent. He wasn’t the best yet.

If Zhang Ruochen could complete Sword Nine like Ling Feiyu, then he would naturally be able to defeat the seventh pass guardian easily.

Time.

It was still because he hadn’t cultivated for long enough or accumulated enough.

What he lacked most was time.

After passing the fifth level, I received two-ten-thousandths of the Mysteries of Truth. After passing the sixth level, I received three-ten-thousandths of the Mysteries of Truth. Now, I have ten-ten-thousandths in total. My speed of comprehending Rules of Saintly Way should be even faster now.

Zhang Ruochen had actually come to the Ocean of Truth just to get Mysteries of Truth.

Of course, by crossing the fifth and sixth levels, he received four years to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace.

If he entered to cultivate in isolation now, he would definitely be able to comprehend the second level of the Earth Small World in four years, or even a higher state. His cultivation would skyrocket too. It may even be possible to reach the sixth step Saint King Realm.

Other Saint Kings would definitely go into isolation.

After all, to Saint Kings with a long lifespan, four years was just a snap of the fingers.

But Zhang Ruochen had no time.

Four years was too precious to him. Many things could happen. By the time he came out in four years, the entire Kunlun's Field may be destroyed. Countless family and friends would be burned to ashes.

Time, time... Time was so tight, pressing down on him and making it hard to breathe. He couldn't relax for a second.

I must search for Saint Monk Xumi's heritage, Zhang Ruochen thought. Only then can my cultivation have a breakthrough, and I'll be able to cultivate faster too.

Because Zhang Ruochen crossed the fifth and sixth levels in his second year in the Truth Heavenly Domain, he was unable to receive extra rewards. He couldn't help Guanghan Field gain more cultivation spots.

After he left, the shore of the Ocean of Truth was still filled with discussion.

“Zhang Ruochen must be a fourth step Saint King, or fifth step. Oh my, that's his cultivation, but he almost defeated the

seventh pass guardian.”

“You have to know that he’s only cultivated in the Truth Heavenly Domain for around a year. If he stays for more years, he’ll definitely cross the seventh or even eighth level. In the future, he might even cross the ninth level.”

“No way! Even among the top ten godly disciples, only one or two have crossed the ninth level. Plus, they have the full support of the Truth Godly Palace. They can cultivate there all the time and be guided personally by a god. They’ve also repressed their cultivations for more than 100 years to reach this step.”

“Crossing the ninth level and entering the tenth level is a legend. It’s not so easy to accomplish.”

“Actually, Zhang Ruochen might not be undefeatable in his generation. Didn’t that Dark Fool cross the sixth level earlier? And the Thousand Star Maiden had fought with the seventh pass guardian for a long time. She’s not much weaker than Zhang Ruochen.”

...

While everyone was discussing, a few figures hidden in the shadows left the Ocean of Truth and followed Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen arrived at Kongling Island and saw Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan with a row of wine jars. They were waiting in a pavilion.

“You’re here, you’re here, you’re finally here!”

Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan stood up. As if they’d arranged this, they said in unison, “Congratulations, Big Brother, for crossing the sixth level. From now on, you’ll sweep across the Truth Heavenly Domain and meet no enemies.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t know whether to cry or laugh. Walking into the pavilion, he said, “Sweep across the Truth Heavenly Domain? My cultivation isn’t enough yet. How about it? What level did you reach after your isolated cultivation?”

Xiang Chunan sighed. “I only managed to cross the sixth level. I fell into the ocean as soon as I entered the seventh

level.”

Feng Yan was speechless. “You two are crazy. I’m a top talent of the Truth Godly Palace and cultivated so many years, but you two surpassed me. I lost to the sixth pass guardian and couldn’t cross over.”

“Has anything major happened in my year of isolation?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Nope.” Xiang Chunan shook his head.

Feng Yan huffed. “Nothing major happened? Didn’t you already have many assassination attempts after you came out?”

Xiang Chunan giggled. “Nothing big. Nothing big.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and asked, “What exactly happened?”

“I used a lot of connections to check and have found some clues,” Feng Yan said. “The killers come from the Heavenly Assassination Organization. Those big figures from the Heaven Field Sect hired them. It must be that the bloodshed you two brought about at the God-Naming Platform angered the elders from those major worlds. They paid heavy sums to hire killers and take revenge.

“Big Brother, you disguised yourself, so they couldn’t confirm your identity. Thus, Third Brother became their main target.”

In the God-Naming Platform, Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan had killed many important talents from the Heaven Field Sect. This included Feng Jian, leader of the Heaven Track Field, and some god grandsons and deities.

This killing definitely angered the older generation of strong figures in the Heaven Field Sect.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened to the extreme. “This is the core area of the Truth Godly Palace. Can assassins from the Heavenly Assassination Organization come in to kill?”

“That’s why I said they must’ve paid a heavy sum.”

Feng Yan continued, "I already reported this. The Heavenly Assassination Organization is completely provoking us. They've crossed the bottom line of the Truth Godly Palace, so the palace will definitely deal a painful punishment."

Zhang Ruochen picked up his wine and drank it all. "Chunan, I troubled you."

"No, Big Brother, don't say that. What do you mean by 'trouble'?"

Suddenly, as if reminded of something, Xiang Chunan said in a low voice, "Oh, Big Brother, you should be careful. The Thousand Star Maiden is looking for you everywhere. She's already come to Kongling Island many times. A lot of cultivators are saying that you had car sex with her and your relationship is special. Is it true?"

Feng Yan also scooted closer with a very interested expression. "I heard of this too. Even godly disciples are gossiping about this. There are also rumors that a spatial cultivator named Lin Yue engaged in indescribable actions with the Thousand Star Maiden. That Lin Yue is definitely you. Big Brother, you're so powerful. You even had sex with the Thousand Star Maiden?"

Chapter 1713 - Big Brother's Woman

Chapter 1713: Big Brother's Woman

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Thousand Star Maiden came to Kongling Island, which meant that she knew the relationship between him and Feng Yan.

That woman must've come here for the Holy Spring.

However, Zhang Ruochen had given most of the Holy Spring water to Fairy Tianchu, so he only had around ten thousand drops of Holy Spring water, which was not enough for Thousand Star Maiden.

How was he supposed to explain those one hundred thousand drops of Holy Spring water when asked by Thousand Star Maiden?

Besides, Zhang Ruochen had no plan giving all the leftover Holy Spring water to her as he needed some for himself.

But how was he supposed to get Saint Monk Xumi's long whisker from Thousand Star Maiden and ask about the place where Saint Monk Xumi passed away?

Zhang Ruochen's heart pounded faster thinking about Saint Monk Xumi's whisker.

As someone tremendously powerful like Saint Monk Xumi, rules must've merged with every single cell of his body. There must be lots of rules in even just a long whisker, including time rules and space rules.

Which meant Zhang Ruochen would be able to comprehend time rules and space rules directly if he got the whisker to improve his cultivation.

At least for now, that long whisker was enough for Zhang Ruochen to keep refining.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his jaw, pondering a way to get the long whisker from Thousand Star Maiden without giving the Holy Spring water.

What about snatching is?

They were already mortal enemies, so there was no moral to talk about. Even Thousand Star Maiden said that she would kill him for his Mysteries of Truth right before Zhang Ruochen became a supreme saint, so Zhang Ruochen was very merciless toward Thousand Star Maiden.

That woman had a huge family and a solid background with countless resources and valuable, which were enough to enrich himself.

“No...”

Zhang Ruochen immediately shook his head.

Both the man with a large beard and the blind guy were so powerful that it was unlikely for Zhang Ruochen to defeat them, not to mention Thousand Star Maiden’s own power.

If he tried to seize it by force, chances are he wouldn’t succeed and dragged himself into dangers.

Seeing the no-response from Zhang Ruochen for a long time, Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan sometimes smiled, sometimes frowned, and in the end, they both burst out laughing.

They gave each other a look and nodded as if they were thinking, “Seems like our big brother managed to sleep with Thousand Star Maiden!”

Feng Yan praised Zhang Ruochen while clicking his tongue, “No wonder you’re our big brother. It’s such a strategic victory for you to get Thousand Star Maiden.”

“Thousand Star Civilization is one of the top three ancient civilizations with a great foundation and a handful of Gods. Even Heavenly Palace respects it. As for Thousand Star Maiden, she is the best talent in this Yuanhui, not to mention that she’s an Origin Manipulator. She might become the heavenly empress of Thousand Star Civilization in the future.”

“The deities and leaders of the large fields in Heaven World and the deities from ancient civilizations, even the talents from Hell World, want to marry her to form an unbreakable bond with Thousand Star Civilization.”

And then, Feng Yan kept saying, “However, ‘Lin Yue’ has become a public enemy after the news spread that Lin Yue had sex with Thousand Star Maiden in a carriage. Even though Thousand Star Maiden denied it, the talents who’re pursuing Thousand Star Maiden are still furious. Many of them have said that they wanted to fight Lin Yue to death, including one of your old ‘friends’, Wang Xu, the new leader of Ruiya Field.”

“Fortunately, they only know Lin Yue instead of Zhang Ruochen, otherwise the whole Kongling Island will be in chaos.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “How did so many people figure out our relationship?”

“It doesn’t take a genius to figure out, to be honest.”

Feng Yan paused for a sec and said, “The monks from Heaven Field Sect have probably figured out that the space monk who massacred those monks with our third brother is you.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t care about it as he’d already had countless enemies. He didn’t mind having more.

As for marrying Thousand Star Maiden to gain support from Thousand Star Civilization, Zhang Ruochen had never thought about it. If he actually did that, he wouldn’t get anything in the end, instead, he’d be eaten by Thousand Star Maiden like a saint fruit.

Zhang Ruochen then looked at Feng Yan’s Crane Blue Sky Cape, and his eyes gleamed. He smiled and asked, “When have you become a godly disciple, second brother?”

“Just a godly disciple. If I can be one of the top ten godly disciples, that’ll be truly amazing.”

Suddenly, Feng Yan said, “I heard that a huge disaster might happen to Kunlun’s Field in the near future. What’s your plan, big brother?”

Xiang Chunan had obviously known something about Zhang Ruochen's history. He said, "Our big brother has already joined Guanghan Field, then he doesn't need to care about the stuff happening in Kunlun's Field. Do whatever that makes you happy and free and screw the rest."

Zhang Ruochen was in silence. The bond between him and Kunlun's Field was too strong. If a calamity was going to hit Kunlun's Field, there was no way he would just sit aside and watch.

The people from Sacred Central Empire who didn't want to get into Universe World knew that Kunlun's Field might retaliate against them if they stayed, yet they still chose to do so, only because the bond between them and their hometown.

The birthplace was always the most valuable to people.

At this moment, the ground shook following a rumbling noise. Suddenly, the defense formation on Kongling Island was all activated.

"What happened? Are the assassins from Heavenly Kill Organization coming again?"

Feng Yan looked glum, and he got angry.

Da! Da!

Following hurried footsteps, a maid walked in and said, "My lord, Thousand Star Maiden, her highness, is coming..."

"Get the hell out, Zhang Ruochen. I know you're here." Here came the voice of Thousand Star Maiden, and it got higher and higher.

"This is Kongling Island, Feng Xi's refining mansion, your highness."

"I don't give a damn whose refining mansion this is. If Zhang Ruochen doesn't come meet me now, I'll dismantle this entire freaking island."

And then, Thousand Star Maiden actually started to make attacks, wielding traces of lightning at the defense reticle of Kongling Island, shaking the entire island.

“How fast she is.” Zhang Ruochen exclaimed.

Feng Yan frowned and stared at Zhang Ruochen. He asked, “Big brother, did you enrage Thousand Star Maiden because you decided to dump her after sleeping with her?”

Xiang Chunan rubbed his forehead and said, “This is really tricky. Big brother has already had Lingxi, so he can’t marry that hostile woman Thousand Star Maiden. Can you get away using a space transportation formation?”

“No way. Thousand Star Maiden must’ve sealed the space already,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Xiang Chunan said, “Then what should we do? Do you want me to get rid of her myself? But... She’s your woman... How could I do that?”

“Do you want to find a place to hide first? I don’t think Thousand Star Maiden can break the defense formation of Kongling Island no matter how powerful she is,” said Feng Yan.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a long while, then he shook his head and said, “I’ll have to face it anyway. Now that he’s here, I’ll meet her.”

The defense formation was shut down.

Thousand Star Maiden who was wearing a veil rushed into the island, looking enraged.

The man with a giant beard and the blind guy were following her, and soon, they showed up in the pavilion.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen drinking in the pavilion, Thousand Star Maiden got angrier. She said, “Everyone who has nothing to do with this, leave.”

The maids and disciples in the yard all looked to Feng Yan.

Feng Yan waved his hand, and they all walked out of the yard.

Thousand Star Maiden walked into the pavilion and looked at Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan. She said coldly, “Can’t you understand what I said. Leave!”

Bang!

Xiang Chunan smashed the wine glass on the ground and glared at Thousand Star Maiden.

“What the hell are you looking at? I’m talking about you two. I want to talk with Zhang Ruochen privately, so I don’t want anyone else here. Tian Huang, Di Lao, get rid of them.”

Thousand Star Maiden was very overbearing. She looked at Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan as if they were nothing.

The giant-bearded man and the blind man suddenly showed up beside her, giving out unrivalled saint might.

Xiang Chunan wasn’t intimidated at all. He took out his golden demonic crown, preparing to fight Tian Huang and Di Lao.

Feng Yan immediately stopped Xiang Chunan and dragged him out of the pavilion. He said, “Don’t be mad. She’s our big brother’s woman. Why bother yourself with her? Let them solve their issues.”

Hearing the term ‘big brother’s woman’, Thousand Star Maiden’s mouth twitched as she kept grinding her teeth. She wanted to grab Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan back and teach them a lesson.

Zhang Ruochen was still drinking alcohol on the tone desk.

Thousand Star Maiden said calmly, “How shameless are you, Zhang Ruochen. What did you tell them two?”

“I didn’t say anything,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden suppress her anger. She sat right across from Zhang Ruochen and said, “Just tell me. Why didn’t you meet me right after God-Naming Platform Conference ended?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don’t you know that I came to refine in Truth Godly Palace?”

Thousand Star Maiden felt a bit awkward. She said, “Okay! I’ll let that slide. Give me the Holy Spring water!”

“Why should I?” said Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden said, “I asked you to help me get the Holy Spring Water, and I’ve given you saint fruits and saint pills to help you improve your cultivation. Are you going to break your promise?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “We did cooperate for some time, and I did receive saint fruits and saint pills from you, but I also helped you break the space wall. As for Holy Spring water, I got it with another person, which seems to have nothing to do with your, your highness.”

Thousand Star Maiden’s eyes glinted, but after some time, she smiled and said, “Don’t you want Saint Monk Xumi’s long whisker? Don’t you want to know the place where Saint Monk Xumi passed away?”

“Of course, I do, if you’re willing to tell me.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Thousand Star Maiden said, “You’re tripping. Give me the Holy Spring water first.”

Chapter 1714 - Negotiation

Chapter 1714: Negotiation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I don’t have the divine spring, but I have something else...”

Zhang Ruochen took out a piece of fabric. Holding it, he sniffed deeply and could still smell the fragrance.

It was the marriage letter that the Thousand Star Maiden had written with him.

Her phoenix eyes gleamed. Strands of origin power flowed between her fingers. “You dare to threaten me?”

Big Beard and Blindman moved, appearing on either side of Zhang Ruochen.

The three surrounded him.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t panic. He quickly took the Time and Space Secret Guide out and opened it.

Outside the yard, Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan sensed that something was wrong. They immediately activated the attack formation. The entire Kongling Island instantly started spinning.

Xiang Chunan jumped down from the wall. He took out the metal demonic crown and faint Absolute Saint Power burst out. All the Holy Qi in the air shook violently.

The Thousand Star Maiden’s slender brows creased. She sensed that it would be difficult to take Zhang Ruochen down forcefully. It would be dangerous. Thus, she waved and had Big Beard and Blindman retreat.

This was intimidation!

If they wanted to negotiate, then both sides had to be at the same level.

If Zhang Ruochen was still at his previous level and didn't have Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan's help, the Thousand Star Maiden would've attacked without fear. She would've stolen the divine spring and marriage letter instead of holding back like now.

She was still proud. Sticking up her snow-white chin, she said, "Give me a price. Sell me both the divine spring and marriage letter."

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "You can also give me a price and sell me Saint Monk Xumi's whisker."

"Can you afford it?" the Thousand Star Maiden asked.

"You didn't even give me a price," Zhang Ruochen said. "How do you know I can't afford it?"

"One hundred million saint stones," the Thousand Star Maiden said.

Zhang Ruochen was silent for a bit. "You really did give a high price. One drop of divine blood is only around ten saint stones. But you want to sell a whisker for the price of ten million drops of divine blood."

Even a ninth step Saint King who'd lived for more than 1,000 years might not be able to afford 100 million saint stones. This price was more than enough for buying a planet.

The Thousand Star Maiden laughed. "You were the one who told me to give a price. Is it my fault that you can't afford it?"

To her, both Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field were weak worlds that were about to be destroyed. One hundred million saint stones was definitely an exorbitant price that Zhang Ruochen couldn't afford.

"But your silver book is quite a time and space treasure," the Thousand Star Maiden said. "If you sell it to me, you might be able to gather 100 million saint stones. Or exchange it with divine spring."

"You would keep your promise, right?" Zhang Ruochen said.

The Thousand Star Maiden thought that Zhang Ruochen was prepared to exchange divine spring for the whisker, so she was happy. “I will become the empress of a civilization. I will definitely hold my promise.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He took out a storage bag and tossed it onto the stone table.

The Thousand Star Maiden hurriedly grabbed the storage bag and checked inside. Her smile quickly disappeared. Instead, her expression turned to one of shock.

It wasn't the divine spring.

It was 100 million saint stones.

This was an enormous fortune, but the Thousand Star Maiden didn't lack saint stones. She needed things that couldn't be bought with saint stones, such as the divine spring.

She clenched the storage bag tightly and said coldly, “I underestimated you. I didn't think you'd be so wealthy.”

After conquering the Yin and Yang Palace, Zhang Ruochen had gained 300 million saint stones. He'd basically hit a fortune overnight.

Using 100 million to buy Saint Monk Xumi's relic was obviously worth it.

Zhang Ruochen shrugged. “Can you give me the whisker now?”

The Thousand Star Maiden wasn't satisfied. She didn't want the 100 million saint stones.

“If I guessed correctly, the ancestors of the Thousand Star Civilization gave you the whisker because they hoped that you would give it to me, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “After all, it's completely without value to your civilization.”

The Thousand Star Maiden indeed didn't see anything important about the whisker. She just saw it as a relic.

No matter how strong a god was, how valuable could their whisker be?

But she was very smart. She could see that Zhang Ruochen cared deeply about it, so she didn't take it out. "Why should I give it to you? This is the only relic that Saint Monk Xumi has left behind. I don't know how many time and space cultivators want it. I don't think the price of 100 million saint stones is enough."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened. "Are you going back on your word? If that's the case, then I'll have to do the same."

The Thousand Star Maiden stared at the marriage letter in Zhang Ruochen's hands and clenched her jaw.

She would be under his control as long as he had that letter.

Next, Zhang Ruochen said, "If you give me the whisker, I can give you some pointers for cultivation too."

"Do I need your..."

Mid-sentence, the Thousand Star Maiden fell silent.

Because Zhang Ruochen's words had hit her sore spot. The worry deep within her came out.

The flaw in her mindset...

The Thousand Star Maiden had thought carefully about this. She had to admit that Zhang Ruochen was right. Her flaw in mindset was indeed very fatal and could end her path to becoming a god.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen's mindset was indestructible. He might really be able to help her make up for that flaw.

Because she discovered something that she couldn't accept.

There were some things that Zhang Ruochen could do but she couldn't.

For example, when collecting the divine spring, Zhang Ruochen could risk his life to be 400 meters away from the divine spring. This didn't only require skills. He also needed a strong heart that didn't panic and could move forward bravely.

She couldn't do it.

After a long silence, the Thousand Star Maiden finally said, “Tell me first. If you really can help me, then I’ll give you Saint Monk Xumi’s whisker and not even take your saint stones.”

Zhang Ruochen was very serious. His lips moved and he said some things to her telepathically.

At first, when she heard the words, her eyes grew cold and she didn’t believe him. Instead, she felt that Zhang Ruochen was using her.

But after listening to everything he said, she fell into deep thought again.

After a long while, she took out a glittering metal box and placed it on the table. “I can give you the whisker. But if you want to know where Saint Monk Xumi died, you must exchange for it with 100,000 drops from the divine spring or the marriage letter.”

Clearly, she thought that the place where Saint Monk Xumi had died was far more valuable than the whisker.

Zhang Ruochen opened the box. After confirming that it was the whisker, he was relieved. He quickly put the box away.

This whisker was priceless for him.

As for where Saint Monk Xumi had died, he didn’t need to get the information from the Thousand Star Maiden. If he could decode the Sundial, then it was likely that he could find it himself.

Because the Ice Fire Phoenix had once gone there.

The Thousand Star Maiden seemed to think of something and her eyes grew eerie. Chuckling, she said, “Zhang Ruochen, did you and Sister Luo Ji do some hidden things at the God-Naming Platform?”

“What’s wrong?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“For the past year, she’d been using many forces to find Lin Yue. She even came to ask me about Lin Yue’s identity and background. I’ve never seen her care so much about a man. It’s not normal.”

“You didn’t tell her my true identity, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Of course not.”

The Thousand Star Maiden was also worried that Fairy Tianchu could have things to hold over her.

The many civilizations of the Ancient Civilization Sect seemed like a union, but they competed with each other too. They weren’t fully united.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Thousand Star Maiden was paranoid. If he didn’t tell her things, she’d probably investigate by herself. Thus, he skirted the problem and said, “It’s not that big of a secret. We killed Wang Tian, leader of Ruiya Field, together, as well as King Yan and Queen Lian of Yin and Yang Field. She probably wants to kill me because of this secret.”

“I knew that it wasn’t normal. So, Wang Tian, King Yan, and Queen Lian died by your hands.” Getting answers, the Thousand Star Maiden laughed out loud. Her voice was as lovely as a bird in the valley.

This way, she knew one of Fairy Tianchu’s secrets and might be able to use it in the future.

Zhang Ruochen revealed this secret because Princess Luosha had escaped.

With her tactics, she would definitely find a suitable chance to spread the news and start a fight between the Tianchu Civilization, Ruiya Field, and Yin and Yang Field. It may even be a battle between the Heaven Field Sect and Ancient Civilization Sect.

Even if Wang Tian, King Yan and Queen Lian had died by Zhang Ruochen’s hand, Princess Luosha would probably make Fairy Tianchu the criminal too.

The Thousand Star Maiden led Big Beard and Blindman out of the pavilion.

As she was about to leave the yard, she suddenly stopped. “Zhang Ruochen, I will carefully think about that path you

pointed out. To be honest, you are very foxy. From now on, you will be my biggest competition. I will do my best to surpass you in all aspects.”

Seeing her leave, Zhang Ruochen’s lips curled up. “She’s smart,” he murmured to himself. “But the smarter one is, the more they think they’re smart when they’re not.”

He looked at the storage bag with 100 million saint stones on the table and his smile grew.

This was 100 million saint stones and she didn’t take it.

Just how proud was she inside?

Chapter 1715 - Inescapable Trap

Chapter 1715: Inescapable Trap

Feng Yan had crossed the fifth level of sea and Xiang Chunan had crossed the sixth level. They all earned a lot of time to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace, so they prepared to go in and continue in isolation.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen received information from Feng Yan that Hell World was mustering troops to conquer Kunlun's Field. If the Heaven and Earth Altar was broken through, it would immediately start a battle that could destroy the world.

Thus, he was in no mood to cultivate in isolation. He prepared to return to the Moon Goddess Dojo and see how things were. Then he would hurry to the Moon Goddess Mountain and meet with her.

He even planned on meeting Chi Yao personally. He had to get answers to his questions and guesses from her.

After these years of challenges, Zhang Ruochen was confident that even if he stood before Chi Yao, he wouldn't be crushed by her divine might.

Zhang Ruochen left Kongling Island alone. He used the spatial transfer formation and hurried toward the Moon Goddess Dojo in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

One year had passed. Was Mu Lingxi still cultivating in the Truth Heavenly Domain?

How were the Amazing Little Taoist and emperor saint jade after Blackie trained them? Had they conquered all of Guanghan Field's dojos?

Thinking of all this, Zhang Ruochen grew more impatient.

He had to go through many transfers from Kongling Island to reach the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Whoosh!

After the second transfer, he was already far from Kongling Island and the Truth Godly Palace. He'd arrived at a vast wilderness.

As soon as he poured in Holy Qi to activate the formation and start the next transfer, he realized, "Oh no, someone messed with the formation."

He sensed something amiss and his expression changed. He hurriedly used the Spatial Move and moved miles away.

Kaboom!

The spatial transfer formation under the ground exploded, releasing destructive power.

In an instant, the land within miles of the formation sank underground. A lot of thunder, fire, and spatial cracks interwove in that area, making it look like the end of the world.

Someone had set up a trap under the formation. If Zhang Ruochen put in Holy Qi, it would activate fatal force.

It wasn't easy to produce such destruction in the Heaven World.

If he stood in the center, he would've died even if he was a prepared ninth step Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen had already used the Spatial Move to escape to miles away, but he was still hit by a shockwave. He flew out and crashed into a mountain.

Someone set that up to kill me.

As soon as that thought flashed past his mind, horrible murderous intent traveled from the ground.

Everywhere it passed turned icy. The ground was sealed and turned into an ice gorge.

Whoosh!

Without giving him time to escape, a thick bolt of silver lightning fell from the sky, hitting his head.

He activated the Word Armor and Hundred Saint Blood Armor, but they were useless against the blow.

The Word Armor was shattered, turning into scattered words.

The Hundred Saint Blood Armor was penetrated. A hole appeared and part of the armor was melted into metallic liquid by the lightning.

The small mountain—hundreds of meters tall—disappeared instantly. It sank into the ground, turning into a canyon with plumes of smoke.

A moment later, four figures descended from the sky, landing beside the canyon. Each one wore a mask and radiated with strong murderous Qi.

They were four Killer Heavenly Kings from the Heavenly Assassination Organization. Each one was a top figure.

One black-clothed cultivator walked out slowly with a bamboo flute in his hands.

“Greetings, Second Death Emissary.”

The four Killer Heavenly Kings bowed to this black-clothed cultivator.

“Did Zhang Ruochen die?” the Second Death Emissary asked.

“Zhang Ruochen is highly alert,” one Killer Heavenly King said. “He dodged the fatal trap set up under the transfer formation, but Lord Liancheng’s Breaking Divine Thunder hit him squarely.”

The Second Death Emissary nodded. “Master’s Breaking Divine Thunder had accumulated for half a year for this one hit. Even Su Jing of Guanghan Field would die from this hit, let alone Zhang Ruochen.”

“We prepared fully to set up this fatal trap. How can Zhang Ruochen survive?”

But the Second Death Emissary wasn’t confident. “Zhang Ruochen isn’t a regular person. The higher figures take this

assassination very seriously. We can only succeed. We cannot fail. Go and check. It's best if you can find his corpse."

A short and thin Killer Heavenly King said, "Lord Liancheng's Breaking Divine Thunder is so powerful. How can Zhang Ruochen have left a corpse behind? His bones must have turned to ashes."

"Zhang Ruochen has some treasures that even the Breaking Divine Thunder can't destroy," the Second Death Emissary said. "Go and find them."

Just as the four Killer Heavenly Kings were about to jump into the canyon, shocking saintly might radiated from the bottom.

Zhang Ruochen flew out with the Time and Space Secret Guide in one hand, the Abyss Ancient Sword in the other. He stabbed the sword out, hitting one Killer Heavenly King.

That killer was a fifth step Saint King and definitely strong.

But even though he used all his tactics, he couldn't block Zhang Ruochen's sword. His heart was stabbed through, turning into fragments of flesh.

That Killer Heavenly King didn't die. Bearing the intense pain of his heart being shattered, his eyes under the mask hardened. He clenched his hands into claws and went for Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Poof!

The Carnivorous Holy Flower burst out of Zhang Ruochen's back. It transformed into sharp vines that stabbed at the Killer Heavenly King.

The killer's body started wilting and he let out a strangled cry.

The Second Death Emissary and other three Killer Heavenly Kings saw this. They all used their fastest speed to retreat, putting distance between them and Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen pulled his Abyss Ancient Sword back. The fifth step Saint King fell to the ground, turning into fertilizer for the Holy Carnivorous Flower.

“Extract his saint soul and preserve it. I have other uses for it,” Zhang Ruochen said to the flower.

Then he raised his head. The sky above him had turned blood red. The color stretched to the horizon as if it was an independent blood world.

“The Breaking Divine Thunder, Lifeless Blood Prison. Seems like you are from the Heavenly Assassination Organization. My head must be worth a lot of money, right?”

If Zhang Ruochen hadn't used the Time and Space Secret Guide in time, he probably really would've gotten killed by the Breaking Divine Thunder.

This was a one-time attack. The cultivator would spend countless days or even months to accumulate power and release it all at once. This one attack could kill cultivators even stronger than them.

This was a consummate skill from the Heavenly Assassination Organization!

The Second Death Emissary scoffed. “Zhang Ruochen, your head is indeed valuable. It's worth enough that those Supreme Saints hope they can kill you to get the generous sum.”

“I'm curious,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How did you find this transfer formation? Who set up the fatal trap under it? That trap contained spatial power. It is indeed difficult.”

The Second Death Emissary looked at Zhang Ruochen as if he was already dead. “Clearly, a powerful spatial figure calculated the coordinates of the transfer formation. He personally set up that fatal trap.”

“Spatial cultivators in the Truth Heavenly Domain who can calculate the coordinates of the formation can be counted on one hand,” Zhang Ruochen said. “That powerful figure must be Gong Ziyan, leader of the Space Divine Pavilion, right?”

The Second Death Emissary was about to say something, but he heard a forbidden order and closed his mouth.

While Zhang Ruochen talked to the Second Death Emissary, the three Killer Heavenly Kings had moved soundlessly. They

appeared in three different spots and released strong Holy Qi into the ground.

Whoosh!

Many pieces of saint jade flew out of the ground. They created a formation that surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

“Spatial Imprisonment Formation.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes hardened. “Gong Ziyan,” he said out loud. “You are quite brave. You dare to work with the Heavenly Assassination Organization in the Truth Heavenly Domain to kill someone. Aren’t you afraid of getting exposed and punished by the Truth Godly Palace?”

Gong Ziyan’s voice rang out from above the bloody sky. “Zhang Ruochen, you changed your appearance and murdered in the God-Naming Platform but could escape the punishment of the Truth Godly Palace. I can obviously do that too. Plus, do you think you can escape today? If you die, who else will know that I took part in this?”

As expected, the cultivators of the Heaven Field Sect already guessed that he was the mysterious spatial cultivator.

Other than Gong Ziyan, who else was hiding in the shadows? Had Shang Ziyan come?

Clearly, the Heaven Field Sect had prepared sufficiently. They’d set up an inescapable trap to get rid of him. It was possible that this was related to the changes that would happen to Kunlun’s Field.

The Heaven Field Sect wanted to get rid of Zhang Ruochen before Kunlun’s Field changed. Otherwise, he would return to Kunlun’s Field and be in their way.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t know how many people were hidden, so he was greatly worried. He didn’t dare to stay here for long. He picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword and attacked a Killer Heavenly King to break out of the trap.

“You can’t escape.”

The Second Death Emissary started playing the bamboo flute. Sound waves spread out with Spiritual Power.

There were whooshes instantly and many black dots flew from the horizon, surrounding Zhang Ruochen.

They were thousands of birds the size of eggs. They were covered in scales and their beaks were like swords.

These were Death God Bee-Birds.

Each one was terrifyingly fast. As if flying on swords, they made piercing sounds of wind.

Even the Holy Carnivorous Flower couldn't fight against the flock of Death God Bee-Birds. Its vines kept getting eaten. It only lasted for the span of ten breaths before escaping into Zhang Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen used Sword Way Xuangang to create a spherical shield of light, but it didn't hold up. The birds could eat the Sword Xuangang, thinning out the shield.

Zhang Ruochen's Sword Way Xuangang could only kill a dozen of the Death God Bird-Bees.

Chapter 1716 - Amber Ash

Chapter 1716: Amber Ash

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Just as the Xuangang light shield was about to shatter, Zhang Ruochen stabbed his Abyss Ancient Sword into the ground. The Fire God Armor on his arms sparked, forming two fire clouds.

It wasn't regular fire. It was blue-white Divine Fire Jingmie.

Caw, caw.

The Death God Bird-Bees feared the Divine Fire Jingmie and escaped into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen caught up and punched. A wave of flames flew out, killing a dozen birds instantly. Another mass of birds caught on fire and started burning.

The tides turned.

The three Killer Heavenly Kings running the Spatial Imprisonment Formation sensed that the ground was melting. Their expressions faltered.

That was Divine Fire Jingmie at the official flames level. It was the kryptonite for the Death God Bird-Bees.

He punched around 20 times and more than half of the birds were killed. They fell from the sky like a rain of fire.

The Second Death Emissary didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be so powerful either. He hurriedly controlled the birds to fly out of the Space Imprisonment Formation.

But just then, the Second Death Emissary sensed a blazing wave of heat coming for him. His eyes were covered by the

flames. A metal fist grew bigger and bigger. He couldn't dodge at all.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen's fist hit his body heavily.

The Second Death Emissary's chest caved in. His ribs all broke and his organs were crushed. A large amount of flesh flew out of his back and his body was all tattered. He fell hundreds of feet away.

However, he was a sixth step Saint King and a half-living, half-dead creature. Even with these great injuries, he still didn't die. He radiated with heavy murderous intent.

Zhang Ruochen was clear that a so-called Death Emissary was just a slave. Their minds had long been dead.

But this Death Emissary had a strong intent to kill.

His master was a truly powerful figure.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use spatial power to kill the Second Death Emissary.

If he could kill him entirely, then his master would be hurt as well.

But just as Zhang Ruochen activated spatial power, the Space Imprisonment Formation started spinning quickly. It was as if he was in quicksand. He couldn't move a shred of spatial power.

"Gong Ziyan does have some skills. No wonder he's a space manipulator."

Zhang Ruochen no longer used spatial power. He used extreme speed and rushed at the Second Death Emissary.

Just then, a pile of black stones rolled over. Some were only the size of one's fist. Others were as large as a palace. They stood before the Second Death Emissary, blocking Zhang Ruochen.

The black stones melded together into a stone giant more than 300 feet tall. It radiated with cold Qi.

“It’s the First Death Emissary.”

The three Killer Heavenly Kings were stunned.

Kaboom!

The stone giant punched. Its fist force turned into a cloud and thunder boomed in the sky.

Zhang Ruochen met its fist. It was like punching a metal mountain. His entire arm stung and he flew back, falling into the center of the Space Imprisonment Formation.

The stone giant aura was huge. Like a divine mountain looming in the world, it could intimidate all beings.

Zhang Ruochen loosened his arms and looked up at the stone giant, feeling disbelief. “He could actually turn a Saint King from the Stone Race to be a Death Emissary. Could it be a Killer Heavenly King from the Killer Heavenly King Rank who’s come to kill me today?”

The Stone Race was one of the top three races in Hell World.

The stone giant’s aura belonged to Hell World. It was deathly and carried bone-piercing power.

Not far from the Space Imprisonment Formation, a group of figures stood. Each one had a powerful aura.

Xun Ya, leader of the Divine Blood War Palace, scoffed.

“Baili, your First Death Emissary doesn’t seem to be much either! Zhang Ruochen is probably a fourth step Saint King, but he doesn’t seem hurt by that punch.”

Liancheng Baili was extremely handsome. He had four snow-white wings. Hands behind his back, he said, “My First Death Emissary is a lord of the Stone Race, a seventh step Saint King. If he goes all out, Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to stop him.”

“Then have him go all out,” Xun Ya said. “End things quickly. If it goes on for too long, we might alert those powerful godly disciples from the Truth Godly Palace.”

There was a beautiful figure beside Shang Ziyan. Her features were comparable to Fairy Tianchu and the Hundred Flower

Fairy. She was a top beauty among the thousands of worlds.

This woman was Lian Xi, the leader of Soul Field. She was also the Traceless Fairy, one of the beauties on the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll.

“Wait,” the Traceless Fairy said. “Zhang Ruochen has the supreme complete body constitution and the time and space print. He’s also the time and space controller. Killing him might be a loss.”

Xun Ya frowned. “Do you want to spare him?”

The Traceless Fairy shook her head and took out a soul bottle with a ghost face’s pattern. “Wouldn’t it be better if the time and space controller was our friend?”

“I’ve investigated Zhang Ruochen before,” Xun Ya said. “His spirit is very strong. He won’t kneel down before a god even if his legs are broken. I’m afraid that no one can make him surrender.”

“Then we’ll take his body.” The Traceless Fairy held the soul bottle. “One year ago, Ziyang asked me to find a strong saint soul and use it to take Zhang Ruochen’s physical body. This bottle contains the soul that I chose carefully—Amber Ash.”

“Amber Ash!”

Hearing this, Xun Ya and Gong Ziyang both cried out and their hearts sped up.

Even Liancheng Baili’s eyes narrowed. He clearly feared this name.

“Before, Amber Ash was number one on the Saint King Merits Rank,” the Traceless Fairy said. “He used his strong abilities and ninth step Saint King cultivation to heavily injure a Supreme Saint. That battle had stunned the cultivators of all the worlds. Many elders even thought that he was the strongest figure below the Supreme Saint Realm.

“Unfortunately, he met an even more terrible enemy on the merits battleground. It was Yan Wushen, the powerful hero of the Yanluo Race from Hell World.

“Yan Wushen was also a ninth step Saint King, but he killed Amber Ash, known as the strongest below the Supreme Saint Realm.

“Of course, Yan Wushen couldn’t kill him entirely. One of his saint souls escaped to Soul Field.”

“Yan Wushen must go to Kunlun’s Field this time, right?” Xun Ya asked, interested.

“Yan Wushen has been suppressing his cultivation,” Shang Ziyang said. “He doesn’t want to become a Supreme Saint. He plans on leading the Hell World army into Kunlun’s Field and finding the chance to become a god.”

Gong Ziyang sighed. “With Yan Wushen in this battle, Heaven World might be at a disadvantage again.”

“Not entirely,” the Traceless Fairy said. “If Shang Ziyang’s cultivation reaches the ninth step, you might be able to counter Yan Wushen. And if Amber Ash can steal Zhang Ruochen’s body and receive all of his abilities, then we might have a chance to battle Yan Wushen.”

The soul bottle started shaking.

A blue-green soul flew out of the bottle, hovering in the air. It radiated with shocking saintly might and was no different from a Supreme Saint descending.

It was Amber Ash’s saint soul.

“Lian Xi, didn’t you claim that you found a strong body for me and would help me steal his body to be reborn?” Amber Ash asked. “Where is that strong body?”

The Traceless Fairy pointed a slender finger at Zhang Ruochen. “That is a time and space controller. If you steal his body, you’ll be able to control time and space.”

The blue-green saint soul studied Zhang Ruochen, who was fighting with the First Death Emissary, and laughed. “Not bad, not bad. Indeed, a very strong body. If I swallow his saint soul and mind, stealing his body, I won’t have to worry about fighting Yan Wushen again.”

Xun Ya bowed. “Lord Amber Ash, Zhang Ruochen’s mind is very strong. It might not be so hard to swallow.”

“It’s better that he has a strong mind,” the soul shadow said. “If it wasn’t strong, I wouldn’t want it.”

Xun Ya nodded, thinking that it made sense. What kind of person was Amber Ash? He was able to seriously injure a Supreme Saint. How could that Zhang Ruochen compare to his spirit?

The people present were all terrible figures that could move the thousands of worlds. But they were just youngsters compared to Amber Ash. Only the top ten godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace could count as the same generation as him.

Within the Space Imprisonment Formation, Zhang Ruochen exchanged a dozen blows with the First Death Emissary. The ground was shattered.

“Incredible,” Gong Ziyan said. “Zhang Ruochen can actually match the First Death Emissary. Is he really a fourth step Saint King?”

He wasn’t the only one. Everyone present was shocked.

“Zhang Ruochen used the Rules of Truth,” Shang Ziyan said. “The First Death Emissary hasn’t cultivated the Way of Truth before. Plus, Zhang Ruochen actually cultivated more than 20,000 Rules of Truth and can unleash six times the power. He reached this high point in one short year. It’s worth looking into.”

“Mysteries of Truth?” Xun Ya asked.

“It’s possible,” Shang Ziyan said thoughtfully.

“Good. Very good. If he really does have Mysteries of Truth, he’ll be even more perfect.”

The blue-green soul laughed. Then it transformed into an eerie wind and flew out to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was using all his might, but he barely managed to be at the same level as the First Death Emissary. His heart sank. It’s only a Death Emissary, but it’s no weaker

than King Yan. Just how strong is its master? Run. I must run. This time, the Heaven Field Sect came to crush me and didn't leave me any chance for survival. The only thing they overlooked is probably the Time and Space Secret Guide.

With the help of the guide, Zhang Ruochen could easily activate spatial power. Even the Space Imprisonment Formation couldn't stop him.

Before, he just didn't want to expose the Time and Space Secret Guide.

Chapter 1717 - Suppression by a World

Chapter 1717: Suppression by a World

Zhang Ruochen held the Time and Space Secret Guide tightly and poured Holy Qi into it. Bright silver light was released.

Holding the book, he swiped in the air.

Whoosh!

Powerful spatial waves poured out of the Time and Space Secret Guide. It tore a spatial crack that was many meters long. It flew from Zhang Ruochen's feet to a Killer Heavenly King.

The man was caught by surprise and swallowed by the spatial crack. His body exploded into bloody mist and disappeared in the void.

This spatial crack tore apart the Space Imprisonment Formation too. The lock was instantly undone. Zhang Ruochen continued using the Time and Space Secret Guide to perform a Spatial Move. He flashed and arrived a dozen miles away.

In the Heaven World, he could only use the Time and Space Secret Guide to move such a distance at once.

"How is this possible? How can he tear the space inside the Space Imprisonment Formation?" Gong Ziyan found it unbelievable. His eyes almost fell out of the sockets.

Zhang Ruochen prepared to use the Spatial Move again, but horrible saintly might fell from the sky. It even immobilized his Holy Qi a little.

Saintly might pressed over from all sides. His limbs seemed to be tied with metal rope and he couldn't move at all.

The feeling was extremely uncomfortable. It was like getting stared at by King Zhongying from the Immortal Vampires

when all of his veins, meridians and Saintly Meridians exploded.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was much stronger now. He instantly broke free from the saintly might.

Amber Ash's saint soul appeared, hovering above Zhang Ruochen. Watching him run forward, he made a soft noise of disbelief.

He couldn't restrain this person with his saintly might?

Zhang Ruochen already saw Amber Ash's saint soul and was very shocked. "Is that the soul projection of a Hell Ghost Race or Supreme Saint?"

The soul caught up. It was as fast as light and extended a hand to press down on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen felt the sky darken. It was like a five-fingered mountain was pressing down. His organs were about to get squeezed out of his body and his scalp was about to crack.

It was too late to use the Spatial Move now. Zhang Ruochen had to activate the Time and Space Secret Guide.

Whoosh!

Screens of silver light formed, cutting the world into a multidimensional space.

Kaboom!

The amber hand crashed with the space, producing an earsplitting sound. The ground quaked.

He blocked it!

Taking a breath, Zhang Ruochen activated the Time and Space Secret Guide and fought back.

"Spatial Windstorm."

He used the book as a fan and fanned up.

Dense spatial cracks appeared. They flew out as a windstorm, shattering the amber hand and even flew toward Amber Ash's soul.

"What treasure is this? So powerful."

Amber Ash had never thought that a fourth step Saint King—insignificant like an ant—could be so powerful. Faced with the Spatial Windstorm, even he had to retreat and couldn't face it head-on.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stay to fight. He immediately activated the Time and Space Secret Guide to escape with the Great Spatial Move.

“You can't escape!” Gong Ziyan's voice rang out.

He sent out a translucent horn. It seemed to be made out of crystal. Dense spatial runes interwove inside the horn.

This was the Chaotic Crystal Horn, a spatial treasure.

Space trembled violently wherever it passed as if the world was upended. He wanted to use this to restrict Zhang Ruochen and stop him from using the Great Spatial Move.

But he underestimated the Time and Space Secret Guide.

As Zhang Ruochen released the book's power, the entire space calmed gradually. Even the Chaotic Crystal Horn was about to be stopped.

“What exactly is that silver book he has?” Gong Ziyan didn't believe that he couldn't stop Zhang Ruochen with his cultivation and knowledge of space.

The Traceless Fairy took out a bloody bead and held it in her hand. “Shake,” she whispered.

Strong Spiritual Power flew out of the bead and hit Zhang Ruochen.

Kaboom!

He felt lightning crack inside his mind. His entire head was about to explode. His vision went black and his Holy Qi went wild as if his soul would scatter.

“Spiritual Power...attack...”

The Time and Space Secret Guide fell to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen clutched his head, working to stay upright.

Attacked by three strong figures working together, he finally couldn't keep going. The Traceless Fairy's Spiritual Power attack was completely unexpected. All of Zhang Ruochen's meridians protruded. He was in extreme pain.

Amber Ash's saint soul took this chance to break into Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

Coming to his Sea of Qi, Amber Ash saw the four saint sources and rolling Heaven Pass River and was very excited. "He split his soul into four. This is very advanced. His rules have even turned into a river. This way, this body's potential is limitless and unrestricted. Good, very good."

Amber Ash's saint soul flew above the Heaven Pass River and started refining the souls in the four saintly sources.

However, he didn't know that Zhang Ruochen's soul was actually split into six. The other two were inside the Time and Space Saint Looks. He couldn't see them at all.

Zhang Ruochen's spirit was very strong and quickly recovered a bit.

However, the Traceless Fairy's Spiritual Power attack kept coming. He had to use all his might to fend her off. He couldn't use other Spiritual Power to stop Amber Ash in his Sea of Qi.

They want to steal my body. Whose saint soul is that in my Sea of Qi? The aura is so strong. Could it really be a Supreme Saint without a body?

Zhang Ruochen was panicking. He realized how dangerous today was. He really might die.

The Spiritual Power attacks coming from the outside world were like bolts of thunder. As soon as Zhang Ruochen recovered a little and gathered some Spiritual Power, the thunder would scatter.

The other wanted to use this to suppress Zhang Ruochen's spirit and make it easier for Amber Ash to steal his body.

It was very vicious.

Someone with a weaker spirit might lose consciousness at the first Spiritual Power attack and fall to the ground.

But Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth and forced himself to stay awake.

Once he lost consciousness, he would really be done for!

Boom!

Boom!

...

With every attack, the pain intensified.

After five Spiritual Power attacks in a row, the Traceless Fairy discovered with a shock that Zhang Ruochen still hadn't fallen. He was still standing and trying to fight back.

How is this possible? Even a ninth step Saint King will fall after five Spiritual Power attacks!

The Traceless Fairy continued attacking.

Sixth time.

Seventh time.

...

...

At the tenth attack, Zhang Ruochen's long hair fell loose and he let out screams.

Shang Ziyang frowned deeply. "His Spiritual Power has been scattered ten times. Even a Supreme Saint shouldn't be able to withstand this intensity, right?"

"Amber Ash has a problem," the Traceless Fairy said. "Zhang Ruochen's saint soul is fighting back intensely and it's difficult to steal the body. Seems like we have to destroy Zhang Ruochen's mind and make him lose consciousness."

Eleventh time.

Twelfth time.

...

Just as Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was scattered for the 27th time, he actually reached a higher level. His Spiritual Power reached level 57.

He quickly gathered it and recovered some of his consciousness. Zhang Ruochen immediately took out a white scroll and hit it toward the Traceless Fairy.

That white scroll was made out of saint jade and was as thin as paper.

Before, the Thousand Star Maiden had used this as her trump card to break free of the Time and Space Secret Guide, but Zhang Ruochen had stolen it before she could use it.

If it was the Thousand Star Maiden's treasure, then it definitely was extraordinary.

As expected, when it flew out, the Traceless Fairy and the others' expressions all faltered. They retreated as quickly as possible.

"The Thousand Star Civilization's Planet Destruction Saint Rune! How can Zhang Ruochen have something of that level?" Xun Ya's face was pale.

The so-called Planet Destruction Saint Rune could destroy a planet once activated.

They all cast their strongest defensive tactics.

A five-colored merits stele appeared in Shang Ziyang's hand.

The five-colored merits stele was formed by collecting the merits of millions of beings. It transformed into a five-colored mountain and hit the Planet Destruction Saint Rune.

Kaboom!

The rune exploded and millions of light beams flew out.

They flew into all directions. Each beam was able to penetrate the earth and sky. Even though the five-colored merits stele blocked most of its force, Shang Ziyang and the others' defenses kept getting penetrated. Seventeen Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons were destroyed.

Poof!

A beam of light flew past Shang Ziyan's neck and left a bloody mark.

Poof, poof.

Three beams of light hit Xun Ya at the same time, leaving three cup-sized holes.

The others didn't dodge the Planet Destruction Saint Rune either and were all injured here and there. However, they were far enough away and weren't badly injured.

Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move and was miles away already. He also had the protection of the Time and Space Secret Guide, so the rune couldn't hurt him.

Pain traveled from his mind again.

Amber Ash's saint soul was still refining the four saint souls and it was torture for Zhang Ruochen.

"If you want to steal my body, you must pay for it."

The two souls in the Time and Space Saintly Looks weren't restricted. Thus, Zhang Ruochen used those to attack Amber Ash.

Amber Ash was sitting above the Heaven Pass River and felt surprised. "He has two more saint souls. This is incredible. Unfortunately, your saint souls are too weak compared to me. You can't do much."

"Really?" Zhang Ruochen said in a deep voice.

The Sea of Qi started shaking furiously.

An extremely majestic world appeared out of nowhere. It was like a land hovering in the universe and was now above Amber Ash's head.

It was the Universe World.

The world was sealed, so the beings couldn't enter the Heaven World. Zhang Ruochen also couldn't enter, but it was still inside his Sea of Qi.

"Your body...actually has a world in it..."

Even though Amber Ash was well-educated, he was still extremely shocked by this.

Zhang Ruochen was furious. “You said I can’t do much. Now, I will use a world to repress you. What can you do?”

The Universe World pressed down on Amber Ash.

Even though he was a saint soul, he still couldn’t escape. The world’s “force” suppressed him.

Chapter 1718 - Cihang and Zhen Yuan

Chapter 1718: Cihang and Zhen Yuan

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Worlds like the Kunlun's Field that survived through the millenniums could form a "force" that could restrain a god. It could press over the god so that he couldn't move.

The Universe World was far weaker than the Kunlun's Field, but it was more than enough to restrain a ninth step Saint King's soul.

Under the Universe World, Amber Ash's soul was about to get crushed to bits.

"Who...are you... Why do you have...a world inside of you..." Amber Ash's voice came from under the Universe World. He sounded very indignant.

One of Zhang Ruochen's souls appeared in the Sea of Qi. "You don't even know who I am and you came to steal my body. I don't know if you're stupid or too confident in your own abilities."

Amber Ash was furious. Before, no one would ever dare to speak to him like this.

If he was at his peak, a mere fourth step Saint King would be a minor figure that he wouldn't even glance at.

Zhang Ruochen flooded Divine Fire Jingmie at Amber Ash. He stopped caring about Amber Ash's voice and prepared to try his best to escape from this place.

The ground before him was shattered by the Planet Destruction Saint Rune. It was like the end of the world.

However, Shang Ziyan's group had clearly brought a great treasure here to seal off the land. The Planet Destruction Saint Rune only destroyed a few dozen miles. The land further away was unharmed.

The Thousand Star Maiden really is filled with treasures. Any random scroll could be so destructive. If I used it more logically, I might've been able to severely injure Gong Ziyan and the others or even kill them. Zhang Ruochen felt regret.

A mysterious beam of power exploded from all over.

In the east, a beautiful woman radiating Yin Qi stood at the horizon with a red bead in her hand. The bead's light was like a rising sun. It was red and released strong Spiritual Power pulses.

In the south, Shang Ziyan held the five-colored merits stele the size of a mountain. He walked over like a god in the mortal world.

In the west, Xun Ya, leader of the Divine Blood War Palace, held a heavy sword. Sword Qi flew around him in the air.

In the north, a handsome man with four white wings stood quietly with a First and Second Death Emissary. The murderous Qi radiating from him formed a blood-red cloud.

The power coming from all four directions grew stronger. Each one was able to upend the world and Zhang Ruochen couldn't fight them now. In addition, the sky and land were sealed by strong spatial power. Clearly, Gong Ziyan was working in the shadows.

Zhang Ruochen's wasn't intimidated by this. "Shang Ziyan," he said calmly. "This time, you finally decided to fight personally! How come you invited so many strong figures here? Are you so unconfident in yourself? You don't think you can defeat me by yourself?"

Shang Ziyan chuckled. "To be honest, you're the only person that I'm quite impressed by. You could survive until now with

your own strength and without any support. If I was in your position, I probably would've died long ago.”

Shang Ziyan had a big background in the Heaven Field and was the leader of the Merits Godly Palace. There were many cultivators who wished to be his friend. He had more connections and powers than Supreme Saints from weaker worlds.

But very, very few people dared to befriend Zhang Ruochen and help him.

“With my abilities, there’s a 90% chance that I can kill you by myself,” Shang Ziyan. “But this time, I want to be 100% sure, so I invited some friends here.”

“There’s nothing 100% certain in the world.”

Zhang Ruochen thought about how to escape while talking to Shang Ziyan.

The Traceless Fairy sent a message to Shang Ziyan. “I lost connection to Amber Ash. He may have been suppressed by Zhang Ruochen.”

“How is that possible?” Shang Ziyan’s expression turned serious.

Could Zhang Ruochen have more trump cards?

What kind of card could suppress Amber Ash’s saint soul? This was impossible!

“Be careful,” the Traceless Fairy said. “Zhang Ruochen is more troublesome than we thought.”

Actually, they didn’t know that Zhang Ruochen was feeling hopeless now. He even thought that he might die here today. However, his battle intent didn’t disappear. Even if he died, he would make them follow him.

The Traceless Fairy pointed at the red bead. Ghostly fog seeped out, making the east of Zhang Ruochen completely dark. It was like mist was surging.

Hundreds of soul projections floated in the mist. There were humans, dragons, birds, elephants... Each soul image was

extremely powerful and vicious.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff. The Buddha's sharira at the top of the staff shone with golden light, purifying the incoming Ghost Qi.

But what unsettled him was that the hundreds of souls weren't afraid of the sharira at all. It was evident that they'd all been very powerful in life.

This woman must be the Traceless Fairy, leader of the Soul Field. I can't take on her even when she's by herself. Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows tightly. He prepared to burn his blood to fight to the death.

Just then, a brighter Buddhist light came from the east side.

Sanskrit chanting arose. The sound was boundless as if thousands of monks were chanting.

The Traceless Fairy, Shang Ziyan, Xun Ya and Liancheng Baili's eyes all hardened. They looked eastward at the same time.

"She's here. The Buddhists are finally getting involved." The Traceless Fairy's brows furrowed lightly.

All along, the Traceless Fairy only had one competitor.

She'd met this competitor one year ago on the way to the Truth Heavenly Domain. She was held up and couldn't hurry over, thus allowing Zhang Ruochen to reach such a troublesome level.

Later, she and Shang Ziyan had analyzed this. They thought that the other had purposely stopped her so Zhang Ruochen would have time to improve.

After all, Saint Monk Xumi had helped the Buddha Way before and they had a deep relationship.

A pretty girl in Buddhist clothing and holding a jade bottle walked out of the horizon, stepping on layers of Buddhist light.

She seemed to be around 17 or 18 years old and had a red dot on her forehead. She was just as pretty as the Traceless Fairy,

but she gave off a sacred and pure feeling.

“It really is her, Fairy Cihang,” the Traceless Fairy said.

Fairy Cihang was also part of the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll. Her Buddhist techniques were incredible and could always restrict the Traceless Fairy. She was the Traceless Fairy’s top enemy.

Fairy Cihang picked up a willow branch from the bottle and waved it in the air.

Specks of golden water flew out. They transformed into hundreds of Buddhist shadows. They flooded into the ghostly mist and purified all of the hundreds of evil souls.

The Traceless Fairy’s eyes grew cold. Cold Qi turned the ground under her feet into ice.

“Amitabha!”

Fairy Cihang’s eyes were as deep as pools of water. Her voice was lovely and gave off a serene feeling. “You’re killing in the Truth Heavenly Domain. Are you not afraid of being punished?”

Shang Ziyan’s expression was grave. Fairy Cihang’s appearance caught him by surprise.

Since Fairy Cihang could find this place and break in, then could she have already notified the godly disciples of the Truth Heavenly Palace? If they really came, then the consequences would be unimaginable.

However, Shang Ziyan didn’t want to miss the best chance to kill Zhang Ruochen, so he was conflicted.

Suddenly, a voice sounded in the air. “Limitless Sovereign.”

A beam of white light tore apart the red sky.

Then a young man in Taoist robes descended from the sky. A huge Bagua print appeared automatically under his feet. The ground’s structure seemed to have changed after he arrived.

“Zhen Yuan.” Shang Ziyan’s eyes narrowed.

Holding a whisk, Zhen Yuan smiled. “Brother Ziyan, you have crossed the line. Do you really think that the Truth Heavenly Domain won’t get involved?”

Zhang Ruochen had a confused expression. He watched Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang quietly. Why did these two powerful figures from the Taoism and Buddha Way come?

Are they here to save me? But I don’t seem to have anything to do with the Taoism and Buddha Way. I don’t know them either. Zhang Ruochen didn’t act impatiently. He continued to watch.

The forces of the Heaven World seemed to have more complicated relationships than he’d thought.

When Zhen Yuan arrived, Shang Ziyan realized that today wouldn’t be successful. Thus, he sent messages to the Traceless Fairy, Xun Ya, Liancheng Baili, and Gong Ziyan to retreat immediately.

But just as they prepared to leave, another powerful beam of saintly might broke apart the red sky.

Feng Xi appeared in the sky. “You broke the rules of the Truth Heavenly Domain and you want to leave just like this?” she said loudly. “All of you come to the Truth Godly Palace with me and await your trial.”

Liancheng Baili scoffed coldly. “There are so many people who aren’t afraid of dying. Do you really think being a godly disciple makes you almighty? Even a god will die if they offend the Heavenly Assassination Organization. What are you all waiting for? Let’s attack together and kill our way out.”

He unsheathed his sword. Sword Xuangang transformed into a beam of light and shot into the heavens.

Bounding saintly might burst out. With an undefeatable aura, he charged at Feng Xi, preparing to kill the godly disciple and then escape.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. So powerful. No wonder he’s the master of the First and Second Death Emissary. Judging by how strong the Killer Heavenly Kings are, it’s probably hard for him to find a match below the Supreme Saint Realm.

Zhang Ruochen grew worried for Feng Xi. He couldn't help in a battle like this at all.

Feng Xi didn't attack or even manipulate her Holy Qi. She just shook her head.

While Liancheng Baili was confused, a huge handprint moved past the bloody sky and fell upon him. It crushed him to the ground like slapping a fly.

Kaboom!

A handprint ditch that was hundreds of meters long appeared on the ground.

Liancheng Baili was sprawled on the bottom, his body completely bloody. He couldn't stand up.

Chapter 1719 - Eight-Dragon Umbrella

Chapter 1719: Eight-Dragon Umbrella

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Feng Xi's appearance made Shang Ziyan, the Traceless Fairy, Gong Ziyan and the others grow solemn. They knew that they couldn't go to the Truth Godly Palace with her. Otherwise, even though they had impressive backgrounds, they would probably still be punished severely.

If they escaped, Feng Xi wouldn't have evidence and wouldn't be able to do anything.

But when they saw how one palm print severely injured Liancheng Baili and disabled him, their hearts fell.

This terrible power must be from a top ten godly disciple.

Nie Xiangzi, one of the top ten godly disciples, appeared out of thin air beside Feng Xi. Shaking his palm, he said nonchalantly, "If you don't want to die, follow me."

It was Nie Xiangzi, the one who could grab a planet with his hand and had an indifferent personality.

After seeing Nie Xiangzi and Feng Xi, Zhang Ruochen was relieved.

Shang Ziyan's group were strong, but they were still too young. There was a huge distance between them and Nie Xiangzi who was infinitely close to becoming a Supreme Saint.

The Traceless Fairy, Shang Ziyan and Xun Ya all looked toward Shang Ziyan.

They were clear that Shang Ziyan was detailed and careful in everything he did. He must have a way out. As expected, Shang Ziyan was still calm at the moment.

Zhang Ruochen was observing Shang Ziyan, his opponent, too and nodded. He did feel impressed by this man. He could remain calm in a situation like this and it was incredible.

Shang Ziyan took out a bottle and tricolored fog floated out.

White, black, and red fog quickly filled the sky. The entire world became strangely psychedelic. The sky was red, the ground was black, and between that were strands of white light.

Black vines sprouted on the ground. They waved like dragon tails.

Shang Ziyan's group actually vanished.

“It's Tricolored Hallucination Fog.”

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly opened his Heavenly Eyes.

After reaching level 57 for Spiritual Power, Zhang Ruochen's Heavenly Eyes had stronger power. He could even see through the Tricolored Hallucination Fog.

Shang Ziyan's group was indeed using techniques to escape in all directions.

However, Nie Xiangzi, Feng Xi, Zhen Yuan, and Fairy Cihang weren't average people. The mere Tricolored Hallucination Fog couldn't fool them. They split up to chase after them.

Nie Xiangzi was as fast as lightning. He caught up to Shang Ziyan instantly. He struck with a handprint and, with Shang Ziyan as the center, space for hundreds of meters solidified. Even the Rules of Saintly Way went still.

Shang Ziyan carried Liancheng Baili with one hand. He struggled twice but to no avail. He sighed. “So powerful. The Star-Grabbing Hand can be so powerful in Senior Brother Nie's hands.”

“Come with me and accept the Truth Godly Palace's judgment,” Nie Xiangzi said.

Shang Ziyan shook his head. “That’s impossible. If I go with you, the best result would be getting expelled from the Truth Heavenly Domain and never being able to cultivate here again.”

Nie Xiangzi stopped speaking. He clenched his hand and five Holy Qi pillars as thick as mountaintops appeared. They wrapped around Shang Ziyan, closing in.

Shang Ziyan withstood the huge pressure. He operated Holy Qi at full might to fend them off.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a blinding beam of light flew over from the distance. It was like a god dancing with a white ribbon and actually shattered the five beams of Holy Qi.

A ball of white light descended, arriving above Nie Xiangzi instantly.

There was a person in the light.

When Shang Ziyan saw that person, his eyes grew more relaxed. Then he took Liancheng Baili and escaped, disappearing in the horizon.

Nie Xiangzi exchanged a blow with the person in the white light. The ground caved in and spread into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation was still too low. He didn’t know what happened. He just saw the white light and couldn’t open his eyes again.

Feeling the strong force surge over, he used the Time and Space Secret Guide to perform the Great Spatial Move.

Such strong power. Is that really a battle between Saint Kings?

Zhang Ruochen executed the Great Spatial Move seven times and escaped hundreds of miles away, but he was still hit by the force. Thankfully, the Time and Space Secret Guide protected him, so he was only sent flying out.

As a fourth step Saint King, he probably would’ve been turned to ashes without the book.

This was why Zhang Ruochen suspected it was two Supreme Saints fighting. The shockwaves could easily kill a Saint King.

An hour later, the battle finally ended and the world calmed gradually.

Zhang Ruochen saw Feng Xi.

He went over and bowed. “Greetings, Senior Sister Feng Xi. Thank you for helping me.”

Zhang Ruochen had no relationship with Zhen Yuan, Fairy Cihang or Nie Xiangzi. Naturally, he thought that Feng Xi had received the news and asked the other cultivators to come save him.

Only Feng Xi was able to ask them for help.

Feng Xi nodded. Staring deeply into Zhang Ruochen, she said, “You’re pretty amazing! You were surrounded by Shang Ziyan’s group, but you could survive until we arrived. This was quite unexpected.”

“I just forced myself to keep going,” Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. “If you’d come a moment later, I would probably have turned into a pile of bloody ash now.”

Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang transformed into two beams of light. They flew from the distance and landed beside Feng Xi. They shook their heads.

Zhang Ruochen understood. Shang Ziyan, Gong Ziyan, and the Traceless Fairy had probably escaped.

It couldn’t be helped. They were all extraordinary. Perhaps many elders below the Supreme Saint Realm could defeat them, but only a Supreme Saint could capture or kill them.

“Let me introduce you to two cultivators who are connected to you—Zhen Yuan, leader of the Taoist Five Elements Temple, and Fairy Cihang, leader of the Western Buddhist Field.

“Limitless Sovereign!”

“Amitabha!”

Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang both smiled and studied Zhang Ruochen.

He was very surprised and confused. How was he connected to the leaders of the Taoism and Buddha Ways?

Before Zhang Ruochen could ask, Nie Xiangzi flew over.

“Senior Brother, how is it?” Feng Xi asked hurriedly.

Nie Xiangzi’s brows were knitted. “A strong figure who’s at my level attacked and helped them escape. He must be one of the top ten godly disciples. I’ve already guessed who it is.”

Feng Xi huffed. “They think they can escape punishment? With us as witnesses, we can definitely put them to trial. I will report it now and ask the Saint Pavilion to personally arrest them.”

“I’m afraid it’s not so easy,” Nie Xiangzi said. “The Heaven Sect Field has a strong presence in the Truth Godly Palace. We don’t have concrete proof and can’t take them down with just our words.”

“Senior Brother Nie is correct,” Zhang Ruochen. “Actually, the true reason why Shang Ziyan used the Tricolored Hallucination Fog wasn’t to escape but to get rid of evidence. Even if we report it and the elders capture them, they can say that someone used a hallucination to blind us and we’re just blaming them.”

Nie Xiangzi was impressed. “You could think of this aspect. No wonder you could live until now.”

Then he continued, “This assassination wasn’t successful. They won’t act rashly for the coming period. I’ll return first and meet the person who’d fought with me. Junior Sister Feng Xi, this is all yours now!”

After Nie Xiangzi left, Zhang Ruochen asked his question. “Senior Brother Zhen Yuan, Senior Sister Cihang, what are the connections that Senior Sister Feng mentioned?”

With his hands behind his back, Zhen Yuan said, “Our connection is actually the connection between the Five Elements Temple and Kunlun’s Field. The Five Elements Temple, the sacred land of the Taoism Way, was established by a few ancient Taoists of the Kunlun’s Field and Pangu Field.

Even though we've lost connection for 100,000 years, the heritage of the Kunlun's Field hasn't ended."

"I see," Zhang Ruochen realized.

"Actually, I've been watching you for a long time," Zhen Yuan continued. "I didn't meet you because I wanted to see if you qualify to be supported by the Five Elements Temple. You should know, the Heaven Field Sect is very strong. Once we decide to support you, the Temple will have to pay greatly."

Zhang Ruochen understood, so he asked, "Then, do I qualify now?"

"There's hope but not enough," Zhen Yuan said straightforwardly. "I appeared today because you have hope. Of course, we can't supply great help before you qualify completely. Everything depends on yourself. Actually, I do wish the Kunlun's Field can be revived, because one of my ancestors was once from the Kunlun's Field, but..."

Zhen Yuan didn't continue. He seemed to think that it wasn't possible. The Kunlun's Field had fallen completely. Even if the Heaven Field Sect and Hell World didn't attack, it would still be extremely difficult to rise again.

Fairy Cihang took out an umbrella and gave it to Zhang Ruochen. "Centuries ago, an emperor from the Kunlun's Field crossed the vast universe to the Western Buddhist Field. He shaved his head and became a monk. Now, that emperor has become a Buddha. Before coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, he had me give this umbrella to you."

Seeing it, Zhang Ruochen was completely frozen as if he was fossilized, but his heart pounded like thunder.

It was the...Eight-dragon Umbrella.

The Eight-dragon Umbrella, Nine-dragon Carriage, Ten-dragon Sword, Hundred-dragon Royal Ming Armor were all items that Emperor Ming had kept with him. They were also the royal weapons passed down the generations of the Sacred Central Empire's royal Zhang Family.

Chapter 1720 - : A Big Issue

Chapter 1720: A Big Issue

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen who was always calm and refined was shaking at this moment. His eyes gradually turned red, and he felt that he heard a blast right next to his ears, echoing.

After God knew how long, Zhang Ruochen slowly raised his arm, taking the Eight Dragon Umbrella with dragon inscriptions on and said with a dry mouth, “He... Why doesn’t he come see me himself? Why... Why doesn’t...”

Fairy Cihang said, “He asked me to tell you that it’s not time for you two to meet yet.”

Zhang Ruochen looked sorrowful. He yelled, “Why not? I’m going to Western Buddhist Field now. I have to go! I must ask him myself why he’s abandoned me for so long! Why isn’t he coming to see me if he knows I’m alive? Take me there! I want to see him now!”

“You won’t be able to find him anywhere in Western Buddhist Field if he doesn’t want to meet you.”

Fairy Cihang started to mumble ‘Mind-Clearing Scripture’ seeing how emotional Zhang Ruochen was.

Suddenly, the emotional trauma Zhang Ruochen was enduring and the mind trauma from Traceless Fairy’s mind power attack were both gone. He felt a fresh spring flowing inside his body, which made him incredibly comfortable.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen calmed himself down and cupped his hands toward Traceless Fairy, “Thank you.”

Traceless fairy stopped and said, “You can only gain real intelligence after letting go of everything that concerns you.”

“Everything that concerns me? Not even Buddha can do that.” Zhang Ruochen forced a smile and shook his head. “When will he meet me?”

“He said he’s not going to meet you until there’s a new emperor in Sacred Central Empire and the Universe World is settled,” said Traceless Fairy.

“New emperor in Sacred Central Empire and Universe World is settled.”

Zhang Ruochen forced a bitter smile, “He does know about Universe Spiritual Map and Universe World. He’s so ruthless, to himself and his only son. Okay. I’ll definitely rebuild Sacred Central Empire and turn Universe World into a large field, breeding a civilization that belongs to me.”

‘New emperor in Sacred Central Empire’ didn’t mean Zhang Ruochen could call himself an emperor after rebuilding Sacred Central Empire.

Instead, he needed to become a supreme saint to call himself an emperor.

After saying goodbye to Feng Xi and Fairy Cihang, Zhang Ruochen headed straight to Heavenly Capital Saint Market. He mind was still in a mess as he pondered why Emperor Ming refused to meet him. Why did he have to wait until there was a new emperor and Universe World was settled?

Why did he go missing before? Was it because he ran into something tragic? Or because he’d already had plan to head to Western Buddhist Field?

Thoughts were flooding Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

“Whatever. I’d better refine with more efforts. He doesn’t want to meet me probably because I’m not strong enough. If I have enough power, I can find him even if he’s hiding.” Zhang Ruochen tried to suppress his negative emotions and looked up at the sky.

After a while, he stopped overthinking and started pondering what he was going to do next.

The assassination action conducted by Heaven Field Sect and Heavenly Assassination Organization almost annihilated Zhang Ruochen, so he had to make them pay.

Zhang Ruochen headed straight to Moon Goddess Dojo after arriving at Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Moon Goddess Dojo became spectacular again with one weapon-refining pavilion after another. It was engulfed in saint light, which looked contrary to the demonic Yin and Yang Palace.

In the past, Moon Goddess Dojo was now completely protected by space formation and time formation. The monks in the dojo didn't dare take a step out, and even if they wanted out, they would use a space transportation formation.

But now, the gate of Moon Goddess Dojo was completely open, and there were monks going in and out sometimes.

There was a beautiful saintess standing at each side of the door.

They were both well-dressed, glowing with saint light. They were guarding the door and receiving the monks.

Zhang Ruochen turned back to his original face and walked straight to the door.

The two saintesses immediately walked toward him, bowed and said, "Lord Priest."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and asked, "Who are you?"

One of the saintesses said with respect, "We were both capture by Yin and Yang Palace before, and it was you, Lord Priest, who gave us a new life."

Zhang Ruochen remembered what happened and said, "Why are so many monks coming to Moon Goddess Dojo? Didn't the monks from Yin and Yang Palace, Black Demon Field and Thousand Devil Field come for revenge?"

“Half a year ago, Guanghan Field set up a saint shop in Moon Goddess Dojo to do businesses and communicate with the monks from other fields. The monks who came to do businesses with Guanghan Field are all the monks who attacked Yin and Yang Palace before, and this is your contribution.”

“You released those saintesses from the large fields without asking for any ransom, which appealed to them. They were retaliated and assassinated afterwards, and you went to their dojos and establish space formations and time formations. They’re all appreciative of what you did for them.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and wanted to ask them whether the dojos of Guanghan Field had been taken back, and he saw Blackie and Amazing Little Taoist rush out.

Obviously, they detected Zhang Ruochen’s forces, so they came out to greet him.

However, they stared at Zhang Ruochen and walked around him in a weird way.

“So similar. Too similar. How can they look so similar?” Blackie whispered to itself.

Amazing Little Taoist said, “I told you there’s something behind, a huge trouble behind.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, “What’s wrong with you two? Are the dojos from Guanghan Field taken back? And what about Saint Jade Emperor?”

“No need to worry about that. Those are nothing. You’ve run into a big issue now,” said Blackie.

Amazing Little Taoist said, “That’s right. A big issue is coming at now.”

Zhang Ruochen survived the assassination of Shang Ziyan and his group. What kind of bigger issue could there be?

Zhang Ruochen frowned deeper and asked, “What the hell are you talking about?”

“Someone’s coming to kill you,” said Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen said, “There are many people wanting me dead.”

“But the people trying to kill you this time are very special. They’re coming here to collect a blood debt,” said Blackie.

“Blood debt?”

Zhang Ruochen had killed many monks, and he kind of owned all of their families and friends a blood debt.

This was nothing to him as well.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Amazing Little Taoist and said, “If I’m correct, you must’ve overcome your bottleneck already. You should be able to easily suppress my enemies with your cultivation and Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, shouldn’t you?”

Amazing Little Taoist shook its head and said, “We could never do that before you come back. If we hurt them, you might even get mad at us.”

Zhang Ruochen got more and more confused as Blackie and Amazing Little Taoist couldn’t even articulate themselves as if they’d lost their minds. He asked, “Where are my enemies?”

“In the dojo,” said Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen said while walking to the dojo, “I’ll just kill them since they’re my enemies. Even if I don’t, they’ll do the same thing. One of us have to die first.”

Blackie and Amazing Little Taoist gave each other a look.

“How ruthless did he sound. Let’s see whether he can actually do it or not.” Amazing Little Taoist smiled.

Blackie looked odd, and it said, “I reckon he’s definitely facing a huge issue this time based on what I know about him.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately felt two ferocious forces after walking into Moon Goddess Dojo.

However, the two ferocious forces were both very weak, also neglectable compared to the killer heavenly kings from Heavenly Kill Organization.

He then heard a child yelling, “Zhang Ruochen, there you are. You are dying today!”

A trace of gleaming sword light dived and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and raised his hand, after which a huge hand print emerged, piercing through the sword Qi and slapping her to the ground.

Bang!

A girl who was around eleven fell beside Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen retracted ninety percent of his power after realizing she was only a girl who was a saint, otherwise, he would’ve annihilated her with that strike.

Looking at that slender body lying on the ground, Zhang Ruochen sighed and said, “It’s incredible that you’ve become a saint at such a young age, but unfortunately, you’re too weak to kill me yet. Who are your parents? Why are you here to kill me?”

Becoming a saint at the age of around eleven was unimaginable even to Zhang Ruochen. Normally, it was difficult to for someone to become a saint even at the age of one hundred.

Which meant this girl’s refining talent was terrifically amazing. She must come from a solid background.

“You’re a killer... You...”

The girl raised her head and glared at Zhang Ruochen, however, she stopped talking halfway through her sentence as she was shocked.

This killer, Zhang Ruochen, looked so similar to her.

Zhang Ruchen was also shocked as he thought he was hallucinating. How come a girl looked so much like him?

What was going?

Did that girl also use a transformation technique?

He then heard a boy yelling, “Zhang Ruochen, you traitor of Kunlun’s Field. You’re going to die today!”

Another ferocious force dashed right at Zhang Ruochen’s back.

Zhang Ruochen was staring at that girl the whole time, and he didn’t give a damn about what was coming at him from behind. He was just standing there still.

Bang!

The boy hit Zhang Ruochen with his sword.

Following a clacking sound, a great saint Qi force gushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s back and his saint sword, turning into ripples.

A saint couldn’t even touch him given Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation and defense power.

Chapter 1721 - Kunlun and Kongyue

Chapter 1721: Kunlun and Kongyue

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

An eleven-to-twelve-year-old teenager was standing behind Zhang Ruochen. Although he still looked very young, he was remarkably handsome with chiseled features, glowing with holy light.

At this moment, that teenage boy was dazed, as he couldn't even pierce through Zhang Ruochen's protection saint Qi with his full-strength strike as a saint.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his saint Qi, and then, a powerful force gushed out and knocked the teenager hundreds of feet away.

Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist both rushed into the dojo, and aside from them, there were also some maids and young talents from Guanghan Field coming after hearing the noise.

None of them dared make an attack.

Those two teenagers looked too similar to Zhang Ruochen. Nobody would believe that they weren't related.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at that teenage boy in a python cape, and he found that he looked very similar to Chi Yao, yet his eyes and nose looked like Zhang Ruochen's.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't feel more complicated. He walked toward that girl as he wanted to know the reasons.

There was Five Elements Chaotic Qi flowing inside the girl's body. She seemed to have Five Elements Chaotic Body. Her face looked almost exactly like Zhang Ruochen's, and her skin was smooth and glittering. Her hair was waving in the air as she blinked her eyes, looking at Zhang Ruochen.

The teenage boy in the python cape yelled, "Sister, that Zhang Ruochen probably performed a transformation technique trying to deceive us. Get as far away from him as possible."

That girl immediately drew back, holding the saint sword.

However, Zhang Ruochen walked right in front of her after two steps.

"What... What do you want to do?"

The girl was horrified. She immediately wielded her saint sword, triggering the sword intent of ultimate completion of Sword Four, slashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen pinched the edge of the saint sword and seized it. He then grabbed her arm and started to inspect her.

"Let my sister go, Zhang Ruochen! You bastard!"

The teenage boy in the python cape looked glum. He mobilized all his saint Qi, grabbed the sword handle, and stabbed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Howl!

A translucent dragon shadow gushed out of the saint sword.

Zhang Ruochen raised the other hand, grabbed the dragon shadow, and crushed it, capturing the teenager in the python cape.

"Five Elements Chaotic Body."

"True God Body."

Zhang Ruochen's fingers couldn't help shaking after inspecting their body constitution.

He tried to inspect their bloodline, yet it ended in failure.

Their bloodlines were covered by a powerful force, which changed all their cells. Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to inspect

that at all.

However, since that teenager had a True God Body, he was probably a deity.

Gods' blood and comprehension would merge with their fetuses when they were carrying them, which was basically refining their body constitution and improving their potential.

Many deities had great cultivation and the best body constitution when they were just given birth to.

“Let me go, Zhang Ruochen! Suppress your cultivation and fight me at my level.” The teenage boy wearing a python cape refused to accept defeat. He stared at Zhang Ruochen with pride and rage.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a little while, let go of them, and said, “Okay! Answer some of my questions first if you want me to do that.”

“Why would we answer your questions?” asked the teenage girl.

Zhang Ruochen released a strange cold Qi and ferocious Qi, gushing toward the two of them.

All they could see was Zhang Ruochen now, who looked like an apocalyptic demonic God releasing thick blood Qi, giving them incredible pressure.

The teenage boy was very firm and wasn't wavered by the ferocious forces. He sneered, “Okay. As long as you suppress your cultivation to my level and fight me.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What's your and your sister's name?”

“Chi Kunlun,” said the teenage boy in the python cape.

The girl in white said, “Chi Kongyue.”

“Kongyue...”

Zhang Ruochen mumbled the name as he clenched his fist and felt his heart ache.

To others, 'Kongyue' was nothing but a regular name, but to Zhang Ruochen, it had an extraordinary meaning.

To be exact, it was extraordinary to both Zhang Ruochen and Chi Yao.

Eight hundred years ago, on the night when Chi Yao killed Zhang Ruochen, they looked at the view of the entire capital city on Kongyue Mountain outside Sacred City.

There was snow falling in a city of lights.

Eight hundred years after that, Chi Yao turned into Huang Yanchen and met with Zhang Ruochen the first time in Sacred City. They went to Kongyue Mountain again, hugged there and saw the city in lights.

Zhang Ruochen understood a lot after hearing the name 'Kongyue'.

"Why? Why? Ruthless like you, why would you name her Kongyue?" Zhang Ruochen forced a smile.

Chi Kunlun said with a cold voice, "What else do you want to ask, demon?"

"Demon?"

Zhang Ruochen sighed and said, "Who's your father?"

Both Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue were indignant upon hearing that question.

Chi Kongyue calmed herself a bit and said, "Both of our parents were killed by you, demon."

"You led the dregs from the previous empire to attack Sacred City and Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and slaughtered our families. Countless were killed and many lost their families and homes. Our parents were killed by your subordinates."

Wars always meant deaths, especially of the innocent.

And the hatred and revenge would go on and on.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Chi Yao told you about all this, didn't she?"

Chi Kongyue couldn't revere Chi Yao more and said, "My master is a God. What she said is certainly true. Besides, I've

checked the information about that battle before, and it was indeed waged by you, dreg. Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion was buried in blood and corpses that night, and you're responsible for it."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "You are right. I did wage that battle, but do you know that Chi's family also started a war against my family eight hundred years ago and slaughtered my family? Do you know how many people died during that war?"

Chi Kunlun sneered as he didn't know how to respond. After all, he was only a young teenager.

On the contrary, Chi Kongyue was very shrewd. She said, "We only come for the real perpetrator. You waged a war and destroyed Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion in the past, so we're here to retaliate against you instead of your subordinates. As for the hatred eight hundred years ago, you should've gone against my master and Emperor Qing instead of the innocent people in Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, but you didn't have the guts to do so because my master, her majesty, can kill you within the blink of an eye."

Blackie burst out laughing and said, "Haha, makes sense, makes sense."

Zhang Ruochen shot it a glare, after which Blackie stopped laughing and said, "You're sharp, but what you said is very biased. There might be some innocent people who got killed in Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, but most of them were murderers.

"You were indoctrinated by that empress or the seniors from the Chi family, but they never told you how those from Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion massacred the people from Sacred Central Empire and how many innocent people died because of them.

"And besides, after conquering Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion with the armies from Sacred Central Empire, Zhang Ruochen ordered them to let the weak, the elders and the kids go. He strictly forbade them from killing the innocent. You don't know anything about Zhang Ruochen.'

Chi Kunlun sneered and said, “Doesn’t matter. What matters is that our parents died because of him.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’re literally being suicidal coming to retaliate against me given your cultivation. I’m curious. Who sent you here to kill me? Was it Chi Yao?”

“Do we really need someone to tell us to kill you?”

Chi Kunlun then said, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t think that your cultivation is that much of a big deal. Suppress your cultivation to my level and fight me, and I can kill you with one hand.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at him for a long time and said, “You said that one of us has to die?”

“The enmity between us is blood-related. Either you die or I do,” said Chi Kunlun.

Chi Kongyue wanted to talk Chi Kunlun out of this. She transmitted her voice, “Zhang Ruochen is extraordinary. Don’t be so impulsive, brother. We said it before that we’re here to test his power and get Grandpa Emperor Wen’s Saint Figure Rune.”

Chi Kunlun shook his head and said, “Don’t worry about me. I’m invincible among those at the same level.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded satisfactorily and said, “Good thing you’re confident, but I still need to ask you something. Have you been defeated before?”

“No.”

Chi Kunlun said, “Nobody at my age and my level can take three strikes from me, including those saint kings who have suppressed their cultivation.”

Zhang Ruochen then asked, “Let me ask you another question, can you handle being defeated?”

“I won’t be defeated,” said Chi Kunlun.

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking and suppressed his level to an upper-class saint. He said, “Fight me together. If you can handle ten moves from me, I won’t kill you two today.”

“Arrogant! There’s no need for my sister to do anything. I can suppress you with one hand. I won’t use my sword, and neither will you.”

Chi Kunlun couldn’t be more confident, and a vague emperor Qi came out of his body. He pinched his right hand into a palm print, and a deafening dragon sound rang in his body. And then, dragon scales emerged on his arm as he slapped toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t move at all. He nodded, as he was amazed. No wonder Chi Kunlun claimed that he was invincible among those at the same level.

Even Zhang Ruochen had to take this young boy seriously.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen slapped forward, dissolving that huge palm force and hitting Chi Kunlun’s palm, shaking his entire body.

Chi Kunlun was shocked. He immediately formed another palm print, but he still couldn’t ward it off. He felt Zhang Ruochen’s force dashing toward him overwhelmingly, forcing him to step back.

“Palm technique requires the power from your entire body, not just your hands and your palms. Your understanding of palm technique is still very premature,” said Zhang Ruochen calmly.

Chapter 1722 - Crushing Defeat

Chapter 1722: Crushing Defeat

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Chi Kunlun had very quick comprehension, and he immediately understood what Zhang Ruochen meant.

Bang! Bang!

All his bones were making sounds, and the strength went through his feet, his calves, his thighs, his belly, and his chest. He mobilized the strength of his entire body, which gushed out through his palms.

After that, Chi Kunlun drew back and tensed his entire body, warding off Zhang Ruochen's palm strength.

Just as he was overjoyed, Zhang Ruochen formed a whirlpool with his hand. He waved his hand against Chi Kunlun, who lost balance and was knocked away by Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had been using only one hand with the other behind his back. He said, "You would've been slapped to death if I used the other hand. You have impressive strength, but you have no idea how to use it correctly, which means you're fragile in front of a real great being."

Hearing the word 'fragile', Chi Kunlun yelled, summoned his saint sword, and performed an unrivaled technique of the Chi family.

"To One Sword Technique."

The sword Qi turned into a trace of white light, piercing toward Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

To One Sword Technique was a sword technique created by Emperor Qing when he became a supreme saint. He combined all his comprehension and thousands of techniques into that move. Even Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen said that there was no way to fight against that technique.

However, it was only impossible to fight against when Emperor Qing performed it.

Although Chi Kunlun performed To One Sword Technique, Zhang Ruochen saw several flaws.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the space in front of him, and a white saint Qi long sword was formed in his hand.

The white saint Qi long sword was nowhere as solid as Chi Kunlun's saint sword, so Zhang Ruochen didn't clash with his sword directly. Instead, he exploited one of the flaws and used a mysterious sword technique to break it.

Poof!

The saint Qi long sword pierced through the sword Qi level, and the tip of the sword touched Chi Kunlun's neck.

Chi Kunlun felt that a cold Qi was freezing his entire neck, and his entire body.

“Don't kill my brother.”

Chi Kongyue kept shifting her position, performing mysterious stepping techniques, and showed up on the right of Zhang Ruochen. She wielded her sword toward Zhang Ruochen. Balls of Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of her hand, covering the saint sword.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen's saint Qi sword was cut in half by her, turning into a cluster of saint Qi.

And then, Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue attacked Zhang Ruochen at the same time, forming a sword formation.

“Sword Break Universe.”

“Broken Astral River.”

They cooperated with each other, which boosted their power, forcing Zhang Ruochen to draw back and use his other hand.

The shadows intertwined with each other, and sword Qi permeated.

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue fought more and more fiercely, and the sword formation looked like there was a dragon and a phoenix flying in the sky.

“Distorted Time.”

“Crumbling Space.”

Chi Kunlun performed space power, and Chi Kongyue performed time power, both of which merged with the sword technique, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

However, their cultivation was still very low, so they could barely cause any damage in Heaven World even though they used space power and time power.

The flow of time was only slightly distorted, and there was only a tiny crack in the space.

Even so, the sword formation became much more powerful after being strengthened by time power and space power, and one of the space cracks left a small tear in Zhang Ruochen’s clothes.

The Amazing Little Taoist was shocked. It said, “Can’t believe those two kids are so powerful that they can suppress Zhang Ruochen at the same level.”

Blackie chuckled and said, “They’re indeed impressive, but their battle experience and comprehension of saintly way are way behind Zhang Ruochen, who has been through countless battles of life or death. He can easily defeat them, but it seems that Zhang Ruochen’s trying to test their ultimate power, so he hasn’t used his full strength.”

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue performed sword techniques while using the power of time and space, which consumed a lot of saint Qi. Their faces blushed while they kept sweating.

Zhang Ruochen saw that they’d reached their limit, and he stopped holding back and said, “Ending now.”

Ding!

Following a sword noise, the Abyss Ancient Sword flew up into Zhang Ruochen's hand.

Zhang Ruochen twisted his wrist, and a circular sword Qi flew out, knocking Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue away like scarecrows while their saint swords fell onto the ground.

Bang! Bang!

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue fell onto the ground, and there were cracks everywhere on their hands, but those wounds were all on the surface so their veins and bones weren't injured.

Zhang Ruochen said apathetically, "Since you took ten moves of mine, I won't kill you today, but you'd better think twice before coming after me for revenge. You only have one life, so cherish it."

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue stood up, put away the saint sword, and walked out of Moon Goddess dojo.

After leaving Heavenly Capital Saint Market, Chi Kunlun looked very gloomy. He said, "Zhang Ruochen was playing us the whole time. How can he be so powerful? I didn't even stand a chance against him at the same level. Did the people I fought before all hold back? Was I not as strong as I thought?"

Chi Konglun grabbed Chi Kunlun's arm and said, "Brother, it's not because you're not strong enough, but that Zhang Ruochen's too powerful. We're still very young, so we can definitely surpass him in the future."

Chi Kunlun found it hard to stay calm. He'd never been defeated in his whole life, yet he was crushed by his mortal enemy, and he was crushed mercilessly, which was a huge blow to his state of mind.

A towering being was standing at the top of a hill with his hands behind his back, waiting for them, wearing blue dragon armor.

He was the greatest talent from the Chi family, Chi Wansui, one of the nine heirs.

Chi Wansui had been practicing for almost one hundred years, so he wasn't young anymore. He looked like he'd been through all the vicissitudes of life, giving out tremendous forces.

That was the power of a real saint king.

“Uncle.”

Both Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue cupped their hands and saluted him.

Chi Wansui shot them a glance and asked, “Have you guys fought Zhang Ruochen?”

“Yes,” Chi Kunlun answered while grinding his teeth.

“How did that end?” asked Chi Wansui.

Chi Kunlun ground his teeth harder, not saying a word.

Chi Wansui knew that they'd failed, so he exclaimed, “Even you two aren't Zhang Ruochen's match. How powerful is he now?”

Chi Kongyue looked very confused. She said, “I don't understand, uncle. Why did you ask us to kill him given how powerful he is? And how did you know that he'd agree to suppress his cultivation to fight us? What if he didn't consent to doing that? Also, what does Zhang Ruochen really look like?”

Chi Wansui stared at Chi Kongle and said, “You guys have Lord Emperor Wen's Saint Figure Rune, which means Zhang Ruochen can't stop you from getting away, and besides, it's your moral responsibility to avenge the fallen seniors from the Chi family. No need to ask so many questions.”

“But...” said Chi Kongyue.

“No buts. Empress and I won't lie to you. Zhang Ruochen is a dreg from the former dynasty and your mortal enemy. You should do everything in your power to kill him,” said Chi Wansui solemnly.

Chi Kongyue stopped asking, but her questions hadn't been answered.

She suspected that Zhang Ruochen didn't use any transformation technique and that was his real face, but if that was so, how come she looked so similar to Zhang Ruochen?

“Head back to the dojo. Keep practicing comprehending the Rules of Truth so that you can cross the first level of the Ocean of Truth as soon as possible,” said Chi Wansui.

After Chi Kongyue and Chi Kunlun left, Chi Wansui looked around and said, “Come out! I know you're near.”

Zhang Ruochen's voice stretched from the space close to Chi Wansui. “Why aren't you running since you know I'm here?”

“Why should I? I've been practicing in seclusion for almost a hundred years to avenge what happened in Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.” Chi Wansui summoned a Kylin Long Spear, holding it in his hand and glowing with golden light.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Did you ask them to kill me in Moon Goddess Dojo?”

“That's right,” said Chi Wansui.

“Even though we were enemies, I respected you for being an honest and impartial person, but you're dead wrong this time.”

A long and vast river was formed above, making deafening water sounds. The saint Qi in this place gathered toward the river, merging with it.

Boom!

A fist print as long as a hill and a river that was dozens of miles long dived at the same time.

Chi Wansui activated the inscriptions on the Kylin Long Spear, activating its Four Yao Complete Power and wielding it upward.

After one hundred years of practice, Chi Wansui had become a fifth-step saint king.

Suddenly, the power of the fist print surged, which exceeded Chi Wansui's limits and knocked him underground.

Zhang Ruochen showed up and picked Chi Wansui up, throwing him away.

And then, Zhang Ruochen beat Chi Wansui with his fists, making him bleed like hell, after which Chi Wansui lay on the ground, weak.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen trampled him underfoot and said, “You’d better come after me yourself if you want revenge. You deserve to die after using two innocent children to do your bidding.’

Chi Wansui was very upset, but he was laughing, “After one hundred years of refining, I’m still so vulnerable in front of you. Zhang Ruochen, I don’t know whether I should admire or pity you. They’re your own children, yet they’re treating you like a foe. Pathetic, how pathetic.”

Poof!

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and pierced through Chi Wansui’s heart, nailing him to the ground to question him. “Tell me, how do you want to die?”

Chi Wansui kept shaking because of the pain. His face paled and the saint blood kept gushing out along the Abyss Ancient Sword, making the mud red.

“Spare him.”

Two human beings flew from afar, forming two fragmented and trailing shadows.

Suddenly, the two shadows flew in front of Zhang Ruochen, forming the shapes of Nine Heavenly Maiden and Qing Xiao.

Chapter 1723 - Human Love

Chapter 1723: Human Love

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen gazed at them coldly and said, “Give me a reason not to kill him.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, “Both of you are victims. All his family was killed by the armies from Sacred Central Empire during the battle in Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, but there wasn’t any feud between you and Chi Wansui, nor did he attack the descendants of the previous officials from Sacred Central Empire.”

“Are you saying that this is my fault?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“Neither of you are wrong. It’s this era that did you wrong. If you were born in a different time, there wouldn’t be so much hate and resentment between you,” said Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Qing Xiao and asked, “You don’t think I should kill him, do you?”

Qing Xiao was silent for a long while before saying, “I shouldn’t say anything unnecessary, but I do need to remind you that Chi Wansui has been blinded by hate, twisting his state of mind. Do you want to become like him? You should know that he wasn’t the start of this. Don’t you wonder why the Empress would tell them that you killed their parents?”

Obviously, Qing Xiao, Nine Heavenly Maiden and Chi Wansui all knew that Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue were Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao’s children, but none of them dared tell Zhang Ruochen anything about that.

That was a taboo surrounding the empress.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Chi Wansui and recalled lots of things that had happened.

He used to be both enemy and comrade-in-arms. Back then, Chi Wansui was still an honorable man with morals, and he would never exploit two innocent children.

Sizzle!

Zhang Ruochen pulled the bloody Abyss Ancient Sword out and said, “A calamity is hitting Kunlun’s Field soon, so I’ll spare his life for that, but what you’ve done is so despicable. I’ll teach you a lesson by destroying one of your arms.”

Sizzle!

Zhang Ruochen wielded a cluster of Divine Fire Jingmie and burnt Chi Wansui’s left arm into ashes.

Chi Wansui kept gasping and shaking his body because of the agony he endured.

However, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t happy at all after doing that. Instead, he couldn’t feel more desolate and bitter as he prepared to leave.

His emotions were in a mess because Chi Kunlun and Chi Konglun had shown up. He was happy to see his kids, but he was also dismayed. Zhang Ruochen wanted to ponder how to face the two of them.

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, “Wait a sec.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped but didn’t turn around.

Nine Heavenly Maiden walked toward Zhang Ruochen. Seeing how much pain he was in, she hesitated to talk at all.

Qing Xiao didn’t mind it. He said without filter, “Kunlun’s Field needs your help this time. We need your help to get back Xumi Dojo in Truth Heavenly Domain left by Saint Monk Xumi.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped being upset and said, “I promised Luo Xu that I’d help Kunlun’s Field to pay him back for last time, but I don’t understand why you haven’t gone back to set up a

defense formation now that Kunlun's Field's Heaven and Earth Altar is about to be conquered. What's the point of refining in Truth Heavenly Domain?"

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, "A hundred thousand years ago, Kunlun's Field was almost destroyed by the Gods from Hell World. It was Saint Monk Xumi who sacrificed all his godly power to seal all the holes to preserve Kunlun's Field.

"But now, Saint Monk Xumi's godly power has almost withered away, and those holes will be opened again, after which Kunlun's Field will become a warzone where all the ordinary people die.

"However, her majesty gave us an oracle message that Saint Monk Xumi left an object in Xumi Dojo, and if we can get that object, we can mobilize the space inscriptions and time prints left by Saint Monk Xumi.

"Once those space inscriptions and time prints are activated, they can be more than enough to ward off the saint kings from Hell World."

Zhang Ruochen thought and said, "Only creatures under supreme saints can enter the battle in the large field battlefield. If there is something in Xumi Dojo that can activate the space inscriptions and time prints left by Saint Monk Xumi, the monks from Kunlun's Field might be able to fight back in the battle instead of watching their homeland being ravaged by Hell World and the secular fields under Heaven World."

"That's right," said Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "When are you going to attack Xumi Dojo?"

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, "It is the monks from Heaven Field, the ruling field of the western universe, that's occupying Xumi Dojo, and there're also disciples from Space Godly Palace and Time Godly Palace refining there. Even after 'All Lives Equal', it'll be very difficult for us to take back the dojo.'

There were a great many powerful beings from Heaven Field, and those from Space Godly Palace and Time Godly Palace

had incredible skills.

It was a hard battle to fight!

Nine Heavenly Maiden continued. “Which is why we need to get very well prepared before we take action. With your help, we can attack Xumi Dojo in three days.”

“Okay. Notify me in three days.”

Zhang Ruochen agreed to help not just because of his promise to Luo Xu, but also because he was very interested in Xumi Dojo, as he wanted to know what Saint Monk Xumi left in his dojo.

Qing Xiao and Nine Heavenly Maiden gave each other a look, and they both looked pleased. As long as Zhang Ruochen was willing to lend a hand, they would have a higher chance of taking back Xumi Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and wanted to leave, but then, he stopped and said, “Kunlun’s Field is likely to be in ruins if both Hell World and the secular fields from Heaven World send armies to fight there. Have you thought about how the creatures in Kunlun’s Field are going to survive that?”

Hearing that, Qing Xiao and Nine Heavenly Maiden knew that Zhang Ruochen still had Kunlun’s Field in his heart.

Nine Heavenly Maiden then said, “The Empress has chosen nine heirs and given them nine heir stamps. Each heir stamp is like an embryonic world. As the heirs get stronger, the embryonic worlds become more complete. They’ll evolve into a real world someday.

“If Kunlun’s Field really gets destroyed one day, the heirs will get as many creatures into the heir stamps as possible to provide another space for them, but that’s the last thing we want to see.”

Without asking more questions, Zhang Ruochen nodded and walked into the distance.

After returning to the Moon Goddess Dojo, Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist immediately ran to Zhang Ruochen.

“How was it? How was it? Are they your children?” asked Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen was in no mood to talk about it with them. He walked deep into the dojo without saying anything.

Blackie didn't keep pushing him as it saw how upset Zhang Ruochen was. He said with a smiley face, “I have something great to tell you, that we have taken back all the dojos from Guanghan Field. And besides, I've set up formations in those dojos so that ordinary saint kings can't trespass in them.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Saint Jade Emperor?”

Blackie sighed and said, “The Moon Goddess came to Truth Heavenly Domain half a year ago and took it!”

“The Moon Goddess has been to Truth Heavenly Domain?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised.

Zhang Ruochen knew how strong the Moon Goddess was. Since her godly power was gradually coming back, she would definitely get more benefits for Guanghan Field.

Blackie smiled seeing Zhang Ruochen's silence. It said, “Also, after more than half a year of taming, Saint Jade Emperor has recognized me as its master, and it's been practicing the techniques I taught it. Even if it's following Moon Goddess now, I can still tell it to do something.”

“Good.”

Zhang Ruochen walked right into a weapon-refining pavilion, and activated the defense formation to stop Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist from getting in.

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “Zhang Ruochen is really upset. It seems that those two children are indeed related to him. Should we give a message to Sister Mu? Perhaps she can console him.”

Blackie rolled its eyes at the Amazing Little Taoist and said, “Are you retarded? How can we let that girl Mu know about this? Besides, Sister Mu left with the Moon Goddess, which means the Moon Goddess has something vital for her to

complete or even teach her better techniques. Even if we tell her, she won't be able to get here in time."

The Amazing Little Taoist said, "Then what should we do? What if Zhang Ruochen never recovers from this..."

"What the hell are you talking about?"

Blackie sneered and said, "Based on what I know about him, I bet he can definitely make it through, and he must be thinking about the best way to deal with this situation. Leave him alone!"

Zhang Ruochen was sitting on the ground without refining. He looked dumbfounded.

After a whole day, Zhang Ruochen gradually recovered from the shock. He exhaled deeply and whispered to himself, "Even if I tell them I'm their father, they won't believe me. Even if they do, they will only be in more pain.

"This is a feud between me and Chi Yao, so it shouldn't concern any of them. They should live in happiness, not hatred.

"Why are you so cruel, even to your own children, Chi Yao? Why do you make them live in hate? Why did you give birth to them if you can't give them love and joy? You're indeed a merciless woman!"

But on second thought, Zhang Ruochen also couldn't give the love and happiness Chi Yao didn't.

Zhang Ruochen looked up, blinked his eyes, and stopped himself from crying.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen's eyes got dry again, and he looked firmer. He said, "Whatever! Human love will only hold me back. The most important thing is to improve my power, otherwise, I won't be able to protect them when they run into danger."

And then, Zhang Ruochen immersed his mind power into his lower abdomen, coming to the shore of Heaven Pass River.

Under Universe World, Amber Ash's saint soul had been suppressed into a cluster of amber soul mist.

Zhang Ruochen heard Traceless Fairy and Shang Ziyang mention 'Amber Ash' before, so the saint soul was likely to have been someone remarkable when it was still alive.

He wondered how powerful the Emperor Yi Bone Staff could become after absorbing the saint soul's mist.

Chapter 1724 - Emperor Yi Evil Spirit

Chapter 1724: Emperor Yi Evil Spirit

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The blue soul mist under Universe World was tumbling, showing how sturdy Amber Ash's saint soul used to be. Without Universe World, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to handle it.

He then heard Amber Ash's voice from the soul mist. "Let's have a chat!"

Amber Ash's mind power hadn't withered away, but it was indeed very feeble.

Zhang Ruochen said, "There's nothing to talk about between us, isn't that right?"

"Not necessarily."

Amber Ash said, "I was ranked first on the Saint King Merits Rank, and the technique I practiced is one of the top ten techniques in Heaven World. I mastered lots of mid-level saint spells, even high-level saint spells. You can't even imagine how wealthy I was. I was even richer than some supreme saints. Aren't you interested in any of that?"

"No," answered Zhang Ruochen.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was very impressed, as that man used to be the number one on the Saint King Merits Rank, which was more difficult than becoming an actual supreme saint.

One needed unrivaled talents and tremendous luck to achieve that.

After staying silent for a while, Amber Ash said, “I found the inheritance of a God in a universe secret region. You should at least be interested in that, shouldn’t you?”

“Where is that secret region?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Amber Ash was thrilled to see Zhang Ruochen’s interest in the God’s inheritance. “Move away the universe you’re using to suppress me first, then we can talk.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled vaguely.

He knew that Amber Ash had probably taken the God’s inheritance even if there was one. There was no way it was still preserved in that universe secret region.

He stopped listening to Amber Ash and took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

Amber Ash continued after hearing no response from Zhang Ruochen, “There are supreme saint weapons and heaven divine medicinal pills in that secret region, aside from the God’s inheritance.”

Zhang Ruochen pretended that he didn’t hear anything. He mobilized his mind power and entered the skull of the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

His mind power had surged to level fifty-seven, so he decided to communicate with the evil spirit inhabiting the bone staff.

After entering the skull, Zhang Ruochen seemed to have entered a dark and freezing world with evil power spreading toward him, trying to swallow his mind power.

There was saint might of a supreme saint in that evil power, which gave Zhang Ruochen a lot of pressure.

The Emperor Yi Bone Staff was made of the spine and the head of a supreme saint, and there was still some remaining supreme saint power inside. Each trace of supreme saint power was like a starry river, floating in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Rumbling laughter came out of the dark. “Tst Tst. I can’t believe you dare enter my head with your mind power. You’re really careless, aren’t you?”

Whoosh!

Cold wind was blown in that dark world.

Traces of black mist gathered, which formed a skull that was more than one thousand feet tall, trying to eat Zhang Ruochen’s mind power dividing self.

“You’re just a fragmented soul. Do you really think you’re a intimidating supreme saint like before?”

Zhang Ruochen reached his hand forward, and dozens of traces of lightning were formed, hitting the skull, which groaned in agony.

That skull was the evil spirit.

The black skull was almost completely cracked by the lightning, resorting to backing off and cursing, “Damn it! If my saint soul were still intact, even just ten percent intact, I could make your life a living hell.”

And then, the evil spirit mobilized the supreme saint power in the dark little world, and the starry rivers gathered toward him as though there were hundreds of saint dragons flying around it.

Zhang Ruochen was more cautious, as that was the power of a supreme saint. Although it was still very thin, it still had tremendous power.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of the Buddha sarira, and suddenly, the glowing Buddha light shone upon this dark world, purifying the evil power in the space.

Under the Buddha light, the evil spirit seemed to be in agony. It yelled in anger and wielded all the supreme saint power.

The Buddha emperor also released supreme saint power, which was more vigorous. Under the control of Zhang Ruochen, it clashed with the supreme saint power from the evil spirit.

Boom!

The black skull yelled and bounced back, dismantled.

“Don’t purify me with that Buddhist power. I can surrender to you.”

The dismantled black skull then formed a black human shadow and bowed at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was glowing with golden light as if he was a holy Bodhisattva. “Are you a supreme saint? Why do you surrender to me so easily?”

The black shadow knew that its life was in Zhang Ruochen’s hands, so it responded, “The supreme saint has long been dead, and even the saint soul has been destroyed. I’m just an evil spirit made by that great being from Soul Field using the supreme saint’s fragmented soul.”

Those who wanted to become supreme saints would never submit to others.

The creatures who had become supreme saints wouldn’t even surrender to Gods, not to mention a saint king.

Zhang Ruochen kept probing it. “Kneel.”

The evil spirit of Emperor Yi shook. It wanted to fight Zhang Ruochen to death, but seeing the accumulating supreme saint power on Zhang Ruochen’s body, it knew that it didn’t stand a chance against him. Eventually, it kneeled down.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’re an evil spirit made by the supreme saint’s fragmented soul, after all. You should at least have a little bit of the mind power left. You must feel very reluctant, don’t you?”

“No. You’re an unrivaled talent with remarkable potential. It’s my honor to refine with you, my lord,” said the Emperor Yi Evil Spirit.

“I actually don’t care whether you meant it or not, and I’ll definitely let you know that it’s indeed your honor to refine with me in the future.”

Pausing for a short while, Zhang Ruochen said, “You’re Emperor Yi, aren’t you? As long as you follow my orders, I’ll give you a lot of saint souls to make you stronger instead of killing you, and you might stand a chance to become a supreme saint again. Now, give me half of your soul spirit.”

“If I give you half of my soul spirit, you can annihilate me at any time,” said the Emperor Yi Evil Spirit.

The Buddha light gathered toward Zhang Ruochen’s palm, then he said, “I can annihilate you right now.”

The Emperor Yi Evil Spirit was rendered speechless, and after a while, it took out half its soul spirit and formed a black oval-shaped ball, handing it to Zhang Ruochen.

The Emperor Yi Evil Spirit’s force was reduced by half. It had originally rivaled a creature that was a sixth-step saint king, but now, it was barely a sixth-step saint king.

Zhang Ruochen took the soul spirit ball, nodded, and left the dark world.

“As long as I have the other half of its soul spirit, I don’t ever need to worry about being bitten back. I can now allow it to swallow and refine Amber Ash’s saint soul.”

Without communicating with Amber Ash, he took away one percent of the amber soul mist under Universe World and infused it into the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

Although it was only one percent, the mind power inside was still very powerful. Zhang Ruochen and the Emperor Yi Evil Spirit needed to team up to suppress it.

The amber soul mist permeated the inner space of this dark world, and the Emperor Yi Evil Spirit couldn’t completely swallow and refine it yet.

Seizing this chance, Zhang Ruochen took out Saint Monk Xumi’s long whisker, which was three feet long and glowed with white light, spreading vigorous Buddhist power.

Zhang Ruochen found an independent space inside the long whisker when he first touched it, but because Thousand Star Maiden was there, he didn’t get in to inspect the inner space.

“I can’t even imagine which level Saint Monk Xumi’s cultivation has reached. Even a whisker can breed a small world.”

Zhang Ruochen vanished and entered the mini world in the long whisker.

Whoosh!

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen came to a long and narrow world with sky and land, and it could absorb the saint Qi outside the whisker.

It took Zhang Ruochen half an hour to get to the other end of the mini world.

“Three thousand six hundred miles.”

Zhang Ruochen looked up and used his Heavenly Eyes to stare at the sky where he saw countless time rules and space rules.

“It’s indeed a mini world made of time rules and space rules. My Way of Time and Way of Space will definitely surge after comprehending the rules here.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Suddenly, he sensed a vague but familiar feeling as if something was summoning him from underground.

That feeling got stronger and stronger.

Bang!

Ten feet away from Zhang Ruochen, the ground suddenly cracked, and a blue lotus seed flew out, floating in the air like a blue moon, glowing with blue light and shining upon the entire mini world.

The lotus seed was vivid, and its light made the world blossom with lotuses, giving out mesmerizing fragrance.

“Where did that lotus seed come from?”

Zhang Ruochen raised his hand, and the blue lotus seed flew onto his palm, and all the light went away.

Zhang Ruochen studied the blue lotus seed carefully, and he found robust vigor inside the seed, but aside from that, there was nothing special about it.

After thinking about it for a while, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the mini world with the lotus seed and opened the formation around the weapon-refining pavilion, asking the Amazing Little Taoist and Blackie to come.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I just obtained a very special valuable, and I want to check its power."

"Valuable? What valuable?"

Blackie's eyes gleamed. It clenched its claw and couldn't wait to see it.

Zhang Ruochen opened his hand, and the blue lotus seed floated on his palm, which was greener and more glittery than jade.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Do you want to cut off your heads? I'll see whether I can grow them back or not."

The Amazing Little Taoist immediately ran away as it reckoned that Zhang Ruochen at least wanted its leg, if not its head.

Chapter 1725 - Tame a Top-tier Great Being

Chapter 1725: Tame a Top-tier Great Being

“Come back! What are you afraid of?” shouted Zhang Ruochen.

The Amazing Little Taoist hid outside the door, showing one of its eyes, and said, “I’m an eighth-step saint king now. If you really try to eat my head, I swear I can destroy the entire Moon Goddess Dojo during the fight.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and asked Blackie, “Why is it so sensitive? Are you being sinister to it all the time?”

“No. Why would I? I’ve been treating it like my own brother. Why would I be sinister to it?” Blackie immediately shook its head.

The Amazing Little Taoist sneered, “Nonsense. You’ve been stalking me all the time. Every time I turn around, I can see you drooling.”

Blackie said, “Bullocks. I didn’t...”

Zhang Ruochen immediately scolded it and said, “How about me cutting your head off and helping you grow it back?”

“No. Hell no.”

Blackie kept retreating and said, “I have the body of a supreme saint. Once my head is cut off, I need a lot of blood Qi to regrow it, after which I’ll be weak for a long time before getting back to peak level.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up, holding the lotus seed in his hand, and said, “Relax. There’s tremendous vigor in this lotus seed. You won’t need any blood Qi to grow it back.”

Blackie kept shaking its head and said, “Didn’t you say that you wanted to test its power? How can you be so sure that my head can grow back? What if something goes wrong?”

Even if that lotus seed could guarantee to help a monk grow its head back, Blackie would in no way cut its head off.

It was a tremendously painful process, and it would damage its meridians and saint meridians.

The meridians and saint meridians were connected to the lower abdomen from the head through necks.

Even if the heads grew back, the meridians and saint meridians would be very difficult to grow back, and the hidden injuries would have negative impacts to some extent.

Blackie thought for a second and said, "If you really want to test its power, I have a perfect person for you to do it on."

"Who?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

"Come with me."

Blackie took Zhang Ruochen to the underground section of the Yin and Yang Palace.

There were twelve tower-shaped buildings deep in the underground palace.

The monks from the evil way in the previous Yin and Yang Palace had called it 'Purgatory Tower'.

The Yin and Yang Palace locked the female saint kings in the Purgatory Tower to make them go through torture and thus wear away their mind power, turning them into slaves who only answered.

"Please... Mercy... Please..."

Zhang Ruochen heard a blood-curdling scream coming out of a Purgatory Tower.

Zhang Ruochen looked into the tower.

He saw a thin man being tied up by crimson chains which released lightning and flames, hitting him.

"The leader of Thousand Devil Field, Xie Chengzi." Zhang Ruochen was very surprised.

Thousand Devil Field was ranked fourteen hundred and fiftieth, and it was one of the three demonic fields that had

established the Yin and Yang Palace.

Xie Chengzi was definitely a prominent being in the demonic way, at the same level as Queen Lian and King Yan.

Nobody could've imagined that a great being whose fierce reputation preceded him was held in the Purgatory Tower he participated in building, not to mention that he was yelling and begging for mercy.

There were two saintesses guarding the Purgatory Tower.

Seeing Xie Chengzi who was tortured to half death, they were both clenching their teeth, yet one could tell from their eyes that they were rejoicing because of a sense of revenge.

This was karma!

Blackie smiled and said, "Half a year ago, Guanghan Field established its saint shop in Moon Goddess Dojo, opened the formation, and started to welcome the monks from all large fields to do business. However, some of the monks, led by Xie Chengzi, wanted to exploit this opportunity to annihilate Mood Goddess Dojo.

"Unfortunately for them, they couldn't do it with me guarding the dojo. All the other monks have been killed, except Xie Chengzi, and because of that, those with hostility are all intimidated. Look how peaceful Moon Goddess Dojo is now."

The Amazing Little Taoist clenched its teeth and said, "Have you no shame? It was I who suppressed them using the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror so that you could easily kill them, otherwise, they would've blown up saint sources and destroyed Moon Goddess Dojo."

"What about the formation I set up? Even if they had blown up their saint sources, they wouldn't have caused any serious damage," said Blackie with absolute pride.

Seeing that the sage and the bird were about to start a fight, Zhang Ruochen immediately said, "Stop fighting. Bring Xie Chengzi here."

"Whatever. I'm a supreme saint, so I should show graciousness to the saint pill."

Blackie walked into Purgatory Tower and unchained Xie Chengzi. It dragged him by his leg to Zhang Ruochen.

Xie Chengzi was burnt completely black. He was terrified to see Zhang Ruochen in front of him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say a word to him, instead, he waved his hand and a trace of sword Qi flew out.

Poof!

He cut off Xie Chengzi's left arm, making him bleed heavily.

Probably because of his crippling mind power, Xie Chengzi had a very low tolerance to pain. He screamed miserably while his body twitched.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized a trace of saint Qi and infused it into the blue lotus seed.

Whoosh!

Blue light was released, and soon, Xie Chengzi stopped bleeding. Instead, his wound started to granulate, and after ten breaths of time, a new arm grew back.

Zhang Ruochen squatted to check Xie Chengzi's blood Qi and life force.

His blood Qi was slightly tamed, but it was still vigorous instead of feeble.

As for his life force, it wasn't changed at all.

It was normal that his blood Qi was weakened, after all, his left arm was cut off, detached from his body.

Zhang Ruochen was pleased, so he kept testing.

On the second test, he cut off Xie Chengzi's leg.

On the third test, he tore Xie Chengzi's heart out.

On the fourth test, he slew Xie Chengzi at his waist.

On the fifth test, he cut off Xie Chengzi's head.

...

After dozens of tests, Xie Chengzi was lying on the ground, shaking with horror, surrounded by his limbs and his organs.

Xie Chengzi didn't lose any of his life force, but his blood Qi was greatly weakened.

Zhang Ruochen stopped testing, pinched the blue lotus seed, and exclaimed, "Great object, what a great object. This will be tremendously useful during a battle."

Xie Chengzi climbed up, groveling on the ground, and said with his shaking voice, "Lord Ruochen... Please show mercy... I will never stand against you or Guanghan Field ever."

The leader of a powerful field was begging for mercy and kneeling in front of a monk with weaker cultivation. Even if Zhang Ruochen spread the news, there would be no one who believed it.

Zhang Ruochen had inspected Xie Chengzi's body constitution, and he found that he had Supreme Complete Body Constitution, practicing remarkable techniques.

Although Xie Chengzi's state of mind had been destroyed, meaning he would never become a supreme saint, he still had the potential to become one of the most top-tier beings under supreme saint, so Zhang Ruochen didn't want to kill him.

At least now, Xie Chengzi was still of some use.

"Get up and absorb the blood Qi back into your body," said Zhang Ruochen apathetically.

Xie Chengzi stood up and performed his techniques. And then, grey evil mist was released from his body, wrapping the broken limbs and organs on the ground and taking in their blood Qi and saint Qi.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to release Xie Chengzi back to Thousand Devil Field to help him do his bidding in secret, but he immediately vetoed that idea as Xie Chengzi had an extraordinary status and would definitely get in contact with the supreme saints from Thousand Devil Field.

As supreme saints, they would definitely see through the disguise.

He could easily manipulate an ordinary monk, even a saint.

However, it was impossible for him to manipulate the leader of a large field, which was why Zhang Ruochen decided to have Xie Chengzi around as his super guard.

The broken limbs and organs turned into ashes as Xie Chengzi's power returned to its peak, giving out icy evil Qi.

Zhang Ruochen said to Blackie, "Give him back his storage objects and weapons."

"Um..." Blackie was a bit reluctant.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Xie Chengzi must've had lots of valuables, so Blackie wouldn't just hand them over easily, so he said, "If you do, I'll give you a hundred drops of Divine Spring water to help your cultivation recover."

"Why didn't you say so earlier? I'm not a petty bird."

Blackie was thrilled. It then gave Xie Chengzi a dark green storage bracelet and looked at Zhang Ruochen with expectations.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and gave Blackie a hundred drops of Divine Spring water, and then, he left Moon Goddess Dojo with Xie Chengzi on a saint carriage.

It was Xie Chengzi who was driving the saint carriage toward Hundred Flower Palace.

Xie Chengzi was wearing Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon armor, covering his entire body, making him look like a black ironman. The saint might coming out of his body intimidated many monks on the streets.

Many monks were pondering the identity of the person sitting in the saint carriage, as he could have someone so powerful as his chauffeur.

Zhang Ruochen was going to Hundred Flower Palace to get his Golden Dragon Carriage back, and meanwhile, he wanted to purchase some precious materials to help the Abyss Ancient Sword form its Taoist body.

Zhang Ruochen held the Emperor Yi Bone Staff in his hand while sitting in his carriage. He smiled and thought, No wonder Amber Ash was ranked first on the Saint King Merits

Rank. The evil spirit became a pinnacle seventh-step saint king after only swallowing one percent of his saint soul. How powerful can it be after it refines all of Amber Ash's saint soul?

Zhang Ruochen couldn't look forward to it more.

Zhang Ruochen took away a part of the evil spirit, and the evil spirit became an upper-middle seventh realm saint king.

Zhang Ruochen had to control half of its spirit, no matter what.

Chapter 1726 - Fairy's Flower

Chapter 1726: Fairy's Flower

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Hundred Flower Palace.

Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin, sat gracefully before Zhang Ruochen, wearing a veil. Her soft hand gently held a pot of the famed Fairy's Flowers wine over flames, cooking it. [1]

Fairy's Flowers wine was made from the flower petals of a hundred types of Saint Flowers handpicked by Ji Fanxin herself, and could only be bought from the auction place of the Hundred Flower Palace at sky-high prices.

Being able to drink the wine was a dream of many of her male fans.

As for Fairy's Flower wine that was personally cooked by Hundred Flowers Fairy, it would not be an exaggeration to say that some would even give up their lives.

Merely being served this cup would make Zhang Ruochen the object of many's jealousies.

Fairy Extreme King and Qian Liwen stood behind Hundred Flower Fairy, seemingly relaxed. Yet their gazes seemed to be sharp and especially on guard against that black metallic figure behind Zhang Ruochen.

Bloop Bloop!

The wine started to boil.

As the fragrance of the wine diffused over the entire garden, it was as though hundreds of flowers had bloomed at once, giving people the illusion that they were seated in a sea of flowers.

Flower petals seemed to have really formed in the air. There was white, pink, crimson, lilac... Flowers of all colors and shapes seemed to be scattered in the air. It was truly Fairy's Flowers.

Hundred Flower Fairy poured out a full cup and passed it to Zhang Ruochen, and told him, "Taste this."

Apart from with Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan, Zhang Ruochen had not drunk much alcohol. Yet, Fairy's Flowers wine that was personally cooked by Hundred Flowers Fairy was extremely attractive to him, and even just a whiff of the scent seemed enough to make one drunk.

A man must never disappoint the beautiful lady or the good wine.

Zhang Ruochen accepted the cup, and lightly sipped a little. Immediately, particles of light flew out from within his body, and it was as though his body had merged to become one with the sea of flowers around him, as if he could start floating.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but exclaim, "Good wine!"

Fairy's Flower wine was comparable to No Oath Broken wine of the Thousand Star Maiden, and some would even say it was better.

Both wines were amazing.

Both ladies were absurdly beautiful.

But while the Thousand Star Maiden only liked drinking, Hundred Flower Fairy knew how to brew it and cook it, so in the way of the wine, there were definitely significant differences.

"No matter how good the wine is, it is still just wine. How can it compare to your acts?" Hundred Flower Fairy asked.

Zhang Ruochen put down the wine cup and asked, "Fairy, what do you mean?"

Hundred Flower Fairy's gorgeous eyes stared at the black metallic figure behind Zhang Ruochen, and said, "Even the leader of the Thousand Devil Field has capitulated to you. If this is not amazing, what is?"

Actually, Zhang Ruochen did not want many people to know of Xie Chengzi, thus that black armor that was given was actually used to cover up his presence.

Yet, Hundred Flower Fairy was able to identify him with just a glance.

Fairy Extreme King and Qian Liwen's faces turned into those of shock, as they did not expect that a devilish figure like Xie Chengzi would turn into a mere guard of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Great! As expected of the Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus. To hide from your eyes would not be something easy to do."

"This time, it had nothing to do with my eyes. This was primarily because I possessed something that resonated with the evil Qi within Xie Chengzi's body."

Hundred Flower Fairy took out a maroon-colored iron ring. On the ring, there were some ancient inscriptions that emitted hair-standing evil Qi.

That evil Qi seemed to be from the same source as that from Xie Chengzi's body.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "This is...?"

The black metallic figure standing behind Zhang Ruochen seemed to be enraged. "So it was you guys that took away my Ring of Bloodlust."

Hundred Flower Fairy lightly said, "Do you still remember the mass grave site with over ten thousand bodies? This ring was found at the bottom of that, and was absorbing the blood and Saint Qi of those female bodies. Right now, it could at most be considered an incomplete weapon."

The black metallic figure quickly bowed towards Zhang Ruochen and said, "Master, the Ring of Bloodlust is a treasure of the Evil Way. I collected countless materials to make it a

reality. If it were to be completed, it would give us immense strength.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, and gestured for him to step down.

Zhang Ruochen certainly understood that the Ring of Bloodlust was amazing as well. Even though it was made using inhumane methods, it was definitely powerful. Thus, he probed, “Such an evil weapon like the Ring of Bloodlust seems to be useless if it remains in Fairy’s hands.”

“Indeed, I am not interested in it. If you want it, you only need to spend thirty million Saint Stones, and I will sell it to you,” Hundred Flower Fairy replied.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Thirty million Saint Stones is enough to purchase a Fifth-Yao Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon. Fairy, given our friendship, do you really need to rip me off?”

“Do you mean that this Ring of Bloodlust could not compare to a Fifth-Yao Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon?”

Hundred Flower Fairy stared at the black metallic figure.

The black metallic figure stepped up and said, “Master, I can pay up. We must purchase the Ring of Bloodlust.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned, and chided, “Know your place. Step down.”

Thirty million was not too difficult for Zhang Ruochen to pay up.

However, if he could bargain and save some money, why not?

However, through his reaction, Hundred Flower Fairy had certainly understood that the value of the Ring of Bloodlust was definitely way more than thirty million. It would be impossible to bargain any further.

His only hope was that she did not add to the price.

Zhang Ruochen quickly agreed. “Fine, it’s a deal for thirty million Saint Stones then.”

Before giving Hundred Flower Fairy a chance to add to the price, Zhang Ruochen raised his hand and, using spatial powers, grabbed the ring.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had moved, Fairy Extreme King mobilized his Saint Qi and his Saint Might rushed towards Zhang Ruochen.

“Stop,” Hundred Flower Fairy lightly declared.

Thud!

Zhang Ruochen threw a storage sack containing thirty million over right in front of Hundred Flower Fairy.

Hundred Flower Fairy did not even look at the storage sack, and stared at Zhang Ruochen, her beautiful eyes smiling.

“What a move! Seems like you are the notorious Lin Yue. Instead of thirty million Saint Stones, give me one thousand drops of the Divine Spring!”

As she was a Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus, the Divine Spring was rather important to her.

“I knew you would eventually find out.”

Zhang Ruochen continued, “However, we had already decided on the price. So that is that.”

“Fine!”

Hundred Flower Fairy took out the Golden Dragon Carriage, and held it in her palms, “This Nine-dragon Carriage, do you want it back?”

“Of course,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Hundred Flower Fairy said, “Then use Divine Spring to exchange for it.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly, and retorted, “When I was at my lowest, Fairy lent a helping hand. I have always remembered this and was deeply grateful for that. As such, I firmly thought that Fairy was not so easily moved by benefits. Yet... Isn't what Fairy is doing now trying to take advantage of me?”

“You don’t need to praise me so. I am not that much of a saint.”

Immediately after saying that, Hundred Flower Fairy replied, “Although, I would definitely not take advantage of you. You owed me one hundred and seventy-two million Saint Stones. Yet I will only request five thousand drops of the Divine Spring for you to retrieve this Nine-dragon Carriage. We know that in the market, every drop of the Divine Spring costs thirty thousand Saint Stones, so this is already a really good price.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No, no. Although there is a market price, the reality is that no one will even sell it. Has Fairy seen anyone sell it herself? The one hundred and seventy-two million Saint Stones that I owed you will be returned in full now.”

Hundred Flower Fairy frowned lightly, and bargained, “Four thousand drops.”

Zhang Ruochen took out another storage sack and passed it to Hundred Flower Fairy while smiling. “A total of a hundred and eighty million Saint Stones. The extra 8 million Saint Stones are a present for Fairy’s extensive support back then.”

Hundred Flower Fairy was a little upset, and complained, “You collected so much Divine Spring. Is it really that difficult to sell me just four thousand drops?”

Zhang Ruochen’s smile disappeared, and he bitterly replied, “If I really had over a hundred thousand drops of the Divine Spring, given our relationship, I wouldn’t mind selling even ten thousand drops to you. However, truthfully speaking, I was only collecting it on behalf of someone else. The remaining Divine Spring does not even amount to ten thousand drops.”

Hundred Flower Fairy thoughtfully asked, “Someone else? Was it Thousand Star Maiden or Mo Xiaogu?”

Fairy Tianchu’s figure floated before Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, and he smiled, before shaking his head and replying, “I can’t tell anything about that. I hope you can understand.”

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had been so sincere, Hundred Flower Fairy did not press the question, and returned the

Golden Dragon Carriage to him, saying, “Now it is returned to its rightful owner.”

Receiving the Golden Dragon Carriage, Zhang Ruochen was delighted, and said, “To be frank, when you were riding on the Golden Dragon Carriage, you looked so majestic, like a beautiful empress riding out to survey her lands. Yet, I am quite confused, wouldn’t that reveal our cooperation? Are you not afraid of revenge by Heaven Field?”

Hundred Flower Fairy replied, “On the fourth level of the Truth Godly Palace’s Misty Sea, I came to understand the fact that as cultivators, we must follow our heart, and not always be restricted. Even a dragon that kept lying low in the abyss for too long would lose its edge, being accustomed to the life there and never flying in the nine skies again. The revenge by Heaven Field would naturally follow, but isn’t that also a challenge for me to overcome? Moreover, Thousand Pistil Field is a main member of the faction led by Demon God Field. We are not afraid of Heaven Field.”

“Fairy has already reached the fourth level?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

One must know that even Zhang Ruochen was still on the third level. Even then, his level of cultivation of the Way of Truth was already leaps and bounds ahead of 99 percent of the practitioners in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

As for the fourth level, it was perhaps something only the ten Godly Disciples could achieve.

Hundred Flower Fairy explained, “The last time I secluded myself for refinement, I managed to understand the third level of the Truth Godly Palace, and thus took a look at the Fourth level.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “It is still strange. Given Fairy’s cultivation, and your understanding of the Way of Truth, you could reach the eighth, or even the ninth level of the Ocean...why are you still stuck on the seventh?”

Hundred Flower Fairy stared at Zhang Ruochen, and countless flower petals appeared, surrounding them. The other figures

disappeared.

Only then, Hundred Flower Fairy spoke. “Because of the Mysteries of Truth.”

Zhang Ruochen’s pupils shrunk.

Hundred Flower Fairy continued, “Although I said that as a cultivator, we must follow our heart, that doesn’t mean we are to push ourselves on a path of no return. When you were crossing the Ocean of Truth, you were too outstanding!”

....

TL note:

[1] Cooking wine would be strange to most of us, since generally, we would prefer alcohol served neat, straight up, or on the rocks, but traditionally wine in ancient China should be drunk warm, as it supposedly brings out the flavor more. Historically speaking, those ancient wines typically have very low alcohol content due to the primitive fermentation techniques, and warm wine would be absorbed faster than cold wine since it stimulates blood flow to the stomach etc, so the wine would feel stronger than it actually is. Of course, contextually the need to cook wine in this story is to bring out the atmosphere and serve as plot devices.

Chapter 1727 - Big Order

Chapter 1727: Big Order

It was thus undeniable that Hundred Flower Fairy too possessed some Mysteries of Truth.

However, the fact that she could so easily tell him this secret was beyond Zhang Ruochen's expectations.

Hundred Flower Fairy continued speaking. "After merely one year of cultivating the Way of Truth, you could already pass the sixth level of the ocean. Many people could have guessed that you have obtained Mysteries of Truth. Given your current cultivation level, there are many who could kill you even if they are not a Supreme Saint. Yet, even among the Supreme Saints, some of them would surely possess Mysteries of Truth. If they were to take part in killing you, how confident are you in being able to escape?"

"Thanks for your advice."

Zhang Ruochen expressed his thanks, and then said, "But I am quite confused. Exposing the fact that you possess Mysteries of Truth, are you not afraid that I would take them from you? Or even worse, publicize it and divert other's attention toward you?"

Hundred Flower Fairy gazed at Zhang Ruochen for a short while, and asked, "Are you that type of person?"

"No," Zhang Ruochen replied.

Hundred Flower Fairy said, "I typically have a sharp eye for others. Zhang Ruochen, I know you are not one who would backstab others, at least, the temptation of Mysteries of Truth is not enough for you to do that."

Zhang Ruochen lifted the cup and sipped, before smiling. "It is an honor to be friends with Fairy."

Hundred Flower Fairy continued, "Since we are already friends, why not tell me a secret?"

“What secret?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Hundred Flower Fairy replied, “I would like to know... where is the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?”

Zhang Ruochen’s face tensed up. “Why do you want to know about this?”

Hundred Flower Fairy answered, “My main cultivation is based on the Way of Life. The Divine Sky-connecting Tree has been the creature that throughout history has practiced the Way of Life to the highest level.”

Zhang Ruochen thoughtfully said, “So, it seems like Fairy was aiming for the Divine Sky-connecting Tree all along.”

Hundred Flower Fairy countered, “The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is extremely important to me. Of course, I am also keen to be friends with you. Even if you don’t tell me where the Divine Sky-connecting Tree is, we are still friends.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “A hundred thousand years ago, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had fallen, and had already disappeared.”

The Hundred Flower Fairy evidently knew about this, and argued, “Even if it was cut down, the tree trunk and the roots should have been preserved. To me, the rings on the trunk of the tree are the best guide to the Way of Life, and if I could view them, my cultivation level would surely improve drastically. Should Young Master Ruochen be able to give me some clues as to where it is, I am sure there would be a lot more things we could cooperate on in the future.”

Being called a young master meant that Hundred Flower Fairy already viewed Zhang Ruochen as being on the same level.

Zhang Ruochen’s finger tapped the tabletop as he asked, “Can we really be friends?”

Hundred Flower Fairy replied, “I think, for someone like you, friends are important.”

“Fine! Since Fairy has already said so much, I will be your friend. I do know where the trunk of the Divine Sky-

connecting Tree is. But I can only tell you after we've reached Kunlun's Field."

"I knew you were the right person."

Hundred Flower Fairy's eyes showed a tinge of delight, and she said, "Soon, as practitioners from all the different fields swarm into Kunlun's Field, I will surely be there. At that time, you must be a good host and bring me to visit all the famous landmarks and scenery of Kunlun's Field."

"Being accompanied by the Fairy is an honor in itself." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Zhang Ruochen did not mention the new sapling of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. After all, his relationship with the Hundred Flower Fairy was not that close.

Zhang Ruochen took out a piece of paper with four materials: King-grade Saint Jade Marrow Essence, Celestial Way Blood Stone, Rootless Heavenly Crane Flower, and Void Universe Tears.

Seeing the materials on the paper, Hundred Flower Fairy immediately understood what Zhang Ruochen was about to do, and probed, "You are trying to give body to a weapon spirit, and you are trying to make it top-tiered."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Thousand Pistil Field is a top-tiered world with countless friends and connections. You should be able to find these materials, right?"

Zhang Ruochen had passed a similar list to Su Jing.

Seeing the materials, Su Jing's face had gone completely pale, and he could only tell Zhang Ruochen that he would try his best to collect everything.

Guanghan Field surely wouldn't match Thousand Pistil Field in their connections.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen gave another copy of the list of materials to Hundred Flower Fairy.

Hundred Flower Fairy replied, "King-grade Saint Jade Marrow Essence has strength comparable to a Saint King.

Although it is rare, Hundred Flower Palace does indeed have one.

“Rootless Heavenly Crane Flower is also possible to be found within Thousand Pistils Field.

“Void Universe Tears is a special kind of liquid found floating in the universe. Usually, we can only find 1 droplet at once. Yet you are requesting a hundred droplets... I will try my best.

“Celestial Way Blood Stones are even rarer. Typically they can only be found by Supreme Saints. Thus, I cannot guarantee that I can find one.

“Actually, if your Saint Weapon is not a Supreme Saint Weapon, there is no need for you to give it the best body. That would make gathering the materials much easier.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “If I am going to make an attempt, I must make sure it is the best. If I really cannot find the materials required, I will then take a step back.

“Oh and additionally, help me find twelve Saint King level Elephant Souls.”

When attacking the Yin and Yang Palace, Zhang Ruochen had killed the rising star of the Black Demon Field, Zhan Yu. From within his body, Zhang Ruochen had extracted twelve dragon souls.

If he could now find twelve elephant souls, Zhang Ruochen was confident that he could master the 11th Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Moreover, with those souls, Zhang Ruochen was confident that he would have a power spike.

Hundred Flower Fairy asked, “Do you know how much that costs? It would be almost a hundred million Saint Stones. Adding that to the previous order of rare materials, even if you defeated the Yin and Yang Palace and had a windfall, it should not be that easy for you to take out that amount, right?”

Zhang Ruochen took out countless storage devices and showed them to Hundred Flower Fairy, and replied, “In the Truth Heavenly Domain, I killed some people, and from them,

I got quite a number of items that I could sell. Perhaps Fairy could help me check how much these are worth?”

Before Hundred Flower Fairy were a few hundred different storage devices.

This guy...He really killed a lot of people.

Hundred Flower Fairy waved her hand, and the petals around them disappeared. Then, Qian Liwen, who was now standing behind her, walked up and quickly estimated the value of each and every item.

The more he checked, the more his face changed into one of shock and astonishment.

After a good while, Qian Liwen transmitted a thought to Hundred Flower Fairy, and spoke a few sentences.

Hundred Flower Fairy's eyes reflected surprise, and she said, “Seems like you don't just have the two identities of Zhang Ruochen and Lin Yue. Even the person who killed the leader of Heavenly Track Field, Feng Jian, was you.”

From the items that Zhang Ruochen had taken out, Hundred Flower Fairy caught a glimpse at Zhang Ruochen's many secrets.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to not mind. The more secrets they knew of each other, the more secure their partnership would be.

“So, does Hundred Flower Palace dare to buy these off me?”

“We dare. Why would we not dare? Of course, these will be difficult to deal with compared to normal goods, so the price we are willing to pay is a bit lower,” Hundred Flower Fairy replied.

Zhang Ruochen realized that this Fairy was not someone who merely possessed beauty and cultivation talent, she was also very smart when it came to dealing with others. To become the leader of a Field, one must really be talented in all areas.

He had probably underestimated her before.

Qian Liwen finished checking all the items and informed Hundred Flower Fairy, “Lady, the items that Zhang Ruochen has taken out amount to a total of about Two hundred Sixty Four million.”

“Two hundred million! We will take it all!” Hundred Flower Fairy offered.

Zhang Ruochen bitterly smiled. She had simply omitted over sixty million Saint Stones. One must understand that the estimated price would be a conservative estimate, meaning that if the items were sold, they would usually carry a higher price.

That said, most of the things here could only be sold discreetly. One thing was for sure: they could not be sold from Guanghan Field’s shops. As such, the only way for Zhang Ruochen to get rid of them would be to sell them to Hundred Flower Palace.

Zhang Ruochen agreed. “Alright! Let’s go with that. These will be considered the down payment. Once you find the materials, I will pay up the rest.”

This was absolutely a big order!

Usually, only when dealing with Supreme Saints would there be such huge numbers involved. Fairy Supreme King and Qian Liwen revealed looks of delight as they both knew that Hundred Flower Palace had really earned a lot this time.

Hundred Flower Fairy personally negotiating was indeed easier than them doing so themselves.

Zhang Ruochen stood up, ready to leave.

Hundred Flower Fairy spoke. “I heard from my elder martial sister that you want to find Earthly Kill Organization and God of Death Palace?”

“Indeed. Did you catch wind of anything?” Zhang Ruochen was eager to know.

Hundred Flower Fairy nodded, and replied, “You came just at the right time. Just before this, God of Death Palace sent a

message noting that they will be opening a temporary location. Anyone who wishes to place orders could head there.”

Earthly Kill Organization, God of Death Palace, along with Heavenly Assassination Organization, were known as the three big assassination groups. Zhang Ruochen had always wanted to get in contact with them.

However, Earthly Kill Organization and God of Death Palace dared not offend the Truth Godly Palace either, so whenever they took orders in Truth Heavenly Domain, they would be particularly careful.

Every meeting place was temporary, and new customers must be accompanied by older customers.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I want to kill some people. May I ask that Hundred Flower Fairy send someone to accompany me?”

“That would not be necessary. I will be going there myself. Incidentally, I also want some people dead.” Hundred Flower Fairy’s eyes suddenly had a glint of coldness. Her fleeting aura suddenly seemed solemn.

As the night fell, all was dark. It was a moonless night.

Zhang Ruochen wore a metallic mask, and Xie Chengzi withdrew all presence, following behind him.

Hundred Flower Fairy turned into a frail ordinary-looking lady. The three of them headed to the boundary of the Heavenly Capital Mountain.

There were already a number of people there. Most of them wore masks or veils, not wanting to be easily recognized by others. Only a small minority did not seem to care.

They gazed toward the distant curtain of darkness as they quietly waited.

Chapter 1728 - Bounty Ranking

Chapter 1728: Bounty Ranking

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The deafening silence made the atmosphere particularly strange.

A stream of people entered, and the people gathered in the venue increased. Some of them had such a strong presence that even Zhang Ruochen was cautious about them. Those were evidently top-tiered experts.

After about an hour, from within the darkness, a light fluctuation of energy could be felt.

Zhang Ruochen felt it, and looked towards the direction of the disturbance.

Standing beside Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin lightly told him, “They are here!”

Buzzzz...

A fog appeared within the darkness, and quickly expanded.

A black stone then emerged from within. It was like a stone box flying towards them. As the stone box drew closer, the cold Yin Qi became more apparent.

Zhang Ruochen could finally see clearly. It was an ancient stone plaque with a unique material that was bordered by metal. The words on the plaque were as big as a grindstone, yet they were blurred, and it was difficult to recognize them.

On the stone plaque, there were a dozen figures. Each of them wore a black robe and carried a dark purple scythe. The killing aura emitted from their bodies condensed onto a cloud of red.

“Ten Saint level assassins, with two Heavenly King level assassins.” Ji Fanxin transmitted a message to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was curious. “How do you know?”

The twelve assassins had all practiced advanced concealment spells, and even with Zhang Ruochen’s immense spiritual prowess, he could not see their cultivation levels unless he opened his heavenly eyes.

Ji Fanxin explained, “Even though they are all wearing black robes and holding similar scythes, the quality of the robes and the scythes are different.”

Looking carefully, Zhang Ruochen could indeed see the differences.

Within the twelve assassins, two of them had dim inscriptions on their collars and sleeves. It seemed almost like pieces of scales. The other ten assassins only had a light red glow in the same locations.

Not only that, their scythes indeed seemed to be different.

Ji Fanxin continued, “They are the core assassins of the God of Death Palace. Their equipment is all designed for assassination.

“Their robes and scythes are all equipment that can be upgraded. However, to upgrade those, they need to have sufficient assassination credits.”

Zhang Ruochen lightly looked at her. “Fairy, you seem really knowledgeable about them.”

Ji Fanxin smiled. “This is all basic knowledge. The only reason why I am telling you this is because you have been standing out too much. If we encounter any high ranking assassins, it would be best if you stay low.

“Moreover, if you wish to become an assassin of the God of Death Palace, this is also knowledge you must have.”

God of Death Palace was a relatively loose organization, with less than ten percent of their assassins being core members.

As long as one had reached Half-Saint, one could enter the God of Death Palace and become an assassin.

At this moment, one of the Heavenly King Assassins bowed a little, and said, “Good day, customers. Now, please show us the token of the God of Death Palace, before stepping on the Plaque of Yellow Springs. I will bring you to the meeting place.”

The people around all walked up in an orderly fashion.

Ji Fanxin had the token, so Zhang Ruochen, who was accompanied by her, walked onto the Plaque of Yellow Springs without any issues.

At this moment, an explosion occurred.

Turning around, Zhang Ruochen saw that one of the Heavenly Kings had attacked, and with just one attack using his palm, he tackled a goat-headed old man away. Huge amounts of Saint blood spurted from the old man’s mouth.

“How dare you come here without a God of Death Palace’s token. You are asking for it.”

That Heavenly King’s speed was extremely fast, almost as though he was teleporting as he attacked again. This time he hit that old man on the head. Immediately, that old man’s body turned into a crimson red crystal.

Boom!

The crimson crystals exploded, and turned into pieces of red gemstones.

A Saint King level expert was killed within two breaths. That fact shook everyone on the Plaque of Yellow Springs, and many were left trembling.

Zhang Ruochen spoke softly. “He was killed merely because he did not have the token. Wouldn’t that be too harsh?”

Ji Fanxin, however, seemed to feel that there was nothing wrong with it, and justified that assassin’s actions. “Those

without tokens would surely not know the meeting time and place. Yet that person was about to find his way here. Isn't that strange in itself?"

Zhang Ruochen sank deep into thought.

Ji Fanxin continued, "Moreover, they are the God of Death Palace after all. Their job is to kill, so how could they be soft-hearted? Thus, we need to be particularly careful when we head to the meeting place, else we might not be able to return."

When all the customers had boarded the Plaque of Yellow Springs, the bottom of the Plaque lit up with countless inscriptions that gathered into a circular formation.

Whoosh!

The plaque flew off into the darkness.

On the plaque, a curtain of darkness was drawn that could obstruct everyone's senses, causing them to be unable to see what was outside.

Moreover, the inside of the plaque seemed to have a unique force that froze up spiritual powers.

Even as Zhang Ruochen tried to probe the outside with his spiritual powers, he failed.

"God of Death Palace is really careful," Zhang Ruochen softly exclaimed.

The plaque did not fly for too far. After about fifteen minutes, the black curtain disappeared and one could finally see the outside scenery.

In the middle of the air, there was a huge graveyard floating. It looked like a crouching tortoise, and there was a dark red glow being emitted from it.

At the top of the graveyard, there was a three-hundred-meter-tall human skeleton. Within its bones there were all kinds of gemstones, giving off a rainbow glow like a nebula.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that that skeleton and the gemstones could obstruct surveillance from even Heavenly

Mysteries, and could suppress spiritual powers of anyone around, essentially hiding this location.

After entering this region, one could no longer communicate with people outside.

Zhang Ruochen transmitted a thought to Ji Fanxin. “This place is too strange! What if the God of Death Palace wanted to kill any of us? We couldn’t escape from this place at all.”

Ji Fanxin replied, “The fact that the God of Death Palace could become one of the three assassination organization is a testament to it’s reputation. As long as we do not actively seek out trouble, we should be fine.”

The Plaque of Yellow Springs flew into the tomb.

Only after everyone had alighted did the plaque fly to a lake and stay on the lakeside.

On the lakeside, there were already over a dozen plaques.

Evidently, there were other gathering points to come to this tomb.

Within the tomb, it was spacious. There were lakes, corridors, huts, buildings, hills, cliffs, and an abyss. It was also well lit with lanterns, with a huge moon above.

That moon was actually a huge Saint Jade with a diameter over a few dozen feet.

“This place is so scenic, is this really just a temporary meeting place for the God of Death Palace?”

“This place doesn’t look like a place where people’s lives are traded.”

....

For those who were here for the first time, they were all amazed by the scenery.

Yet Zhang Ruochen felt chills running down his spine. That was because, after opening his Heavenly Eyes, he found that everywhere seemed dangerous. Even the gardens that seemed beautiful were filled with deadly inscriptions.

If the God of Death Palace utilized these inscriptions, Zhang Ruochen was sure that he could not escape.

“We will head to the Life and Death Cliff first,” Ji Fanxin said.

“What is that?”

“That is where the customers leave their orders.”

The Life and Death Cliff was situated right below that bright moon, and was over three hundred and seventy feet tall.

As Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin arrived, the Life and Death Cliff was already crowded with large numbers of people. However, only a few of them were here to make orders. Most others were here to watch any interesting changes on the Bounty Rankings.

On the cliff, there were many different regions. Every region had a name and a description attached to it.

At around three hundred and sixty feet, Zhang Ruochen found his own name.

“Bounty Ranking: 18. Zhang Ruochen. Ex-Crown Prince of Kunlun’s Field Sacred Central Empire. Now he serves as the Priest of Guanghan Field, and cultivates both Space and Time...”

In that area, there was a brief description of Zhang Ruochen with about two hundred words.

However, there was a portrait of Zhang Ruochen there. It was lively and accurate, and was obviously made by a master. Whoever drew it must have had close contact with Zhang Ruochen before.

“Two hundred and seventy thousand saint stones. My life is so expensive.” Zhang Ruochen did not seem to be afraid. Instead, he smiled.

Ji Fanxin rolled her eyes and said, “And this is merely the God of Death Palace’s bounty. In the other assassination organizations you are also quite famous. The total bounty for you is over a billion. Luckily you were still at Truth Heavenly Domain. If you left there, I’m afraid even a Supreme Saint level expert would bare their fangs at you.”

Zhang Ruochen shifted his gaze to the top of the Life and Death Cliff, and saw that the bounty was about three million. It was about ten times his own bounty.

“Heart Demon! What did this guy do for people to offer so much to kill him?” Zhang Ruochen curiously enquired.

Ji Fanxin’s expression changed, seemingly quite fearful of that person, and replied, “That is a devil that we must never offend. It was rumored that he could control other people’s hearts. As long as he stared into someone’s eyes, that person would become his puppet, and would be controlled by him. Even Nine-step Saint Kings are not exempt.

“The key is that no one has really seen him before, and no one knows what he looks like. The only fact we learned in the past was that the number of Nine-step Saint Kings he controlled was over twenty.

“Heart Demon was the same as you, and only rose to fame in the past few years. His fame knows no bounds, and many Supreme Saints have wanted to kill him. Yet none can find him.”

Zhang Ruochen exhaled a breath of cold air. To enslave over twenty Nine-step Saint Kings by himself...didn’t that mean that he could easily destroy factions? Or even wreak havoc in an entire Field?

Chapter 1729 - The Pen That Kills

Chapter 1729: The Pen That Kills

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Why aren’t there Supreme Saints on the Bounty Rankings?”
Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin replied, “Without hundreds of millions of Saint Stones, one is not even qualified to order the assassination of a Supreme Saint. Even for ancient dynasties, that would be financially difficult. Moreover, even if there is really such a bounty ranking, it would not be something that we could easily see at our level.”

At this moment, a thin lady dressed in black carried a metallic plate and walked to Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

On the plate, there was a thick stack of paper and bronze pens.

Life and Death Runes!

Every Rune would indicate an order to kill someone.

Ji Fanxin stretched out her two fingers and picked up a piece of the rune paper, and started writing.

After a short while, she gracefully put the pen down, and threw the rune towards the Life and Death Cliff.

Boom!

The rune paper exploded while near the cliff, and turned into a rain of light.

Following this, a name appeared on the cliff – Liancheng Baili.

Next to the name, there was a description:

Liancheng Baili, a member of the Heavenly Assassination Organization with a cultivation level of Eight-step Saint King. He is ranked 84 on the Killer Heavenly King ranking, and has completed 14595 out of 14600 missions.

Liancheng Baili has a total of 3 Death Emissaries.

The first is....

...

The description was detailed, and included even the Saint Weapons that Liancheng Baili used, the cultivation techniques he practiced, and the Saint Spells he had mastered.

After seeing these descriptions, Zhang Ruochen's eyes lit up, and he mumbled to himself, "Seems like that day he was the one who helped Shang Ziyang to attack me. Being able to enter the rankings of Killer Heavenly Kings, he isn't a simple character."

Not only that, but the person who tried to assassinate Pill Spirit King was actually Liancheng Baili's third Death Emissary.

Seemed like Ji Fanxin had already checked these thoroughly before ordering this assassination.

The bounty she gave was a hundred million Saint Stones.

Before Ji Fanxin ordered, there were already two orders under his name, for bounties of thirty-five million and fifty million respectively. Evidently there were others who wanted him dead.

With that, Liancheng Baili's life was already worth one hundred and eighty-five million Saint Stones, and his ranking on the Bounty Ranking rose to 67.

Such a price was rather attractive, and many Nine-step Saint King would be tempted to kill him.

"To put a bounty of one hundred million, who is she?"

"To be able to name such a price, she must be from a big faction. It would be better that we stay away."

...

Below the Life and Death Cliff, many gazes were fixed on Ji Fanxin. Their gazes were all different. Some were that of doubt, some were cautious, and some were deep in thought.

Although Ji Fanxin had cautioned Zhang Ruochen to stay low, what she had done was not staying low either.

Ji Fanxin looked at Zhang Ruochen, and lightly smiled. "It's your turn! Just write your target on the Life and Death Rune along with the price.

"After throwing the rune out, the information will be recorded and reflected on all other Life and Death Cliffs of the God of Death Palace in other regions as well."

Zhang Ruochen picked up a Life and Death Rune on the plate and started writing.

Boom!

As the rune exploded, there was a new name that appeared on the Bounty Ranking.

Tenth on the Bounty Ranking, Space Divine Pavilion Leader, Gong Ziyang. Bounty: Three hundred million.

Below the usually quiet Life and Death Cliff, that new name raised havoc.

"Three hundred million! If I had so many Saint Stones, I could even raise an army to fight for a city, and establish a country!"

"Gong Ziyang has had good connections all along. Not only that, but many factions are in need of his help. Who would put such a high bounty on his name?"

"Gong Ziyang must have really screwed up. Surely he has offended a super big faction."

Countless eyes swept onto Zhang Ruochen.

Some people even used their spiritual powers to scan him, hoping to see his face that was hidden under disguise.

Some others' gazes were serious, and if this wasn't in the territory of the God of Death Palace, they would have already

attacked Zhang Ruochen.

That would be no surprise. Given the number of people here, surely some of them would be Gong Ziyang's friends, and perhaps even Gong Ziyang himself was here.

Zhang Ruochen did not seem affected, and picked up another Life and Death Rune. He started writing again.

Boom!

The rune paper flew out, and one more name appeared on the Bounty Ranking.

Bounty Ranking, number 10, Soul Field Leader, Lian Xi.
Bounty: Three Hundred Million.

Shocking!

This time, the crowd truly turned boisterous, and even more people's gazes turned cold as they glared at Zhang Ruochen.

"That is so illogical! Someone wants Fairy Lian Xi dead? If people knew about this, all of Heaven Field would be shocked."

"Fairy Lian Xi is so beautiful, even the most cold-blooded assassin would probably not want to attack her."

"If you dare, show me your real appearance. You've got to pass through me if you want to kill Fairy Lian Xi."

A man dressed in yellow robes jumped out. Evidently, he was one of the admirers of Fairy Lian Xi. He dashed straight at Zhang Ruochen, with a silvery-white glow on his fists.

Yet, when he was about 10 steps away from Zhang Ruochen, a core member of the God of Death Palace suddenly appeared.

This assassin seemed a little unique. On the black robe that he wore, there was a six-winged Wyvern. The killing aura he emitted seemed to have made the surrounding temperature suddenly drop.

Just that killing aura was enough to stop that yellow-robed man dead in his tracks.

“This is the God of Death Palace. Whoever dares to ignore our rules, I, Qin Kai, will send him off. Free of Charge,” the man in black said calmly.

The yellow-robed man’s face turned white as a sheet of paper, and with his trembling lips, he uttered, “Qin... Kai, Killer Heavenly King Ranking 21st, Qin Kai....”

At that moment, that black-robed man became the absolute center of attention.

Everyone, especially those near to him, felt chills running down their spines.

Even Zhang Ruochen seemed to be a little surprised. One must understand, even Liancheng Baili, such a powerful foe, was only 84th on the ranking.

On the Killer Heavenly King rankings, they would only record a hundred Saint King level assassins. Every one of them was extremely powerful, and the higher their ranking, the more incredible they were.

After stopping that yellow-robed man, Qin Kai’s figure disappeared. It was as though he had melted into thin air.

“He’s so good... With my cultivation now, I could not even see how he left,” Zhang Ruochen whispered.

Ji Fanxin said, “Now you know that there are always people better than you? Given your current cultivation, there are many people below Supreme Saint that could easily defeat you. Whoever you met in the Truth Heavenly Domain are only the younger generation. The older generation of Saint Kings is much more deadly than them.”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged. Those people were completely irrelevant. He had obtained the single strand of Saint Monk Xumi’s beard anyway, and his cultivation would drastically improve soon.

When his cultivation increased by two or three levels, how many under the level of Supreme Saint could suppress him?

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen stretched out his hand, and picked up another Life and Death Rune from the plate.

Ji Fanxin's eyes were wide open, and she asked, "You are still going to order more?"

Even a single sum of a hundred million was already a huge number to world leaders like Ji Fanxin. Yet, Zhang Ruochen had already spent six hundred million with no signs of stopping. How was this not surprising?

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "My Golden Dragon Carriage is surely worth no less than a billion, right?"

Just as he said that, he wrote down another name.

With that, one more name appeared on the 10th rank of Bounty Ranking: Divine Blood War Palace Leader, Xun Ya. Bounty: Three hundred million Saint Stones.

Ignoring the hostile gazes, Zhang Ruochen continued writing the fourth name.

Boom!

The rune paper once again crashed into the cliff and turned into a rain of light.

Following which, on the 7th place of the Bounty Ranking, Shang Ziyang's name appeared with a bounty of five hundred million.

Zhang Ruochen hesitated, and did not continue to write more names. He sighed.

Bai Su, Second Senior Brother Apprentice, Third Senior Brother Apprentice, Fifth Senior Sister Apprentice... Their deaths had always been an ache in Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Zhang Ruochen had considered doing the same, and ordering the deaths of Shang Ziyang's family and friends.

However...

When it came to really making the decision, Zhang Ruochen did not do it. He could not bear to carry out such a massacre against the innocent.

Shang Ziyang's family and friends might not all be evil, and not all of them were Zhang Ruochen's enemies. Perhaps many of them were kind-hearted people.

“What are you thinking about?” Ji Fanxin asked.

“Nothing.”

Zhang Ruochen tightly gripped the pen in his hand, and slowly put it down.

This is a pen that kills, I must use it carefully.

Ji Fanxin said, “We must leave quickly. The four people you have ordered killed all belong to the Heavens Field Faction. There must be many of their people here.”

“Let’s go!”

Just as Zhang Ruochen turned around, a black-robed assassin appeared before them.

Given the inscriptions on his sleeves and collar, he must be a Killer Heavenly King.

With his sharp voice, he informed them, “You two customers, please don’t leave yet. Elder Qi has just informed me to tell you two to meet him.”

Zhang Ruochen felt a light killing aura coming from this person, and was on alert as he asked, “Why must we meet him?”

“You have made orders, so you must go to him to make down-payment.” The black-robed figure’s killing aura disappeared, and was instead replaced by a smile.

Chapter 1730 - Mirage Venom

Chapter 1730: Mirage Venom

Following the assassin, Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, and Xie Chengzi reached a weaponsmithing building within the tomb.

This building was four levels high, and was made out of jet black metal. Every inch of it was covered with Formation inscriptions.

From within the windows, there was some black mist spewing out.

Ji Fanxin was doubtful, and said, "From what I know, this is not the location for making the down payment."

The black-robed assassin said, "You are VIP who have made orders worth over one hundred million. Your information must be protected, so Elder Qi will personally attend to you."

After this, he looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Please follow me in."

Ji Fanxin was even more suspicious, and asked, "We came together, why do we not go in together?"

The black-robed assassin bowed to Ji Fanxin, and apologized. "Sorry, this is one of the rules. We must attend to our VIPs one-to-one."

Ji Fanxin had come to God of Death Palace no more than three times, so she was not that familiar with the rules either.

Hearing that, she did not want to break any rules, and thus did not speak further.

Ji Fanxin quietly transmitted a thought to Zhang Ruochen, and said, "This seems suspicious. You must be careful."

"Thanks for your reminder."

Bold as he was, Zhang Ruochen walked into the building without hesitation.

Creak.

As the door closed, the assassin did not enter the building. He stood guard outside the door, looking at Ji Fanxin calmly.

Within the building, there were sixteen bronze lamps that were at about the same height as an adult man. It was like sixteen eyes floating in the misty room, seeming oddly sinister.

In the air, there was a light touch of fragrance.

That fragrance was all too familiar to Zhang Ruochen. It was the smell of Honghua vine.

Even then, Zhang Ruochen still held his breath and closed all his pores. He was particularly cautious.

One must understand that being a top-tiered assassin organization, they must be experts at using poison, so he must stay on guard.

Sitting on a Xuan Ice Saint Jade bed, Elder Qi breathed in deeply, and instantly all the poisonous mist was sucked into him. It was as though his organs were the size of an entire world, being able to hold massive amounts of substances.

The space within the building immediately became clear.

Opening his eyes, Elder Qi smiled. "I just heard that someone made a big order worth a massive amount of Saint Stones. I thought it was one of the godly disciples. Never did I think that it was such a young master."

Zhang Ruochen stood with his hands behind his back, and asked, "So did Elder think that only the ten godly disciples could have so much money?"

"Haha! You're right! It seems like this old man has underestimated you youngsters. Even us who have lived for over a millennium seem so poor compared to you guys." Elder Qi bitterly smiled.

Elder Qi must have been a rather talented individual. Given the density of the black mist just now, one could guess that he

was at least a Seven-step Saint King.

Such an old person could be more dangerous than a genius.

Elder Qi seemed to be an easygoing man, and he smiled.

“Given the huge amount of Saint Stones, we have two options for you.”

“Which two?” Zhang Ruochen inquired.

Elder Qi said, “First would be for you to give us the full payment. If you do not have so many Saint Stones, you could also use equipment as payment. If within one year, the target has still not been assassinated, we would return the amount in full.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What about the second type?”

Elder Qi said, “The second is to pay a certain ratio of the down payment. When our assassins have killed the target, you shall pay the remainder.”

“What is the ratio you require?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Elder Qi replied, “At least ten percent.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Alright, I will go with the second payment method.”

To kill Shang Ziyang, Gong Ziyang, Lian Xi, and Xun Ya would be no easy feat. The main purpose of ordering their assassination here was to give them some trouble such that they would not spend all their efforts on him.

Of course, for that price, if some of them could really be assassinated, Zhang Ruochen would feel that it was worth it too.

In this situation, of course, Zhang Ruochen would select the second payment method.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen did not have so many Saint Stones on him anyway, and he would definitely not use the Golden Dragon Carriage as collateral.

Elder Qi then explained, “However, to use the second method of payment, we need certain conditions to be fulfilled.”

“What conditions?”

Elder Qi replied, “We must know your true identity, and thus we can estimate if you have the capabilities of paying the remaining amount.”

“I see.”

Zhang Ruochen thought about it for a while and asked, “So I heard that the God of Death Palace views their reputation very highly, and would never reveal their customer’s information?”

“Indeed, that is how we run this place.”

Zhang Ruochen removed his mask, and his facial features changed, revealing his real face. “So I wonder if the Priest of Guanghan Field, Zhang Ruochen, is a good enough identity?”

Elder Qi’s old eyes focused on Zhang Ruochen and he said, “So you are the famous Time and Space descendant. No wonder you could order such a huge amount. Please give me a moment to read your information and make an estimate of your credit.”

Taking out a magic cube, Elder Qi inserted large amounts of Qi within. Immediately after, countless words appeared on the surface of the cube.

Following which, Elder Qi smiled. “Seems like Young Master Ruochen is also the Crown Prince of the Kunlun’s Field Sacred Central Empire. With two Supreme Saint level masters, and controlling a world, it is not impossible for you to pay up this huge sum.”

“Seems like your information is quite up-to-date!”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the two Supreme Saints that Elder Qi was referring to were the two Divine Beasts from the Guarding Dragon Pavillion. They had appeared when attacking the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

“As an assassination organization, information is of the utmost importance. If young master Ruochen wishes to purchase information, you could also cooperate with us.”

With that said, Elder Qi continued, “However, the Saint Stones in question are a huge amount, so we still need to verify your

identity to prevent anyone from pretending to be you.”

“How are you going to verify that?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Elder Qi replied. “We just need one droplet of your blood. No matter how you can change your appearance, your blood remains the same.”

Clang!

From the stone wall behind Elder Qi, a lanky lady walked out. She was like a humanoid blob of water, as she seemed semi-transparent. However, Zhang Ruochen could feel signs of life from her.

She carried a plate.

On the plate, there was a silver dagger and a cup.

The lady’s face gradually solidified and her skin seemed almost metallic. She said, “Mister, please.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the dagger, and was just about to prick his finger with it when he realized something. For the sake of safety, he put the dagger back onto the plate.

Whish!

One of his right-hand fingers lightly swiped on the index finger of his left hand, and a light line of blood could be seen.

Drip!

A single drop of blood dripped into the cup.

Just as this happened, Zhang Ruochen felt a pain coming from the wound.

Normally it was natural to feel pain when the skin was being cut.

However, Zhang Ruochen realized that the pain he felt was definitely more than usual.

This was unnatural!

Zhang Ruochen’s face changed, and he quickly activated his Qi to block his blood from flowing out from his hand.

At this very moment, that lanky lady suddenly turned murderous, and condensed into a silvery sword, slicing straight at Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

With his reaction speed, Zhang Ruochen jumped back and retreated.

Boom!

His body was unable to break through the door of the building. On the door, a large amount of inscriptions surfaced, and turned into a gust of Saint Qi, blowing him away.

Just as he was about to be stabbed by the silver sword, Zhang Ruochen's figure disappeared. He had teleported to a corner of the building.

The sword flew back to Elder Qi's hands as he stood up. With a friendly smile, Elder Qi praised, "It is rare that a youngster like you could be so cautious. Just as you entered this building, you stopped your breathing and closed your pores. That rendered my hypnotic fragrance useless.

"Just now, there was poison on the dagger. As long as you even lightly cut your skin with it, you would have died within seconds. Not using the dagger made me disappointed too.

"However, no matter how cautious you are, you would fall victim eventually to someone who tries to kill you.

Zhang Ruochen realized that his entire left arm had lost sensation, and was turning transparent. His skin seemed to have turned transparent, as his blood vessels, meridians, and bones were all visible.

That numbing sensation started to spread to the rest of his body.

He'd been poisoned!

"What.. is this? What did you do?"

Zhang Ruochen started exercising the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture to suppress the poison.

Elder Qi walked slowly towards Zhang Ruochen, with the smile that had now turned treacherous, and proudly told him,

“It’s useless. This is a special poison from the God of Death Palace: Mirage Venom.

“It is tasteless and odorless, impossible for you to detect.

“Even if it was floating in front of you, any creatures below the cultivation level of a Supreme Saint would find it impossible to detect. The moment you cut your skin, the poison penetrated through Saint Qi protecting you and invaded your body.

“Are you feeling numb? That you are gradually losing your senses?

“Look at your arm, it is gradually turning transparent. Haha, soon your entire body, including your consciousness and Saint Soul, will turn translucent. Just like a mirage.

“Of course, even if you turn translucent, you are still valuable. I will forge you into my sword, and my Sword Spirit’s power will surely increase by leaps and bounds.”

Chapter 1731 - : Elder Qi

Chapter 1731: Elder Qi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

As the Saint Qi within his body followed methods of the eighth layer of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scriptures, Zhang Ruochen could unexpectedly suppress the spread of the poison.

Every time he attained a new layer of the scriptures, his Saint Qi's quality increased.

Evidently, the eighth layer of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture had already reached a level where he was immune to poison.

However, the mirage venom was too powerful, that was why it could poison even Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen moved quickly. Secretly he mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie, and started to break down the venom.

Elder Qi was extremely confident in the venom, and believed that no creature under the cultivation of a Supreme Saint could suppress the poison.

Not only that, but Elder Qi had also received detailed information about how Zhang Ruochen's strength was not weak at all, and that he could manipulate space and time.

That was why he did not dare to get near to Zhang Ruochen, and instead stood about ten feet out, waiting for the full effect of the poison to take place.

At that time, he didn't even need to move a finger, and Zhang Ruochen would have already been rendered defenseless by the poison.

“Why? Why... do you want to kill me?”

Zhang Ruochen pretended that the poison was spreading into his body, with the trembling on his hands getting more and more obvious. In reality, he was merely trying to delay for more time.

Elder Qi’s smile turned even more prideful, and he said, “Your targets were too obvious. It was clear that you were targeting the younger generation of Heaven Field. How could I let you off?”

“Are you a member of the God of Death Palace, or are you a part of Heaven Field?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“I am both.”

Elder Qi laughed after replying, and continued, “Are the two identities mutually exclusive? Haha! Youngster, you are too inexperienced after all. You need to learn to hide yourself. The more you stand out, the faster you will die. The more you hide, the more unexpected your strikes can be.”

Zhang Ruochen groaned, “From what I knew, the God of Death Palace did not belong to any Field, and was independent. I am a VIP of the God of Death Palace. If you kill me, do you think the higher-ups will let you off?”

Elder Qi looked at Zhang Ruochen as though he was looking at an idiot, and replied, “This old man has already been here for so long. With my status, I could give any reason and pass over this incident. For example, you did not want to pay up and wanted to run away. I accidentally killed you. Isn’t that perfectly normal? Don’t you think?”

Gradually, Elder Qi realized that something was off, and he frowned. “It has been so long, the poison should have already spread across your entire body. How can you still speak?”

Whoosh!

Elder Qi was worried about accidents, and immediately wielded his sword to attack Zhang Ruochen.

As the sword assaulted Zhang Ruochen, it swirled in the air and turned into a ball of Sword Qi.

This old fart is too decisive. I am still breaking down the poison in my body...what to do?

Just as Zhang Ruochen got distracted, the poison in his body started acting up again, and half his body turned numb.

“Darn it! This poison is so difficult to break down. Demonic Sound, block him now!” Zhang Ruochen called out.

From his back, an attractive figure emerged into a gorgeous beauty.

With a blood moon-like Endless Blade, she blocked the assault.

Clang!

The Sword Qi was smashed apart.

As the sword and Endless Blade clashed together, the silver light and the blood light made a sharp contrast as the two mountain-like presences clashed. Even the space within the building shook a little.

Demonic Sound stepped back a few steps, and her pretty face smiled. “Old man, seems like your cultivation is pretty high to think of attacking my master.”

Elder Qi had never expected that there would be such an unexpected intruder.

When his eyes looked towards Zhang Ruochen, his face changed again.

He could see that Zhang Ruochen’s limb was slowly recovering.

Could it...

Could it be that he can cleanse the poison?

With his vast experience, Elder Qi quickly calmed down and prepared to battle. From within his body, a thick demonic fog emerged, and his strength seemed to have increased drastically. He looked like a towering demonic overlord, and coldly asked, “Girl, that blade must be Wang Tian’s Endless Blade, right?”

“Not bad...seems like you are not blind! Haha.”

Demonic Sound was not at all afraid, and strands of her hair turned into vines with lightning wrapped around them. Like snakes, they slithered out and occupied the entire building.

“Even such a powerful youngster like Wang Tian also got killed by you. Everyone has underestimated you, Zhang Ruochen. Today, this old man will kill you! ”

Holding his sword, Elder Qi drew a circle.

The light from the sword seemed to fill the circle, making it into a glorious full moon.

Whoosh!

The full moon condensed into a single point, and in a split second, it arrived before Demonic Sound.

Demonic Sound had already activated the perfect Fourth-Yao level power of the Endless Blade, and as she slashed out, the edge of the sword smashed right at the point of light. At that instance, an immense force transmitted to her limbs, and almost caused her to use her blade.

“Such a powerful old man. His cultivation level must be that of a seventh-step Saint King.”

Demonic Sound was preparing to use Rules of Truth to fight against Elder Qi.

Yet, before she could do that, that point of light that was clashing with her blade suddenly changed direction and flew towards Zhang Ruochen.

That point of light was in fact the tip of the sword.

“The speed is so fast?”

Demonic Sound knew that the opponent was an assassin, thus speed would naturally be their strength. By now it was too late to block the attack, so she started to use the dense forest of vines to attack Elder Qi to prevent him from following up on the attack.

“Carnivorous Holy Flower, you are indeed quite an opponent. However, with only the cultivation of a Fifth Step Saint King,

you can't stop me.”

Elder Qi slashed aside the vines, and dashed out, striking at Zhang Ruochen.

As the tip of the sword drew closer to Zhang Ruochen's head, Elder Qi's smile spread, and he declared, “Now, all your bounty money belongs to me!”

Bong!

A black skeleton hand stretched out and slapped Elder Qi away.

“This is....?”

As Elder Qi was being bounced away, his eyes stared at the skeleton.

He could only see that a humongous black skeleton stood beside Zhang Ruochen. The aura coming from it was not any weaker than himself.

That was an undead spirit with the cultivation of a Seventh Step Saint King?

That must be the Emperor Yi Bone Staff. But how did it become so powerful?

Elder Qi was full of questions, but he did not have any time to think about it as Demonic Sound gathered her Rules of Truth. With an attack that was amplified three times by the Rules of Truth, she attacked him.

Quickly, Elder Qi gathered all of his Saint Qi. Using the Sword Qi, he created a mirror.

Boom!

Elder Qi smashed onto the ground, and even the Xuan Ice Saint Jade bed was shattered into a million pieces.

Kneeling, Elder Qi's white hair was all over the place. His eyes were bloodshot as he laughed, “You are amazing! Even after being poisoned, you are so difficult to deal with. No wonder even after Young Mister Ziyang tried so many times, you are still alive. Luckily, you are trapped within this tower, else you would have escaped again.”

Demonic Sound played with the Endless Blade as she twisted her sexy waist. She walked up to the black skeleton, and charmingly smiled. “With me and Emperor Yi, it won’t be easy for you to deal with Master.”

Elder Qi sneered, and his two hands raised up, injecting demonic Qi into the building.

Whoosh!

From every inch of the structure, deadly formations lit up, and large amounts of the attacks were launched towards Zhang Ruochen and his allies.

Those attacking Zhang Ruochen were all blocked by Demonic Sound.

The assault grew stronger, and the vines being controlled by Demonic Sound were being crushed. She could only passively defend.

The Emperor Yi Bone Staff took the initiative to go on the offensive. However, the sixteen lamps formed into a Formation, and suppressed the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

Rumble!

Thunder and lightning started forming within the tower, and the fighting seemed to reach the most deciding moment.

Yet on the outside, all was calm and peaceful. No one knew that Zhang Ruochen was in danger, and they were merely calmly waiting.

Elder Qi walked over, and said, “Making this tower cost me almost all my savings. The formations within would be enough to fight against Eighth Step Saint Kings, and could trap even Ninth Step Saint Kings for a good half an hour. Here, you could only wait to be killed by me.”

On the sword, the Sword Qi lit up again, and an aura no weaker than Fourth-Yao was emitted.

The blinding sword turned the space into a silvery world.

Demonic Sound was worried, and wanted to fight Elder Qi with all her might. However, the attacks from the tower

suppressed her. Just as she stepped out, a thread of light cut through her body.

“Urgh....”

Demonic Sound quickly retreated. From under her feet, a patch of Divine Fire Jingmie appeared and gushed towards Elder Qi.

However, before even getting near to Elder Qi, the flames were put out by the energy oozing out from the formation. In return, a freezing wave headed straight at Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound.

“That’s the end of playtime. Let us end this!”

On Elder Qi’s sword, 5 streaks of Saintly Light appeared. With the strength of fifth-yao, he swung his sword.

The sharp sword Qi was like a waterfall, as it streaked across the building. The entire space seemed to be stirred by the attack.

Demonic Sound and Zhang Ruochen were about to be killed by Elder Qi.

Yet, Zhang Ruochen, who was sitting on the ground, opened a silver-colored book. Suddenly, the space in the building was being split into multiple dimensions.

At the same time, space was being twisted, and its direction reversed.

The cascade of Sword Qi suddenly changed directions and flew towards Elder Qi.

Goosh!

How could Elder Qi have expected such a change? His reaction was slowed, and the sword Qi attacked his waist, cutting him in two.

Crimson blood spurted out, along with Elder Qi’s screams.

With his face pale, like that of a frail scholar, Zhang Ruochen stood up with Demonic Sound’s assistance, and weakly said, “Give me the antidote...for the poison. I can... let you die a painless death...”

Chapter 1732 - Ten Calamity Heavenly Lord

Chapter 1732: Ten Calamity Heavenly Lord

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Dream on!”

The upper half of Elder Qi’s body flew up, and from within his spine, many thin threads of demonic Qi emerged and condensed into the other half.

The lower half of his body did the same, with the torso and head emerging.

Immediately, two Elder Qi’s who looked the same appeared before Zhang Ruochen and his allies.

The aura that they emitted seemed to be even stronger than before.

“Undying Demonic Technique,” Zhang Ruochen pointed out.

“That’s right.” The two Elder Qi’s spoke together. “This old man practices that demonic technique. Even if I was cut into ten pieces, it would merely turn me into ten demonic bodies, instead of killing me.”

Demonic Sound frowned, and asked, “Master, how could there be such a powerful technique in the world? Doesn’t that mean he is unkillable?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the two Elder Qi’s and said, “The Undying Demonic Technique was based on a single drawing from the Heavenly Devil Stone Inscriptions. How could it not be powerful?”

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen showed an expression of understanding and smiled. “I see! So Elder Qi is a member of Black Demon Field.”

A hundred thousand years ago, Black Demon Field was a follower of Kunlun’s Field, and thus obtained a copy of the Heavenly Devil Stone Inscriptions.

What was worth thinking about was that Guanghan Field, which was also Kunlun’s Field’s follower, had been suppressed by Heaven Field all along to a point where they were on the verge of destruction.

Yet, Black Demon Field turned into a follower of Heaven Field, and its ranking was on the rise all the time.

Elder Qi said, “Indeed, I am from Black Demon Field. Don’t you feel that we are really close in relation? When Ten Calamity Heavenly Lord was still alive, everyone in Black Demon Field had to bow down to him. Yet, what happened to him now?”

“Black Demon Field is now one of the top one thousand Worlds, and is more powerful than Kunlun’s Field by so much. When Kunlun’s Field’s Heaven and Earth Altar gets destroyed, it will be the time for Kunlun’s Field to come and bow down to us!”

The Ten Calamity Heavenly Lord was one of the taboo figures in Kunlun’s Field. Known as the number one most powerful figure in Kunlun’s Field, it was rumored that he had survived through ten Yuanhui Calamities. One Yuanhui was known as a God’s life span, which 129,600 years.

One must understand that to live past one Yuanhui was already going against Heaven’s will, and would be almost impossible.

Moreover, to pass the second, the third, and so on, it would get more and more difficult.

To pass ten Yuanhui and survive would be something that even gods would not think about.

Of course, it was also possible that he had not passed ten Yuanhui at all, and it was merely just a title. Across the entire universe, few probably knew of how long he had lived.

Yet, as a native Kunlun cultivator, Zhang Ruochen had not heard of his name at all. It was as though a mysterious force had wiped the name away from history.

Only after coming to Heaven Field and reading some books did Zhang Ruochen know that a hundred thousand years ago, Kunlun's Field had such a powerful individual.

Demonic Sound coldly smiled. "Black Demon Field was Kunlun's Field's servant. Even after a hundred thousand years, that remains true. To want Kunlun's Field to bow down to you, you must be a really devious slave trying to overthrow your master."

Hearing the words servant and slave, Elder Qi's face turned even more treacherous.

Reaching the level of Seventh Step Saint King, Elder Qi was already high enough in cultivation to learn of some secrets.

He knew that a hundred thousand years ago, Black Demon Field was a rather weak primordial world, and there was no one on the level of a Demon God. Even Demon Emperors or Demon Kings were few and far between.

And at the very beginning, Black Demon Field was a subordinate to the Blood God Sect of Kunlun's Field.

At that time, the Blood God Sect was way more powerful than it is now. Black Demon Field was merely a low-leveled civilization to the Sect leader, and the few Demon Emperors of Black Demon Field had to prostrate themselves to him. As such, it was not wrong to consider Black Demon Field subservient to Kunlun's Field.

The only reason why Black Demon Field was viewed as important to the Blood God Sect was because of the size of the world and its massive potential for growth.

With the support of Blood God Sect, and after tens of thousands of years of development, Black Demon Field had become stronger, and gained prominence in Kunlun's Field's eyes. As such, cultivators from Black Demon Field could view the copies of Heavenly Devil Stone Inscriptions as long as they were loyal enough.

As for what happened later for Black Demon Field to turn into a member of the Heaven Field Sect, Elder Qi was not very sure and merely heard some rumors. It seemed like a hundred thousand years ago, Black Demon Field had done things that were not very glorious.

As for people related to that incident, all seemed to have vanished. Even the higher-ups within Black Demon Field no longer talked about those.

Today, hearing the words “servant” and “slave”, Elder Qi’s mind conjured an image where his ancestors bowed low in obedience to the people of Kunlun’s Field.

When he thought about it, his murderous aura seemed to start to exude from within his body.

“Are you angry?”

Zhang Ruochen did not fear him, and continued, “Undying Demonic Technique is a powerful technique no doubt, but it is such a pity that you merely learned it from the copy. There are deadly flaws in your techniques, and your two demonic bodies are merely partly real, and partly virtual. It would be easy to shatter your body in this state.”

“Kid, you talk real big for someone who has yet to get rid of the poison in your body.”

The two Elder Qi’s renewed their assault from both directions.

The left Elder Qi wielded the sword, and with millions of Sword Qi, formed a black Qilin that roared loudly.

The Elder Qi that attacked from the right made use of the Formation inscriptions in the building, and attacked with a gust of cold Qi.

Within that cold Qi, there were hidden blades.

Demonic Sound frowned, and just as she was about to act, Zhang Ruochen stopped her.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the ground, not moving, and merely injected his Saint Qi into the Time and Space Secret Guide. As he did that, something magical happened. The two attacks by Elder Qi changed directions and collided with each other.

Boom!

The Two Elder Qi's faces changed; they were enraged, and they snapped, "This damned Zhang Ruochen, can his manipulation of space really not be countered? Even Gong Ziyang at this cultivation level was not so powerful."

As the two attacks collided, the aftershock bounced both of the Elder Qi's back.

Demonic Sound, who was already preparing to attack, chose this moment to strike, as she swung the Endless Blade, along with Rules of Truth, tripling her power. She struck one of the Elder Qi's.

Boom!

That Elder Qi flew out like a ragdoll, as the demonic body broke apart, only leaving the bloodied upper half of the body.

"Master has already said that your technique has a big flaw, in that your demonic body is unstable. Why didn't you believe him?"

Demonic Sound shook her head, and placed the Endless Blade on his head. "Give me the antidote?"

The upper half of Elder Qi's body lay on the ground with his eyes showing disdain. From the corner of his eyes, he looked behind Demonic Sound.

The other Elder Qi launched a crystalline claw towards Demonic Sound. It was almost right on Demonic Sound's head already.

This girl, she won't even know what hit her.

Just as Elder Qi had that thought, before he could even smile, he saw a black streak flying towards him, engulfing him.

A Spatial Crack had cut off Elder Qi's head cleanly. Turning into a ball of bloody mist, he disappeared in the void.

As the main body of Elder Qi died, the other Elder Qi shattered as well, turning into the lower half of his body.

That crystalline claw, losing control, quickly dissipated and turned into a wisp of cold air.

Feeling the cold air, Demonic Sound turned around and bowed to Zhang Ruochen. With a voice full of gratitude, she said, “Thank you, Master.”

Zhang Ruochen was still very weak, and as he leaned on a pillar, he lightly waved.

Demonic Sound asked, “What should we do? We have yet to find the antidote.”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “We had no choice. Elder Qi is not a simple figure. Once he realized that he could not escape, he might have even exploded his own Saintly Source. As such, we could only kill him.”

Demonic Sound nodded, and headed to Elder Qi’s body and started searching.

Without Elder Qi’s control, the Formation made by the sixteen lamps was no longer as powerful as before. The black skeleton smashed through the formation, and dashed out.

Turning into a staff, the black skeleton flew back into Zhang Ruochen’s hand.

After a short while, Demonic Sound stood up and shook her head, explaining, “We could not find the antidote.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank, and he said, “Do not eat his body or Saint Qi, and do not take anything from him. Let’s leave the building and meet with the Hundred Flower Fairy before making our next move.”

Either way, Elder Qi was still one of the members of the upper management of the God of Death Palace. How could the God of Death Palace let Zhang Ruochen off?

How could he explain this?

Even if he did, would the God of Death Palace believe it?

Now, Zhang Ruochen placed his only hope on leaving before the God of Death Palace discovered Elder Qi’s death.

Yet, it seemed like Zhang Ruochen’s luck had run dry. Just as he opened the door, he could feel the intense murderous aura coming from afar.

Whoosh!

The immense killing aura was enough for him to feel pain on his face.

Outside of the tower, there were a few dozen assassins, all dressed in black robes and each holding a scythe.

“Elder Qi’s life pearl has shattered. Evidently, he has died in that building. He must have been killed by you, right?” A cold voice came from the dark.

After which, Killer Heavenly King Ranking 21, Qin Kai, appeared from within the shadows with steady steps.

Chapter 1733 - Friends of Life or Death

Chapter 1733: Friends of Life or Death

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The dozens of core assassins from the God of Death Palace paved the way.

Qin Kai walked on the road wearing a black God of Death cape. He was six feet six inches tall with slender hands and feet. There were six dragons on his black cape, dimming with crimson fluorescent light that seemed about to fly out.

As he stood in front of Zhang Ruochen, the ground shook, and Zhang Ruochen's bones made a cracking sound, and the invisible force intimidated all the monks around.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes, and he saw the shadow of a four-armed blood demon above Qin Kai's head, and it was more than twelve feet tall.

The four-armed blood demon was formed by murderous Qi, and it was called 'Murderous Qi Saint Look'.

The Murderous Qi Saint Look wasn't a real saint look, but sometimes, it was more terrific than real saint looks. For a top-tier assassin like Qin Kai, all he needed to do was to release the Murderous Qi Saint Look, and it was enough to horrify many monks.

Those core assassins who were ferocious were all silent out of fear as if they had just met their kings.

Zhang Ruochen looked around, and they found Ji Fanxin and Xie Chengzi standing at the top of a palace nearby.

Zhang Ruochen was very pleased that Ji Shixin didn't choose to run away.

Zhang Ruochen carefully released a trace of mind power, forming an invisible thread, extending toward Ji Fanxin, preparing to talk with her.

Qin Kai was highly vigilant. He twitched his eyebrows and pointed his finger forward.

Bang!

He dispersed Zhang Ruochen's mind power thread.

Qin Kai looked toward where the mind power thread extended, yet he couldn't find anyone there as Ji Fanxin and Xie Chengzi had hidden themselves.

"Seems like you're not alone, and the two of them have impressive cultivation." Qin Kai just released mind power for inspection, but he didn't find Ji Fanxin and Xie Chengzi, which was to his surprise.

His mind power had reached level fifty-nine, meaning that he was almost a mind power supreme saint. There were only a few creatures under supreme saints who could dodge his inspection.

Zhang Ruochen was very glum given how powerful Qin Kai was, but he didn't panic. He said calmly, "It was Elder Qi who tried to kill me first, and I was forced to protect myself."

That Killer Heavenly King who brought Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin to Elder Qi was standing behind Qin Kai and seemed to have a great status. He said with a deep voice, "Nonsense. Elder Qi was just trying to charge you a deposit. Why would he ever want to kill you? I bet Elder Qi attacked you because you couldn't afford the deposit while trying to get away with being punished by the God of Death Palace."

Zhang Ruochen released his heavenly eyes and looked to that Killer Heavenly King. He immediately saw that the techniques he refined were very close to the 'Immortal Demonic Technique' performed by Elder Qi. It was likely that he was also a monk from Black Demon Field, or probably Elder Qi's right-hand man.

“Can’t afford the deposit?”

Zhang Ruochen took out a storage bag and threw it to Qin Kai. “I’ve always heard that the God of Death Palace values reputation the most, and it’s always absolutely neutral, never interfering with any power struggle among the fields, yet I’m really disappointed today.

“That Elder Qi of yours was a monk from Black Demon Field, wasn’t he? Was he really devoted to working for the God of Death Palace? Are you sure that he never betrayed the God of Death Palace for Black Demon Field?”

That Killer Heavenly King sneered. “Elder Qi joined the God of Death Palace more than seven hundred years ago. Why would he betray the God of Death Palace?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I put an order of around one point four billion saint stones in the God of Death Palace. I think that should make me an important client of the God of Death Palace, shouldn’t it? Don’t you think Elder Qi trying to kill me is damaging the God of Death Palace’s reputation?”

“That’s just your side of the story.”

“Enough...” Qin Kai whispered, and that Killer Heavenly King immediately shut up.

Qin Kai threw the storage bag back to Zhang Ruochen and said, “The saint stones inside are indeed enough to pay for the deposit. We do need to overhaul this deal given how suspicious it looks.”

That Killer Heavenly King said, “Brother Qin, we can’t just let Elder Qi die without investigation. What about our dignity?”

“Our dignity is indeed important, but our reputation is also important. If a guest who has a deal more than one billion saint stones dies in the God of Death Palace for no reason, nobody will do business with the God of Death Palace in the future.

Qin Kai stared at that Killer Heavenly King and said, “A deal worth more than one billion saint stones should’ve gone to our palace leader. This is a huge issue, so it’s not up to us to decide.”

That Killer Heavenly King bowed, lowered his head, and agreed.

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit relieved and thought, Power and wealth are the basics for surviving. If it weren't for the one-point-four-billion-saint-stone deal I made at the Life and Death Cliff, the God of Death Palace would've killed me without any concern.

Qin Kai walked into the weapon-refining pavilion to check the fighting traces.

Demonic Sound transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. "What should we do now, master? Should we seize this chance to run away?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "Qin Kai might be as powerful as the top ten godly disciples, so it'll be almost impossible to flee in front of him, and besides, this tomb is incredible, and we might not be able to get away."

"Are we just going to sit here and wait?" Demonic Sound couldn't be more worried.

Zhang Ruochen said, "The fight traces can reveal a lot of things. We can only hope that Qin Kai is perceptive enough."

Demonic Sound was still worried. "Even if Qin Kai can see that Elder Qi prepared a lot to kill us, Elder Qi was a senior from God of Death Palace after all. Qin Kai will definitely help cover the truth and prevent a scandal from spreading. This won't end well for us."

Zhang Ruochen had obviously thought of that, and if that really happened, he'd have to take out the godly scepter to contact the Moon Goddess. As long as the Moon Goddess was here, the God of Death Palace would spare their lives for her sake.

Of course, he wouldn't ask the Moon Goddess for help unless he had literally no other choice.

If he had to resort to the Moon Goddess every time something bad happened, he wouldn't have any leverage against her anymore.

After a while, Qin Kai walked out of the weapon-refining pavilion toward Zhang Ruochen.

Demonic Sound knew that Zhang Ruochen had been poisoned by Mirage Venom and that he was extremely weak, so she tried to stop Qin Kai.

However, Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

At the next moment, Qin Kai grabbed and then let go of Zhang Ruochen's left arm.

After letting go, Qin Kai said, "You were indeed poisoned by Mirage Venom. Can't believe you made it until now instead of turning translucent. Come with me!"

"Where're we going?" asked Demonic Sound.

"No need to ask. Just follow me."

Qin Kai walked down the stairs and took back Elder Qi's weapon-refining pavilion, which turned into a delicate figure the size of a fist, going into his storage object.

Demonic Sound transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. "You can't follow him, master. We'd better fight him to the death. With the Time and Space Secret Guide, we might stand a chance getting out."

However, Zhang Ruochen disregarded it and followed Qin Kai.

It wouldn't be a difficult job for Qin Kai to kill Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound given his power, yet he did no such thing. Instead, it seemed that he was trying to find evidence to acquit him.

Which made Zhang Ruochen very curious. Had Qin Kai known that there was something wrong with Elder Qi already?

Or was there another reason?

Qin Kai was walking at the front, and he nodded seeing Zhang Ruochen follow him calmly. He mumbled, "No wonder he's affirmed by that guy. Impressive indeed."

Qin Kai stopped in front of the stone gate of a cave.

Boom!

The stone door was opened automatically.

Qin Kai turned around, looked at Zhang Ruochen, and said, "Go in. Someone's waiting for you."

"Who?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

"You'll know when you get in!"

Qin Kai walked into the stone cave first.

Zhang Ruochen followed, and after that, he saw a very familiar shadow standing under the stone wall, wearing a grey cape and carrying an iron sword.

They looked at each other.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, as all his confusion was gone now. He asked, "When did you join the God of Death Palace?"

The man carrying an iron sword smiled rigidly and said, "I'm just a hired assassin for the God of Death Palace. I can leave whenever I want."

Qin Kai walked to a stone desk and took off his crystal mask. "The palace leader has always wanted to admit him as a disciple and have him become a core disciple by joining the God of Death Palace, but he turned down the palace leader several times. Not even a Killer Emperor does that."

It was Le who was carrying the iron sword.

Le stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Sacred Central Empire lost a lot of people after the assassination carried out by the Heavenly Kill Organization. Even Dragon Guarding Pavilion lost two members, which is why the vice pavilion leader asked me and Han Qiu to join the God of Death Palace to retaliate against Heaven Field Sect. Of course, we've only been taking tasks to kill the monks from Heaven Field Sect."

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at Qin Kai who was sitting near them.

Le knew Zhang Ruochen's concern, so he said, "Don't worry, brother Qin Kai and I are friends of life or death. He won't tell any other monk about the secrets that I spill today."

Zhang Ruochen said, “Does that mean that you asked him to help me?”

Le nodded and said, “When you placed an order to kill Shang Ziyang, Yan Xi, Xun Ya, and Gong Ziyang, I’d already figured that it was probably you, and when Elder Qi’s Life Pearl broke, that confirmed it.”

“Why? Have you guys known that Elder Qi has been working for Black Demon Field the whole time?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“You don’t even know the half of it,” said Qin Kai.

Le said, “The intelligence system of the God of Death Palace has spread across the entire Heaven World, including our own organization. Elder Qi wasn’t just a monk from Black Demon Field, he joined Heavenly Kill Organization a long time ago. He was a spy from Heaven Kill Organization in the God of Death Palace. We didn’t kill him because we wanted to use him to lure more prominent beings out.”

“I see.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Didn’t you say that Han Qiu also joined the God of Death Palace? Where is she?”

“She got very angry after learning that Elder Qi was trying to ambush you, so she went to kill the subordinates of Elder Qi already,” said Le. “Nobody could stop her.”

Chapter 1734 - : The List

Chapter 1734: The List

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was a bit curious. He asked, “How did you know so much about the God of Death Palace as a subsidiary assassin?”

Le said, “It’s a long story, but I know more secrets and have more privileges as a subsidiary assassin than those elders among the key assassins.”

Zhang Ruochen reckoned that it might have to do with the God of Death Palace Leader’s intention to admit him as a disciple, so he didn’t ask more questions.

Le then said, “This temporary contact spot is controlled by ten elders. Although Han Qiu, brother Qin Kai and I have some say here, we still need evidence to acquit you.”

Zhang Ruochen could understand them. He said, “It’s not that difficult to find evidence, is it? Elder Qi must’ve left some traces in the weapon-refining pavilion, and besides, hasn’t the God of Death Palace already known that there was something wrong with Elder Qi?”

Qin Kai said, “It’s an elder who got killed after all. It isn’t that simple. We must provide hard evidence for you to get out of this tomb alive.”

“What kind of evidence is hard enough?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Kai said, “Let’s see how Han Qiu did with her work.”

During the next half an hour, the space in this tomb tumbled.

After the chaos was over, Han Qiu walked into the stone cave, covered in blood as her long hair waved, looking like a bloodthirsty demonic woman.

Bang!

A monk wearing a God of Death black cape was thrown out like a dead dog, rolling toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen recognized him from his forces. It was the killer heavenly king who'd led him and Ji Fanxin to meet Elder Qi.

Han Qiu's black saint blouse was soaked in blood, turning crimson. There was still heavy murderous Qi flowing on her curvy body. She said, "I've killed all who worked for Elder Qi, except him."

Han Qiu then looked at Zhang Ruochen immediately after which she dispersed all her anger and hostility, hurrying toward him happily.

She found that Zhang Ruochen's face had paled, and his left arm was dimming. She asked, "Were you poisoned?"

She grabbed Zhang Ruochen's wrist. After seeing what she saw, she was glum. "God damn Qi Yunfeng. If he were still alive, I would definitely pull away his saint soul and torture him with thousands of ghosts. Senior brother Qin Kai, you have the antidote to Mirage Venom, don't you?"

Qin Kai said calmly, "I do, but it's not the time to cure him yet as this is also a piece of evidence. Can you still hold it, Zhang Ruochen?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "It's not hard to suppress the poison."

Han Qiu also knew that it wasn't the time to cure Zhang Ruochen, so she kicked the killer heavenly king harshly, waking him up.

That killer heavenly king was called Qi Yunhai, and came from the same clan as Elder Qi did. He was a second-step saint king.

Qi Yunhai was obviously injured seriously. He couldn't help coughing after waking up. After seeing Qin Kai, Le, Han Qiu

and Zhang Ruochen in the stone cave, he immediately realized what was happening.

Qi Yunhai turned into a group of black vultures, trying to fly out of the cave.

“How dare you.”

Han Qiu released Power of Darkness, forming a giant black whirlpool, sweeping through all the black vultures.

Qi Yunhai’s voice came out of the black whirlpool. “Han Qiu, you’ve killed so many key assassins. If you kill me, the nine elders will never forgive you... You...”

Han Qiu sneered and grabbed the space.

At the next moment, Qin Yunhai’s head was caught by Han Qiu’s hand, pressed on the ground. He groveled in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Qi Yunhai was a saint king indeed. He knew that he couldn’t make it today, so he immediately mobilized his saint Qi, which rushed to his lower abdomen, trying to blow up his saint source.

Poof!

Han Qiu penetrated Qi Yunhai’s head with a hand, and five dark forces rushed into Qi Yunhai’s body.

Suddenly, Qi Yunhai yelled in agony as his eyes bled. The light in his eyes withered away.

“His saint soul has been locked by me, and his mind power has been eroded by the darkness power. He’ll answer any question I ask him. Let’s meet the other nine elders now!” said Han Qiu coldly.

All ten elders who were in charge of this tomb were incredible beings.

Elder Qi was only one of the weaker elders.

The other nine elders were all alerted after what happened. They showed up outside the stone cave, but seeing Qin Kai walking out, they tried to look calm instead of interrogating them.

Qin Kai could probably defeat all nine of them combined.

Qin Kai, Le and Han Qiu were the people dealing with the issue. As for Zhang Ruochen and Mo Yin, they were standing in the distance, waiting for the result.

“How could I forget about this? It can probably cure me of the Mirage Poison.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a blue lotus seed and infused his saint Qi into the seed. Suddenly, a layer of blue light was released, spreading from his palm to his wrist, his arms, his shoulders, and eventually, his entire body.

After a short while, the Mirage Poison was gone completely.

“No wonder it’s a valuable left by Saint Monk Xumi. Indeed marvelous.”

Zhang Ruochen operated his saint Qi for one circle, after which he completely recovered. He pinched the blue lotus seed and smiled vaguely.

After a while, the nine elders all left. Qin Kai and Le walked toward Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Kai threw a small white bottle to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Qi Yunhai has told the elders everything that happened, so they won’t come examine the Mirage Poison in your body. Take the cure here.”

Zhang Ruochen took the small white bottle, smiled, and returned it back to Qin Kai. He said, “No need! I’ve gotten rid of the Mirage Poison already.”

“How is that possible?”

Qin Kai stared at Zhang Ruochen, and he found that Zhang Ruochen was all vigorous and healthy again.

Qin Kai knew that even he could only suppress the venom and had to take a cure to get rid of the Mirage Poison completely. How did this kid who was only a fourth-step saint king do it?

Le and Han Qiu were already special beings. Where did this special being come from?

“Ah!”

Qi Yunhai who was kneeling on the ground screamed in anguish as his face twisted.

It turned out that Han Qiu was absorbing Qi Yunhai's demonic Qi and rules of heaven and earth using the power of darkness, turning them into her own power. After a short while, Qi Yuanhai turned into a black corpse, falling to the ground.

As for Han Qiu, her body was wrapped in a powerful black power.

After spending one hour refining, the black power slowly flowed into her body. Suddenly, Han Qiu's cultivation surged.

She needed to keep taking other people's power as she practiced one of the nine ancient ways, the Way of Darkness.

Qin Jin said, "I reckon you guys have a lot to talk about. As for me, I need to leave and see who's worthy of my killing on the 'Bounty Rank'."

After getting back to the cave, Zhang Ruochen asked Le and Han Qiu about their experiences in the God of Death Palace.

They must've gone through a lot and paid a huge price to have such incredible cultivation, and there were many stories that Zhang Ruochen didn't know of.

After a long talk, Zhang Ruochen had learned a lot.

Le and Han Qiu gained different identities because of their connection with the God of Death Palace, which were those of the monks of 'Yuan Field,' one of the top ten large fields.

Because of that, they had the opportunity to refine the Way of Truth in Truth Heavenly Domain.

It was almost impossible for them to come to the Truth Godly Palace because the imperial government would never allow the two of them.

Han Qiu said, "Your highness, you're being too merciful for only wanting four lives, including Shang Ziyan. Shang Ziyan hired Heavenly Kill Organization to kill everyone who's related to you. Countless half saints from Sacred Central Empire were assassinated. This is pure animosity, and we must

retaliate against them. We must let Shang Ziyan know how it feels to lose his family and best friends.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to Le and said, “What do you think?”

“It’s all up to you, your highness. I’ll support any decision you make.”

Han Qiu knew Zhang Ruochen very well, so she knew that he wouldn’t do as she said, as he would never betray his principles. Before Zhang Ruochen said anything, she took out a small notebook and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

“I know you don’t want to kill the innocent people, so I sneaked into the intelligence organization of the God of Death Palace and obtained lots of confidential information. The book records all the monks connected to Shang Ziyan, and those with ticks on either participated in that assassination or did horrible things.”

Zhang Ruochen started to read the book.

After finishing it, he closed the book, stared at Han Qiu, and said, “You must’ve taken a lot of risks finding these names, didn’t you?”

Han Qiu rejoiced a bit in heart and said, “Because I know how painful it is to you that Bai Su, Zhu Hongtao and the others from Sacred Empire died. There’s no way you don’t want revenge, but you’re destined to be an emperor. You shouldn’t be the one who does the killings, otherwise, people will think of you as a despot. Let me do the killings for you.”

“Count me in too,” Le said apathetically.

Zhang Ruochen gazed at them for a long while and said, “Then do what you want to do. Kill everyone on the list with a red tick beside their name.”

Chapter 1735 - Cross Dressing

Chapter 1735: Cross Dressing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A trace of glinting light appeared in the sky. A new day had come.

Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, and Xie Chengzi left the death tomb and flew toward Heavenly Capital Mountain.

Ji Fanxin then looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “I totally underestimated you before. Can’t believe you have a connection even within the God of Death Palace and that you could get away with killing an elder.”

Nothing could be hidden from Ji Fanxin. She must’ve figured out a lot of things herself.

However, Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were only cooperating for mutual benefits, so he didn’t mention Le and Han Qiu.

Le and Han Qiu chose to stay in the God of Death Palace, as they wanted to sharpen themselves. Also, they could tell Zhang Ruochen the result of the assassinations in time.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “You impressed me as well, fairy. I’m very moved that you didn’t ditch me and flee.”

Ji Fanxin said, “No need to be moved. I didn’t leave because I had nothing to do with Elder Qi’s death anyway.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “If it weren’t for Qin Kai who acquitted me, would you have helped if I had started to fight the God of Death Palace?”

“No! Fighting the God of Death Palace in the death tomb is nothing but being suicidal.”

Pausing for a second, Ji Fanxin then said, “However, I could pay a high price for your life.”

As long as she could afford it, Ji Fanxin was indeed able to buy Zhang Ruochen’s survival in the God of Death Palace. As for how long Zhang Ruochen could stay alive, it was totally up to Ji Fanxin.

Which meant Zhang Ruochen could live longer if Ji Fanxin actually bought his life, and a lot could happen after that.

Zhang Ruochen said, “No wonder you’re the leader of a field. Indeed wealthy.”

“Nothing compared to you. Didn’t you make an order worth hundreds of millions of saint stones in Hundred Flower Palace, after which you spent one point four billion saint stones in the God of Death Palace?” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen sighed after hearing ‘saint stones’.

Zhang Ruochen had almost no saint stones left after giving the God of Death Palace the deposit. He was now poorer than an ordinary saint.

Fortunately, he would soon be going to attack Xumi Dojo for Kunlun’s Field, so he could seize this chance to get some valuables and saint stones to fill up the storage ring.

After getting back to Heavenly Capital Mountain, Zhang Ruochen separated with Ji Fanxin and headed back to Moon Goddess Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff, put it in front of him, and took out another percent of Amber Ash’s saint soul mist from his lower abdomen.

The evil spirit in the Emperor Yin Bone Staff yelled in excitement and started to take in and refine the soul mist.

The Emperor Yi Bone Staff had helped a lot during the crisis in the death tomb. If it weren’t for Demonic Sound and it holding off Elder Qi, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have had the time and the capacity to suppress Mirage Venom.

“The Emperor Yi Bone Staff’s power can rival that of an upper-middle-level seventh-step saint king now. After refining this cluster of soul mist, it should become an eight-step saint king.”

As the Emperor Yi Bone Staff was refining the soul mist, Zhang Ruochen took out Saint Monk Xumi’s long whisker to comprehend the time rules and space rules.

Only after improving his comprehension on the Way of Time and Way of Space could Zhang Ruochen become a fifth-step saint king sooner.

On the next day, a maid arrived outside the weapon-refining pavilion where Zhang Ruochen was practicing and said, “Lord Priest, a young... Young man came to the dojo, and he... She wants to meet you.”

“No, I’m not meeting anyone,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“She has very profound cultivation, probably someone phenomenal,” said the maid.

Zhang Ruochen stopped refining and thought, It’s almost time to attack Xumi Dojo. Is it a monk from Kunlun’s Field?

Creak!

Zhang Ruochen opened the door of the weapon-refining pavilion and walked out. “Lead the way.”

Thousand Star Maiden was wearing a white saint blouse with blue dragon engravings on both the collar and the cuffs. She was wearing a white belt which covered her thin waist, standing under the Way of Truth pictures left by the Moon Goddess, staring at ‘Stars Orbiting Moon Image’.

Her eyebrows were green, under which her eyes were blinking, with eyelashes that seemed to have been painted on. Her nose was exquisite and straight, and her lips were glittering and transparent, showing white teeth.

Her face was marvelously delicate, and nobody could ever get tired of it.

The maids in Moon Goddess Dojo were saintesses, princesses of dynasties, all of whom were top-tier beauties within their

lanes. However, they were all overshadowed by Thousand Star Maiden as if they were nothing but inferior maids while Thousand Star Maiden was the angel from heaven.

Especially Thousand Star Maiden's especially regal and elegant temperament...it distinguished her from all the other women as beautiful as she was.

Although Thousand Star Maiden was dressed in men's clothes, everyone could tell that she was an unrivaled beauty, probably just as beautiful as the nine angels on the 'Nine Angels Beauty Scroll'.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised to see Thousand Star Maiden, so he walked to her quickly.

After asking the maids to leave, Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Why didn't you tell me beforehand? I would've greeted you with all the monks in the dojo."

"If so, I would've been forced to join Guanghan Field."

Thousand Star smiled, turned around, and said, "No wonder it's the Moon Goddess. The Way of Truth pictures left by her were incredible. I saw a bunch of beautiful women of all kinds, and I know that it isn't all because of your charm. Now I see, it's because of the pictures."

"They chose to stay at Moon Goddess Dojo themselves. It has nothing to do with me," said Zhang Ruochen

Thousand Star smiled vaguely and said, "Only a few monks in Truth Heavenly Domain have seen my real face."

Zhang Ruochen said, "I'm honored to be one of them I guess."

Thousand Star Maiden was almost always wearing a veil, covering her face, body shape, and forces with her mind power. Almost nobody had seen her real face.

Thousand Star Maiden said, "You must know why I came to Moon Goddess Dojo, right?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "I'm not sure."

Thousand Star Maiden ground her teeth, calmed herself, and said gently, "Last time, I listened to your... Well so-called

instructions, and after thinking about it twice, I reckon what you said does make sense. If I want to sharpen my will, I have to forget that I'm the 'Thousand Star Maiden'. I need to lose the protection I have because of who I am. I need to experience real dangers, setbacks, and the emotions I have never experienced before.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Didn't expect you to actually think it through. Hope that you can sharpen your will soon in the future and become an actual strong woman.”

Zhang Ruochen had given Thousand Star Maiden a piece of advice before that she could hide her identity and become a temporary member of Guanghan Field to refine with him.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't have more enemies who wanted to take him and Guanghan Field down, so she could run into challenges and dangers at any time.

He was only joking, and he didn't expect Thousand Star Maiden to actually do that. After all, he was only using her.

Besides, it would be dangerous for Thousand Star Maiden's life to get too close to him.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes wider seeing Thousand Star Maiden's bizarre expressions, and he said, “Did you decide to accept my offer and refine with me?”

Thousand Star Maiden sneered and glared at Zhang Ruochen. “That's right. Aren't you supposed to cheer about it? I'm now all yours to use. Laugh if you want. Why are you still holding back?”

Thousand Star Maiden had communicated with her ancestor after being instructed by Zhang Ruochen as she wanted to know whether there were some flaws in her state of mind and how to deal with them.

To her surprise, her ancestor actually encouraged her to refine with Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden had hesitated for a long time before coming to Moon Goddess Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don’t be so reluctant. I probably don’t even want you here. Spoiled as you are as a maiden, you might cause me lots of trouble, not to mention your pretty face.”

Thousand Star Maiden kept grinding her teeth and couldn’t calm herself down. She found Zhang Ruochen to be very hypocritical and said, “There’re countless ways to sharpen my will. Why do I have to practice with you?”

Thousand Star Maiden was confident that Zhang Ruochen would definitely try to get her to stay, even beg her to do so. She walked away, smiling.

“See you,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden stopped smiling, and then stopped walking. She turned around and glared at Zhang Ruochen. “Don’t regret it.”

“Of course I won’t.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Thousand Star Maiden, shook his head, and said, “How arrogant she is. Is that how she asks people for a favor? Is that how you want to sharpen your state of mind? I’ll only be annoyed having you around me.”

As Thousand Star Maiden walked out of Moon Goddess Dojo, she walked past Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Both of them were cross-dressing, and they had the same temperament and similar appearances.

As they walked by each other, it was like time stopped moving.

One of them was walking in while the other was walking out, yet they could both notice each other’s extraordinariness by just one look.

As she walked out of Moon Goddess Dojo, Thousand Star Maiden turned around and looked at Nine Heavenly Maiden’s gorgeous back. “Who is she? No way she’s a mediocre woman with that appearance and temperament. Why have I never seen her before? Is she here for Zhang Ruochen as well?”

Chapter 1736 - Tianluo Dojo

Chapter 1736: Tianluo Dojo

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Yu Chenjing found a relatively secret spot near Moon Goddess Dojo and stared at the door of the dojo wanting to meet Nine Heavenly Maiden after she came out.

Without the identity of ‘Thousand Star Maiden’ and the protection from Tian Huang and Di Lao, Yu Chenjing felt much more relaxed.

However, Nine Heavenly Maiden still hadn’t come out after several hours.

“Wait, is she a monk from Guanghan Field?”

Yu Chenjing couldn’t be more curious about Nine Heavenly Maiden’s identity as she sensed nine different energy ripples in her body, and each of them was phenomenal.

There were some strange ripples that she couldn’t figure out even with her power of origin.

Which had almost never happened before!

After two hours, the dawn was drawing near. Yu Chenjing couldn’t keep waiting anymore, so she walked straight into Moon Goddess Dojo.

Blackie walked out and stopped Yu Chenjing. “What are you doing here again, girl?”

“Girl?”

Nobody in her clan, except the supreme-saint seniors, dared call her that.

“What do you want, girl? Are you here for Zhang Ruochen again? Unfortunately, he’s left the dojo already, girl.”

“Don’t you dare call me girl again!”

A trace of white light shone on the tip of the index finger of Yu Chenjing’s right hand.

“Okay, okay, I won’t call you that... Wait. I’ve been around for a much longer time than you have. What if I call you girl? Girl! Girl!” Blackie kept screaming.

Yu Chenjing pointed at Blackie with her glowing finger, forming a trace of sharp light.

Blackie was quick enough to dodge it.

Bang!

The finger sword hit the ground, leaving a deep hole.

Blackie looked pissed off. “How dare you actually attack me? Do you really think I won’t fight back at you because you’re Zhang Ruochen’s paramour?”

“What did you just say?”

Yu Chenjing couldn’t feel more awkward.

Blackie didn’t have any scruples in speaking out. “Stop pretending! Amazing has told me everything. You and Zhang Ruochen had a good time in the God-Naming Platform, didn’t you? You guys did it in the carriage, but I do have to warn you that Zhang Ruochen has two children already. He won’t take care of you.”

Yu Chenjing had never seen a bird that talked nonsense like this. She tried to calm herself down and asked, “Who’s the ‘Amazing’ you mentioned?”

“How could you not know it? It told me that it was the only witness when you and Zhang Ruochen got engaged. Why are you still hiding there, Amazing? Show yourself.”

Blackie walked to the herb garden beside the weapon-refining pavilion and dug out the Amazing Little Taoist, dragging it in front of Yu Chenjing. “How could you fabricate stories? She’s

the deity of Thousand Star Civilization, and her reputation is vital.”

The Amazing Little Taoist raised three of its fingers and said, “I swear to God that I didn’t fabricate anything. Zhang Ruochen and her highness definitely signed an engagement letter, and it’s in her highness’s dress.”

Yu Chenjing looked more and more hostile.

“Am I right, your highness?” asked the Amazing Little Taoist.

Yu Chenjing was so bothered by what Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist said that she wanted to kill them, and certainly Zhang Ruochen as well.

She didn’t think that the Amazing Little Taoist had actually been in the carriage. Instead, she was sure that it was Zhang Ruochen who had told everyone about it.

Although it sensed the murderous Qi coming out of Yu Chenjing, Blackie didn’t realize that it was targeting it. It said to Yu Chenjing, “Girl, you can’t do anything about it. Their mother is too powerful for you to kill.”

“Shut up! I’ll cut your tongue out.”

Yu Chenjing grabbed the space in front of her and formed thousands of traces of sword Qi, covering Blackie, which made whooshing and ear-piercing sword noises.

Blackie suddenly spread its wings, and black flames gushed out of the feathers, turning into a layer of heavy and blazing fire, dismantling all the sword Qi.

Even Yu Chenjing was knocked back.

“Do you really think you are powerful enough to attack me?”

Blackie’s eyes turned into fireballs, and its claws released saint Qi which went underground, activating the formation inscriptions in Moon Goddess Dojo. Suddenly, it was all dark in the dojo, and there were dozens of electric pythons shuttling back and forth in the dark clouds.

“A top-tier level grade-eight attack formation.”

Yu Chenjing was a formation saint master herself, so she knew how powerful this formation was. She had to reexamine the power of that owl saint beast with a cheap mouth.

“Zhang Ruochen does have a lot of powerful beings working for him. Even a bird he has is that incredible.”

Yu Chenjing was perceptive enough to approximate Blackie’s power through its formation and reflex.

The Amazing Little Taoist was afraid that Blackie would actually suppress Yu Chenjing, so it immediately transmitted its voice. “That woman has an extraordinary status with lots of trump cards. If we really fight her, the entire Moon Goddess Dojo might turn into dust.”

“Don’t worry. I know what to do,” said Blackie.

Yu Chenjing was intimidated, so she didn’t make another move. “Where is Zhang Ruochen, tell him to come out here and meet me now.”

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “I told you that Zhang Ruochen isn’t in the dojo. Why don’t you believe me?”

“How come? I’ve been staying outside the whole time... Was it because of a space transportation formation?” Yu Chenjing realized what happened.

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “That’s right. Zhang Ruochen has left the dojo through the space transportation formation.”

“Where is he?” asked Yu Chenjing.

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “I can’t tell you that!”

“Why can’t we?” Blackie glared at the Amazing Little Taoist and transmitted its voice. “Zhang Ruochen left with Nine Heavenly Maiden sneakily. Something major must’ve happened. I already missed the God-Naming Platform Conference last time, so there’s no way I’m missing this.”

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “But Zhang Ruochen didn’t let us follow him.”

“Which is exactly why we should follow. Aren’t you curious where he’s heading to? If he finds us, we’ll just say we were

forced by Thousand Star Maiden to take her here.” Blackie smirked.

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “Do you know where Zhang Ruochen is?”

At ease, Blackie said, “I’m also very well-versed in Way of Space, and I can find out where Zhang Ruochen and Nine Heavenly Maiden were transported to using the forces left in the space transportation formation. This is nothing to me, of course.”

Blackie stopped the operation of the attack formation in the dojo and smiled. “Let me take to you meet Zhang Ruochen now, your highness.”

...

Tianluo Dojo was at the top of a glacier with steep cliffs surrounding it.

The dojo was established by an ancient God from Kunlun’s Field. It took Luo Xu, Nine Heavenly Maiden, and other talents from Kunlun’s Field a lot of energy to take it back.

Zhang Ruochen and Nine Heavenly Maiden walked side by side on the mountain road.

Nine Heavenly Maiden’s voice was as sweet and smooth as Saint Lady’s. “We’ll attack Xumi Dojo tomorrow at dawn, but before that, all the monks will talk about the strategies and other issues about that battle in Tianluo Dojo.”

“I don’t mind. You guys can talk,” said Zhang Ruochen.

All the monks from Kunlun’s Field had gathered in Tianluo Dojo already. There were hundreds of them, half of whom were savage beasts.

Kunlun’s Field was ranked two-thousandth-something on the ‘Ten Thousand Fields Merit Rank’, and it got a quota of twenty to enter Truth Godly Palace each month.

Whoosh!

The door of the palace opened, and snow poured in like feathers.

Zhang Ruochen and Nine Heavenly Maiden walked in with the wind.

After the door was closed again, the wind vanished, leaving nothing but silence in the palace.

Everyone stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Some of them were furious, some of them were apathetic, while some were cheerful.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon clenched its fist and hit the table, causing a loud banging sound.

Chi Wansui raised the wine cup with his sole arm, and had a huge sip while the alcohol was spilled, wetting his yellow cape.

However, they weren't the ones who spoke out first.

Chi Kunlun suddenly stood up, glared at Zhang Ruochen, and asked, "Why is Zhang Ruochen here?"

"That's right. Why is a monk from Guanghan Field here in our dojo?"

"That's right. We can kill him without breaking the rules of Truth Godly Palace, can't we?"

...

Several people spoke out in a peculiar way, and they all held some strong opinions against Zhang Ruochen. There was vague murderous Qi coming out of them.

Nine Heavenly Maiden frowned and said, "I'm the one who invited Zhang Ruochen. He's going to help us take back Xumi Dojo."

Nine Heavenly Maiden had a very high status in Kunlun's Field, not just because of her cultivation, but also because she was the closest to the empress.

The creatures who were talking negatively all shut up as they didn't want to offend Nine Heavenly Maiden.

However, Chi Kunlun didn't mind it at all. He said, "Why do you have to invite a dreg from the precious dynasty out of

everyone in the universe? We don't need his help at all. With 'All Lives Equal', it's no difficult job for us to take back Xumi Dojo."

Encouraged by Chi Kunlun, the monks who didn't like Zhang Ruochen all echoed what he said.

"That's right. You didn't need to invite him at all, your highness. We're more than strong enough to take back Xumi Dojo."

"Princess White Li, Wan Zhaoyi, Luo Xu, Li Xian, Xue Wuye and Lidi are all as powerful as, if not better than, Zhang Ruochen, as long as they're at the same level. We don't need him at all."

Everyone in the palace talked passionately.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Chi Kunlun and walked toward him.

"Zhang Ruochen..."

Nine Heavenly Maiden whispered his name.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say a word to her. Instead, he continued toward Chi Kunlun.

Chi Kunlun and the monks around him all stood up, operating their saint Qi in case he suddenly attacked Chi Kunlun.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Chi Kunlun and released his colossal saint might. That eleven-year-old teenager kept shivering, and his eyes kept turning red as he couldn't stop sweating.

However, he made it through the saint might. He stood firmly without looking scared.

Zhang Ruochen rescinded his saint might, nodded, and sat down in a seat beside Chi Kunlun, not caring how others looked at him.

Zhang Ruochen had mentally prepared himself for the backlash, so he didn't mind anything they said at all.

If they wanted to curse him, so be it.

Chapter 1737 - : Heaven Divine Pill

Chapter 1737: Heaven Divine Pill

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Chi Kunlun's entire body was wet. Now, he finally realized just how scary Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was.

Last time, Zhang Ruochen had suppressed his cultivation to his same level, so he didn't have such a terrifying aura.

Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen could intimidate him with just saintly might and reduce his combat abilities.

What annoyed Chi Kunlun was that Zhang Ruochen didn't leave even though he was bullied by so many cultivators.

Instead, he strode over to Chi Kunlun's side.

What was he planning?

Luo Xu sat on the right and uppermost seat of the hall. "Nine Heavenly Maiden, Wan Zhaoyi and I decided to invite Zhang Ruochen after we discussed it. If you have any objections, you can come speak to me."

The few dragons and new stars of the imperial court who'd targeted Zhang Ruochen earlier all shut their mouths now. The entire hall grew silent.

Luo Xu was now the leader of the humans of Kunlun's Field. He was a fifth step Saint King and had the Light Myriad Scroll. He was one of the top fighters and no one here dared to go against him.

Luo Xu had been able to improve so quickly because he had top talent. He was like the number one figure of his era.

Secondly, he'd accumulated for centuries in Kunlun's Field. His foundation was thicker than Zhang Ruochen, Wan Zhaoyi and Xue Wuye.

After coming to Heaven World, Luo Xu's cultivation naturally skyrocketed.

Of course, the main reason was still that the Martial Market Bank was wealthy. The imperial court also supported him greatly, providing him an endless flow of cultivation resources. They wanted him to grow into an emperor as soon as possible.

Chi Kunlun knew that he wasn't Zhang Ruochen's match now, so he suppressed the hatred inside and returned to his seat. However, his youthful eyes still looked over at Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Xu's eyes scanned the hall. "Since no one has objections, we'll continue discussing."

"Heaven Field is extremely strong," the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon said. "There are more than ten seventh step Saint Kings who cultivated in the Truth Heavenly Domain. Each one is a top figure below the Supreme Saint Realm and extremely combative. Our attack on the Xumi Dojo is a secret mission. Heaven Field doesn't know, so we have a chance to conquer it.

"If someone leaks the information, Heaven Field will prepare and send a large group of strong figures to the dojo. By then, we won't be able to conquer it even if we have ten times more cultivators, let alone just us now."

One was a vibrant sovereign world. One was a fallen world. The two had a difference in overall strength that was hundreds of times apart or even larger.

If any of the dozen seventh step Saint King figures in the Truth Heavenly Domain appeared at Xumi Dojo, it would be like an unmovable mountain to the Kunlun cultivators.

Because if you reached the seventh step but could still remain in the Truth Heavenly Domain, it meant that you had top talent

and terrifying combat abilities. Ji Fanxin and Fairy Tianchu were like that.

However, the Thousand Pistil Field only had one Ji Fanxin. The Tianchu Civilization only had one Fairy Tianchu. But the Heaven Field had more than ten of these strong figures. Shang Ziyang and Xun Ya were two of them.

In addition, there were still top figures from Ruiya Field, Soul Field, Black Demon Field and the others under Heaven Field.

One could say that Heaven Field only had to gather one-tenth of their people to Xumi Dojo and Kunlun's Field would return from the mission with great failure.

If Heaven Field gathered one-fifth of their people, the cultivators of Kunlun's Field would probably be massacred. They wouldn't even be able to escape.

Of course, Heaven Field didn't know that Kunlun's Field prepared to attack Xumi Dojo. The dojo didn't have a seventh step Saint King guarding it now. There was still a high possibility of conquering it.

"In a few hours, we'll start attacking. Even if information is leaked, Heaven Field wouldn't be able to send people over."

"Demon Rat and Six-Winged Fly King have been patrolling outside Xumi Dojo and haven't found anything amiss. Heaven Field definitely doesn't know that we want to attack Xumi Dojo."

"They don't know about the treasure left there by Saint Monks, so they don't place importance on it."

...

Zhang Ruochen just listened and didn't speak.

However, he got a bad feeling. He felt that Kunlun's Field was too optimistic.

Every world knew that Kunlun's Field Heaven and Earth Altar was about to be broken through. A battle between the Heaven and Hell Worlds would erupt there soon. Even Zhang Ruochen who'd already joined Guanghan Field was attacked by Heaven Field.

How could they let the elites of Kunlun's Field go back?

They probably hadn't attacked Kunlun's Field yet because they wanted to find a chance to get them all in one fell swoop.

Nine Heavenly Maiden had been watching Zhang Ruochen.

"Zhang Ruochen, you seem to have something to say?"

"Since we invited you here, you are a part of us," Wan Zhaoyi said. "You can speak freely."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Have you gone inside to investigate the Xumi Dojo before this?"

Sitting beside the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, the Rosefinch Fairy laughed. "You think you're the only smart one and all of us are stupid? Since we want to conquer it, we obviously know every detail about it."

"The Demon Rat snuck into the dojo more than once," Luo Xu said. "It brought back a lot of useful information. You should be clearer about its abilities than us."

The Demon Rat was a powerful Taigu Remain. It obviously wasn't hard for it to sneak into a dojo.

Then Zhang Ruochen asked, "There should be a space transfer formation in the Xumi Dojo, right? Once we start fighting, Heaven Field can send a large group of strong figures through the formation."

"We already thought of this problem," Luo Xu said. "The Light Myriad Scroll can seal space so the transfer formation will become ineffective."

Some of the cultivators in the hall scoffed. They felt that Zhang Ruochen was asking childish questions.

With the wise Nine Heavenly Maiden, calm Luo Xu, and Wan Zhaoyi, who was familiar with military strategy, Kunlun's Field was sufficiently prepared. They'd also considered everything so nothing would go wrong.

"Zhang Ruochen, do you have any other questions? Ask them all and I can answer them one by one, ha," the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon said, laughing.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Nothing more!”

Actually, he had another thought that all the cultivators here had overlooked.

Since Kunlun’s Field could send the Demonic Rat into the Xumi Dojo, could Heaven Field not send a similar type of creature into the Tianluo Dojo? Heaven Field might already know about their so-called secret mission.

But the battle was right before them. He couldn’t say something like this to everyone, because it might disturb their morale.

Plus, even if they knew about this problem, so what? Could they give up on the Xumi Dojo.

Clearly no.

Zhang Ruochen decided to talk about this with Nine Heavenly Maiden and Luo Xu later alone.

Nine Heavenly Maiden walked to the hall’s center with fairy-like steps. She took out two colorful pill furnaces with three legs. “The empress knows that conquering the Xumi Dojo will definitely be difficult and everyone may get hurt or even die. Thus, she blessed us with two furnaces of pills before the battle.

“One furnace has 208 of the Dragon Divine Essence Pills.”

After she said that, joyful sounds arose throughout the hall.

“The Dragon Divine Essence Pill is made from a god’s bone marrow and blood with dozens of 10,000-year-old medicines added in. Only cultivators who’ve contributed greatly to Kunlun’s Field are qualified to use it.”

“She took out more than 200 pills at once. It seems that everyone can get one.”

“I wonder if this one or the Sub-divine Ze Pill from last time would be stronger.”

“Who cares? It can improve your cultivation greatly, so just be happy!”

Next, Nine Heavenly Maiden said, “The other furnace of pills is called the Divine Ze Pill. There are 37 in total. You can receive one if you’re a Saint King.”

Boom!

All the cultivators went crazy.

The last time the empress gave out Sub-divine Ze Pill, many cultivators were able to enter the Saint King Realm instantly.

The Divine Ze Pill was clearly even higher than the Sub-divine Ze Pill. Just how strong could it be?

Whoosh!

The Dragon Divine Essence Pills and Sub-divine Ze Pill flew out of the furnace at the same time, shining with brilliant light.

The two types of pills had all nurtured a spirit and pill soul. Their effects were extraordinary.

The soul of the Dragon Divine Essence Pill was a golden dragon. It was very strong and its combat ability was like a half-step Saint King. It let out a deafening roar. Hundreds of half-step Saint King dragons danced in the hall. It was astonishing.

However, they’d already been tamed and didn’t attack.

Otherwise, these Saints would definitely die after eating the Dragon Divine Essence Pill.

The Divine Ze Pill’s pill soul was suppressed inside the pill. Its aura was even more terrifying. It was even stronger than Zhang Ruochen’s saintly might.

That aura was very gentle. Evidently, the Divine Ze Pill’s soul had been tamed too.

Now, Zhang Ruochen seemed to realize why some cultivators of Kunlun’s Field had improved so quickly. It seemed that it wasn’t only because Kunlun’s Field had a time and space treasure like the Tianlun Print. It was more because Chi Yao had killed a god.

The corpse of a newly-killed god was a treasure trove. Opening up and utilizing it completely could help a weak

world quickly become a strong world.

The Dragon Divine Essence Pill and Divine Ze Pill all used a god's corpse as the main ingredients.

How many more of these types of pills had Kunlun's Field produced?

What confused Zhang Ruochen was that the Dragon Divine Essence Pill was a top earth level pill. The Divine Ze Pill was a heaven divine pill. When did Kunlun's Field get such a powerful pill master who could make heaven divine pills?

After all, a regular Pill Saint Master had a great fail rate for producing heaven divine pills. It was a feat to make one at a time. Only those of the Earth Master level could make dozens of heaven divine pills at once.

But of the 8,000-some lower worlds in Heaven World, less than half had a Pill Earth Master.

To a large world, a Pill Earth Master was just as valuable as a god. Even Gu Songzi who was almost like a god of pills was still not at the Earth Master level.

Chapter 1738 - Shocking Change

Chapter 1738: Shocking Change

“There’s an extra Divine Ze Pill. Here.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden held a Divine Ze Pill with purple Qi and handed it to Zhang Ruochen. She seemed very gentle and elegant.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Nine Heavenly Maiden’s consciousness was that of the Saint Lady now.

The other eight had broken off their minds and went into deep cultivation state. Martial Saint Canglan was absorbing the Ice and Fire Phoenix’s inheritance, Qing Mo was studying the Food God’s essence, Goddess Siming was studying the mysterious spells of the ancient pavilion...

This was why Zhang Ruochen felt positively about the Nine Heavenly Maiden and even trusted her.

But seeing the Divine Ze Pill in her hands, Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No need!”

“The Divine Ze Pill is a heavenly divine pill. It’s rare even in Heaven World. If you take it, you’ll definitely improve greatly.”

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen still wasn’t convinced, it dawned on Nine Heavenly Maiden. “Are you not accepting it because it’s given by the empress?”

“I know what you want and you understand me,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Why are you still trying to persuade me?”

Nine Heavenly Maiden realized that it was impossible to make him and the empress reconcile.

The empress was the one she respected the most, while she appreciated and even loved Zhang Ruochen. But the two were mortal enemies.

She was stuck in the middle and how could she not feel frustrated? She always wanted to do something to soften the problems between them, but...it was all in vain.

Zhang Ruochen scanned the entire hall and smiled. "This Divine Ze Pill isn't extra, right? It's yours. I appreciate your intentions, but you shouldn't get involved in my rivalry with Chi Yao."

On the side, Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue stared at Zhang Ruochen and Nine Heavenly Maiden.

However, the two were talking with Spiritual Power, so they couldn't hear the conversation at all.

However, they were very confused. Since Zhang Ruochen was a rebel from the previous dynasty, traitor of Kunlun's Field, and a murderous demon, then why would the pure maiden have a good relationship with him? And even Luo Xu and Wan Zhaoyi respected this man?

Zhang Ruochen asked the question that he was most concerned about.

Nine Heavenly Maiden wasn't surprised at all. Solemnly, she said, "We've also thought of this problem. It's very possible that our secret mission has already become known to Heaven Field, but there's no other way. We must conquer the Xumi Dojo."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. Since Nine Heavenly Maiden had thought of this, then she must have made some preparations.

"Actually, our attack time isn't even tomorrow at the break of dawn," Nine Heavenly Maiden said.

"Then when is it?"

"It's in two hours. No more than five people know about this. Even if Heaven Field knows beforehand that we'll attack Xumi Dojo, the change in time can give us back some advantage. Plus, they'll never be able to think that we could ask you for help."

It was eight hours before planned. This must be an unexpected move by Kunlun's Field.

Chuckling, Zhang Ruochen asked, “Am I one of your hidden cards too?”

“If we activate All Lives Equal, who in the same realm is your match? In my opinion, you’re not a hidden card. You’re a top card that can counter all enemies.” Nine Heavenly Maiden looked at Zhang Ruochen with extremely appreciative and misty eyes.

“I need to go out for a moment.”

Zhang Ruochen got up and walked out of the gate.

Walking out of the hall, Zhang Ruochen gazed at the darkening sky and fell silent for a long while. Then he took out many communication scrolls. He carved on them and sent them out.

Just in case, he sent messages to Zhen Yuan, Fairy Cihang, Le, and Han Qiu.

Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang might not fight for Kunlun’s Field, but if anything major happened during tonight’s battle, they wouldn’t just stand by and watch.

It would be great even if they just used the Taoism and Buddha Ways to restrict the strong figures of Heaven Field.

When Zhang Ruochen returned to the hall, everyone had already eaten the Dragon Divine Essence Pills and Divine Ze Pills and they were refining them.

Roar!

A young Saint of the imperial court refined the Dragon Divine Essence Pill and moved up two realms directly. His Spiritual Power reached a peak state and a layer of golden vapor scales appeared on his skin.

“Ha, a breakthrough! This feeling is amazing!”

Saint after Saint refined the Dragon Divine Essence Pills. Some of them reached the Saint King Realm directly and they released powerful saint might.

Each cultivator’s bodies were covered in a layer of golden dragon scales like armor for their entire body.

Saint Kings that refined the Divine Ze Pill found that the Rules of Saintly Way in their Sea of Qi multiplied quickly. Their cultivations had a great breakthrough and they were all very excited.

Morale lifted.

Everyone was more confident in taking down the Xumi Dojo.

Luo Xu refined a portion of the Divine Ze Pill and reached the sixth step Saint King Realm. He stood up from his seat, saying, “The empress cares greatly about the Xumi Dojo battle. If we can conquer it tonight, there will be even greater rewards.”

Wan Zhaoyi also stood up. “The Xumi Dojo was created by saint monks. It should be a cultivation paradise for Kunlun’s Field, but it was taken by Heaven Field for 100,000 years. Tonight, we will wash it with blood and take back what belongs to us.”

“Tonight?”

“Aren’t we conquering the Xumi Dojo at dawn tomorrow?”

Many cultivators were confused.

“Yes, tonight. More accurately, right now.”

Li Qian, leader of the savage beasts, stood up. Her elegant body looked beautiful. She stared at Nine Heavenly Maiden with handsome eyes. “The Xumi Dojo is one million miles away from us. What is the extremely fast way of reaching it that you mentioned?”

“Space transfer formation.”

Hundreds of gazes stared at Zhang Ruochen.

He was quite surprised, but he quickly understood.

There was a scoff beside him.

The Time and Space Martial Deity Print on Chi Kunlun’s forehead appeared and spun slowly. “Zhang Ruochen isn’t the only one that can set up a space transfer formation. I can do it too. Come, let us go now. If we do not conquer the Xumi Dojo, then we shall die there.”

Hundreds of Saints and Saint Kings flew powerfully out of the hall, going toward the space transfer formation.

“I’ll go bring that friend of mine over and meet up with you all later.”

After saying that to Nine Heavenly Maiden, Zhang Ruochen rushed out of Tianluo Dojo. Like a beam of light, he disappeared among the snowy mountains.

“Zhang Ruochen ran away like this?”

“Doesn’t he act so cocky? How come he escaped at the critical moment?”

The Rosefinch Fairy sneered. “Maybe it’s because you all kept bullying him and he finally couldn’t take it, so he left in anger!”

“Then, just let him leave,” the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon said. “We’ll activate All Lives Equal anyway. Everyone will be in the same realm and nobody’s more powerful than the other. Losing him won’t affect anything.”

Only Nine Heavenly Maiden knew that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t running away. He really was going to bring a powerful friend over.

However, this friend had a special identity and wasn’t suitable for appearing before Kunlun’s Field. That’s why Zhang Ruochen left him outside the Tianluo Dojo.

This friend was Xie Chengzi.

The cultivators of Kunlun’s field were already biased against Zhang Ruochen. If they saw Xie Chengzi, they would probably go crazy. This was why Zhang Ruochen did not bring him to join the meeting with Kunlun’s field.

After meeting up with Xie Chengzi, Zhang Ruochen stood in the air and said, “Come with me. I’m afraid tonight’s battle will be hard...oh...”

He suddenly sensed something and said harshly, “Come out.”

Not far from Xie Chengzi, the space trembled and Blackie’s round face appeared. It grinned at Zhang Ruochen. “You’re

getting more and more alert. My invisibility formations can't fool you anymore."

Next, the Amazing Little Taoist walked out of the formation. With a stiff face, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, we're only here because we had no other choice. It's her, it's all her. She did cruel things to me. That's why the Massacre Emperor brought her to you."

"Am I that powerful? It's you who led the way. It has nothing to do with me."

"You were the one who wanted to follow. It has nothing to do with me."

Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist started fighting again, rolling in the snow.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Thousand Star Maiden and frowned. "Why are you here?"

"No reason? I'm just curious where you went so sneakily." The Thousand Star Maiden's starry eyes moved gently. Smiling, she said, "Now, I finally know that you really do have a grand mission tonight. How about you bring me along to play?"

Blackie and the Amazing Little Taoist stopped and said in unison, "We want to go play too."

"Play? So many cultivators will die tonight. It's best if you all don't go."

Time was tight and Zhang Ruochen was too lazy to explain to them. He was about to bring Xie Chengzi back to the Tianluo Dojo when—

Kaboom!

Just then, there was a huge explosion.

Zhang Ruochen spun around and looked toward the Tianluo Dojo, on a mountaintop hundreds of miles away. He saw a bloody sword, thousands of feet long. It unleashed Six Yao Complete Power and hovered above the Tianluo Dojo.

The Tianluo Dojo's formation was cut apart by that sword. A portion of the 10,000-meter-tall snow mountain was cut down.

Strong Sword Qi traveled from hundreds of meters away, whooshing and leaving behind dense marks on the ground below Zhang Ruochen.

One could imagine how strong this sword was.

Kaboom!

An avalanche erupted.

“Oh no, this is a problem!”

Zhang Ruochen used a physical technique and flew toward the Tianluo Dojo like a meteorite streaking across the sky.

“There's a good show. Let's go follow him.”

Blackie didn't sense the severity of the matter at all. Instead, it was excited. It spread its wings and flew closely behind Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1739 - Enchantment Saint Master

Chapter 1739: Enchantment Saint Master

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the space transfer formation was activated, most of the Kunlun's Field cultivators left the Tianluo Dojo. Only a few people remained to guard it.

One of them was Ye Honglei, the new leader of the Eastern Black Market Excellence Hall. She had once been one of the seven Star Emissaries beside the young lord, Emperor One—the Red Wish Emissary.

Emperor One had died, Murong Yue was in isolation and the other Star Emissaries had all been killed by Zhang Ruochen. Ye Honglei was the only one left of the Eastern Black Market's younger generation.

Reaching the half-step Saint King Realm, Ye Honglei naturally became the new leader of the Black Market.

Earlier, she'd taken the Dragon Divine Essence Pill and reached the Saint King Realm.

The Black Market Evil Way Saints were unhappy. "How come they can go conquer the Xumi Dojo and be rewarded while we can only stay and guard the Tianluo Dojo?"

Ye Honglei was a very mesmerizing demoness. Now that her cultivation was complete, both her temperament and enchantments had improved.

She just looked at the Evil Way Saint and that man's heart sped up, face turning red. It was as if his soul would leave his

body.

“Ha, you might not be rewarded after going to the Xumi Dojo. This battle has many uncertainties. They might suffer great casualties. Staying in the Tianluo Dojo might not be a bad thing.”

Ye Honglei’s face was filled with beauty.

“Leader Ye is...right.”

That Evil Way Saint lowered his head, not daring to look at her.

He knew that this leader Ye wasn’t just beautiful and good at enchantments. She was very strong and harsh. She’d defeated many powerful people to get her current status and identity. She was definitely a strong woman of the Evil Way.

She couldn’t be offended.

“We can’t lower our guard. We must be careful at all times.”

Ye Honglei couldn’t pinpoint it, but she felt unsettled, like danger was nearby. Perhaps because she always competed with those Evil Way figures in the Black Market, her wariness was always above others.

The other Saints who’d been left behind didn’t feel any alarm. They just said something offhandedly and prepared to leave...

Whoosh!

A mass of blood-red light appeared on the horizon, dyeing the snowy peaks red.

“Careful. Activate the defensive formation immediately.”

Ye Honglei’s pretty face faltered. She hurriedly released Spiritual Power and Holy Qi. They formed a beam of light that went into the ground.

Boom!

Instantly, densely-packed formation runes emerged all over the Tianluo Dojo.

A thousand-foot-long sword flew out of the bloody light. It unleashed Six Yao Complete Power and struck down.

The defensive formation hadn't been activated fully and cracked with a boom. The formation runes within the dojo broke apart inch by inch. Other than Ye Honglei, all the Saints fell into pools of blood. Some died; some were badly hurt.

That sword had been terrifying. Thankfully, the defensive formation had blocked some of it. Otherwise, no one in the dojo would have been able to survive.

Ye Honglei's right arm bled. She raised her head to look at the blade looming in the sky. It was like a bloody moon, radiating with suffocating power.

“Collect.”

Wang Xu, leader of Ruiya Field, grabbed in the air. The thousand-foot-long bloody sword quickly shrunk and flew into his hand.

“Let's go! No one in the Tianluo Dojo can be spared.”

With Wang Xu as the leader, a dozen black-clothed cultivators of Ruiya Field strode into the ratty dojo. It was like the arrival of a group of death gods.

“You...who are you...”

A Saint of Kunlun's field was lying in a pool of blood. He struggled to get up.

Poof!

A black-clothed figure behind Wang Xu stabbed a spear into his forehead.

He twisted his wrist and the bones cracked. That Kunlun's Field Saint's skull cracked like a broken watermelon.

Red Wish Emissary watched the incoming Ruiya Field cultivators. She felt that they were all very strong. Four or five of them were far above her.

Wang Xu played with the Xu Moon Blade and sneered. “Kunlun's Field only left these nobodies to guard the Tianluo Dojo. What a disappointment... Hey, there's a beautiful female Saint King.”

The Ruiya Field cultivators all stared at Ye Honglei, the sole survivor of Kunlun's Field.

Ye Honglei knew that she wasn't their match, so she put her hands together and bowed to the dojo's center. "Ancient gods of Kunlun's Field, please use your remaining divine power to activate All Lives Equal."

Brilliant divine light spread over from the dojo's center.

Invisible strength fell upon Wang Xu's group. All of their cultivations were repressed to Ye Honglei's level.

First step Saint King Realm!

Wang Xu didn't stop Ye Honglei. Still smiling, he said, "Your cultivation isn't bad and you're very pretty too. It's a pity to kill you. Join Ruiya Field and follow me. Not only can you keep your life, but you'll also benefit greatly in the future."

"It's a pity," Ye Honglei said. "I don't want to be anyone's slave."

"You don't look like a stupid woman. Don't you know that I can capture you and destroy your mind? In the end, you'd still submit to me. But a woman with a destroyed mind is no different from a zombie. I don't like those."

While thinking of a way to escape, Ye Honglei said, "You broke into Kunlun's Field dojo and killed people inside it. Aren't you afraid of getting punished by the Truth Godly Palace?"

"As long as you submit to me and don't spread the news, who would know that we killed people?" Wang Xu asked, chuckling.

Suddenly, Ye Honglei used extreme speed and flew toward the space transfer formation.

She could only escape by using the formation.

Wang Xu didn't chase after her. He just extended an arm and waved lightly. "Capture her. I want her alive."

"Lord Wang Xu, don't worry. She's a mere first step Saint King. Capturing her is easy."

Two black figures flew out behind Wang Xu.

These two had higher cultivation than the Red Wish Emissary. Even though they were restricted to the first step Saint King Realm, they were still amazingly fast.

“Interesting. She’s even faster than the Qu Brothers.”

Wang Xu pointed and the Xu Moon Blade flew out.

Poof.

With the support of the rules of light, the Xu Moon Blade caught up to Ye Honglei and spun around her delicate frame. Countless Sword Qi surrounded her.

By the time she broke through, the Qu Brothers were before her.

Qu Feng sneered. “You’re no match for us. Give up!”

“We don’t want to attack,” Qu Shan said coldly. “If we hurt you, we’ll probably get berated by Lord Wang Xu.”

A faint ring of blood appeared on Ye Honglei’s pale neck.

It was from the Xu Moon Blade that Wang Xu had sent out.

Wang Xu didn’t kill her. He was intimidating her.

He was warning her that, even in the same realm, he was still able to cut off her head with one move.

How can there be such a terrifying person in the world?

Ye Honglei’s heart sank and her extremities grew cold.

Looking at the incoming Wang Xu, she realized that it would be very hard to escape with this person here.

She was ambitious and wasn’t willing to submit to anyone.

This was why she’d teamed up with Zhang Ruochen back then to kill Emperor One and become the winner.

The Qu Brothers sneered, thinking that Ye Honglei was like a sheep surrounded by wolves. She would definitely submit.

Just then, Ye Honglei’s eyes turned red. “Horror Enchantment Mirror,” she said.

With her as the center, red strings appeared within hundreds of meters, weaving into an enchantment world.

Only the Heavenly Eyes of a Spiritual Power Saint could see the strings.

The Qu Brothers seemed to see something terrifying. Their smiles vanished and fear took over. Lowering onto one knee before Ye Honglei, they said fearfully, “Greetings, Elder... How come you came to the Truth Heavenly Domain...”

Seeing the Qu Brothers kneel down, the Ruiya Field cultivators were all stunned.

Wang Xu had already entered the enchantment but wasn't affected. Instead, he smiled. “An Enchantment Saint Master! I found a treasure.”

Enchantment was very hard to cultivate.

An Enchantment Saint Master was very rare and could sometimes be very useful.

Ye Honglei was only a first step Saint King, but with the status of Enchantment Saint Master, even fourth or fifth step Saint Kings had to be careful around her.

Wang Xu used extreme speed and rushed at Ye Honglei to restrict her quickly.

Seeing that Wang Xu wasn't affected by the enchantment, Ye Honglei was stunned. She hurriedly took out an ancient gem. Holding it in her hands, she uttered, “Fourth level of the Ten Enchantment Days, Thousand Hallucinations.”

That ancient gem wasn't ordinary. It had a strong history in Kunlun's Field. Apparently, it was a treasure left behind by an ancient god.

Suddenly, 1,000 of Ye Honglei's figures appeared before Wang Xu. They danced beautifully. It was impossible to see which one was her true form.

Wang Xu didn't panic. Staying calm, he activated the divine power of that treasure in his Sea of Qi and gathered it at his eyes.

When he saw through the hallucination, Ye Honglei's sword was already at his forehead.

Boom!

Wang Xu's eyes shot out lightning and hit Ye Honglei's body, sending her flying. She landed heavily and blood poured out of her red lips. She looked tragically beautiful.

"How can you see through my Thousand Hallucinations?"

Ye Honglei had never met such a terrifying enemy before. She hadn't feared anyone in the same realm, not even the Deities of the imperial court. But this man before her was terrifying. She couldn't defeat him at all. Her confidence was hit and she sank into despair.

Wang Xu was surprised too. Still shocked, he said, "Kunlun's Field really is an undying territory filled with hidden figures. A random cultivator almost hurt me."

He took out a Saint-binding Chain and strode toward Ye Honglei.

Whoosh!

Just then, ear-piercing wind sounded above the Tianluo Dojo.

A meteorite-like light flew from the horizon and landed near Wang Xu and Ye Honglei with a boom. It created a huge crater.

Dust rose up from the crater.

Next, Zhang Ruochen's handsome figure walked out of the ditch. He stared at Wang Xu and Ye Honglei, a bit surprised. "Interesting. All familiar people!"

Chapter 1740 - The Powerful Zhang Ruochen

Chapter 1740: The Powerful Zhang Ruochen

It was as if Ye Honglei just saw her saving grace. A joyous expression appeared on her face and she flew toward Zhang Ruochen as a red streak.

If someone else had come, they probably wouldn't be able to change the situation—even if they were Wan Zhaoyi or Xue Wuye.

But Zhang Ruochen might really be able to compete with the terrible sword-wielding man. At the very least, helping her escape wouldn't be hard.

She'd heard of Zhang Ruochen's legends in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

“These cultivators are all very strong, especially the leader,” Ye Honglei said to Zhang Ruochen telepathically. “They're practically undefeatable in the same realm. We must go to the space transfer formation to have a chance to escape.”

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't escape. His eyes were sharp. There was an aggressive aura.

Ye Honglei grew anxious. “The Tianluo Dojo is already destroyed. This can't be changed. They have more people and they're so strong. There's no need to go up against them.”

But next, she discovered with a shock that this horribly strong sword-wielding man and the dozen black-clothed cultivators acted like they'd run into a great enemy. They gathered together.

Wang Xu's Xu Moon Blade released a great amount of Sword Qi. It formed a territory that surrounded him tightly. The other cultivators all took out saint weapons. Some held staffs and others held rune scrolls.

What were they afraid of?

Zhang Ruochen?

With the sword territory as defense, Wang Xu grew calmer. “Zhang Ruochen, weren’t you already driven out by the god of Kunlun’s Field? How come you’re in their dojo?”

“Then, why are you in their dojo?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Don’t you know that the Truth Godly Palace’s rules state that you’ll pay with your life if you kill in another world’s dojo?”

“What proof do you have that we killed them?” Wang Xu asked.

Zhang Ruochen pointed at Ye Honglei. “There’s a witness before you. It’s not hard to collect battle marks as evidence.”

“Destroying another world’s dojo is already a great crime. Plus, you broke in and killed people.” Ye Honglei took out a scroll and opened it.

Next, an image was projected onto the scroll.

It was the broken Tianluo Dojo. With Wang Xu as the leader, a dozen Ruiya Field cultivators stood across from her. There were many bloody corpses on the ground.

“This scroll is enough to sentence you.”

After a pause, Ye Honglei continued, “But we don’t have to. As long as you retreat from the Tianluo Dojo, I can give you this scroll.”

In the end, Ye Honglei was still afraid of them and was worried that they wouldn’t be able to escape. She’d recorded this image to save her life.

Wang Xu took her words as a joke. He sneered without speaking. How could Zhang Ruochen let them leave?

The Ruiya Field cultivators radiated with stronger and stronger saintly might. They were all gathering power.

In the night sky, an owl saint beast flew over. Its two claws grabbed a strangely-shaped figure.

Thud!

It let go and the owl saint beast tossed the creature onto the ground.

Wang Xu's eyes narrowed. "Yu Tu."

The thing called Yu Tu lay on the ground on its last breath. "Lord...that...that owl is...very..."

Before it could finish, the creature died and its body turned into vapor.

Only a pile of black dirt was left behind.

The owl beast closed its wings and landed on the ground. It appeared beside Zhang Ruochen and said arrogantly, "It's just an earth elf. How can it fool me?"

"What's going on?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"That creature is a rare earth elf," Blackie said. "Earth elves are when special dirt or rock grow a mind and come to life.

"That earth elf was very powerful too. It was already a Saint King. It could move quickly through mountains and rivers, unaffected by formation runes underground. its aura is also very weak. You can only discover it if your Spiritual Power is close to the Supreme Saint Realm.

"It was unlucky to meet me. My eyes are the eyes of a Supreme Saint. I can see it even if it hides thousands of meters underground."

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. "The Tianluo Dojo was attacked as soon as the cultivators left through the space transfer formation. It seems that this earth elf had been hiding and sent the message to Wang Xu... Oh no, I'm afraid the cultivators of Kunlun's Field fell into a trap set up by Heaven Field."

"Haha, the cultivators of Kunlun's Field will all die tonight."

Wang Xu grasped his sword with both hands. Four layers of saintly light appeared on the blade and he struck down at Zhang Ruochen.

Not only was the Sword Qi extremely fierce, it was also very fast.

Ye Honglei was forced to keep retreating. Now, she finally realized that the man hadn't used his full power earlier. This was his true strength!

Was this really a first step Saint King's power?

Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid. Sparks flew from the defensive Fire God armor on his right arm and fist.

Boom!

He punched forward.

In the distance, a fiery star seemed to appear before Zhang Ruochen.

Wang Xu's full-power attack was undone so cleanly. He instead sped back to escape the incoming wave of fire.

"How can Zhang Ruochen be so strong?"

Wang Xu yelled, "What are you waiting for? Attack together!"

The black-clothed cultivators of Ruiya Field all attacked. Some used saint weapons, some cast spells and techniques, and others threw out their runes.

This commotion was like heavenly judgment.

The entire sky above the Tianluo Dojo was covered in the light from the saint spells and techniques.

Zhang Ruochen didn't escape. He just shook his head and used the Spatial Move to attack instead.

"Zhang Ruochen!" Ye Honglei cried. She prepared to use an enchantment to help him.

After all, she wouldn't be able to escape if Zhang Ruochen died.

Blackie stopped her with a smile. "Don't worry about him. They're just nobodies. Zhang Ruochen can handle them by himself."

"Nobodies?"

Ye Honglei felt that Blackie was exaggerating. Merely that sword-wielding man was definitely not a nobody. It would be

difficult to find anyone who could counter him in all of Kunlun's Field.

But next, Ye Honglei saw something that she'd never be able to forget.

Like a death god, Zhang Ruochen rushed before the dozen black-clothed cultivators and punched. Blinding fiery fist power was unleashed, sending everyone flying.

The cultivators who hadn't reached the Saint King Realm were crushed by the fist force, turning into specks of fire.

The Saint Kings weren't well off either. They used defensive tactics, but they still spat out blood. They fell onto the ground like seven or eight scarecrows.

Only two or three could stand up.

This was because their own cultivations were strong. They were at least fifth step Saint Kings, so they were able to bear it.

Zhang Ruochen knew time was tight, so he acted very quickly. He used the Spatial Move and appeared before one fifth step Saint King. He slammed a palm over.

The flaming palm print grew larger in the fifth step Saint King's eyes.

Boom!

The palm print fell down. The fifth step Saint King was slammed into ground flesh before he could escape.

Then Zhang Ruochen attacked a sixth step Saint King. The man knew he was much weaker than Zhang Ruochen. In this critical moment, he actually said, "Zhang Ruochen, this is Kunlun's Field's dojo. You can't kill—"

Zhang Ruochen's fist broke through the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor and penetrated the man's body. The bodily injury wasn't fatal, but Zhang Ruochen's punch had shattered his saint soul.

When that sixth step Saint King's corpse fell slowly to the ground, the remaining fifth step Saint King was pale from fear.

His legs kept trembling.

He looked toward Wang Xu.

Now, he could only hope that Wang Xu could delay Zhang Ruochen so he could escape.

Ye Honglei's jaw dropped from shock. The group of black-clothed figures who were like the Grim Reaper earlier were as weak as children before Zhang Ruochen.

After coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, she'd heard many legends about Zhang Ruochen. She knew he was strong, but she didn't think he would be this strong.

When she first met Zhang Ruochen, she'd just viewed him as a talented youth. She didn't even think that he was better than her.

Now, Ye Honglei had become the powerful and intimidating Evil Way leader as desired, but that talented youth was at a level that she had to look up at.

One was better than the last.

Blackie laughed. "See? There are very few people in the same realm who are qualified to be Zhang Ruochen's match. Only a world leader like Wang Xu can take a few hits."

"Zhang Ruochen made up for his shortcoming in the Way of Truth. I'm not his match in the same realm anymore."

Wang Xu felt very bitter. He had a strong feeling of failure.

However, he didn't escape. He acted very calm. Holding the Xu Moon Blade in one hand, and with a scroll hidden in his other palm, he proclaimed, "Zhang Ruochen, we fought twice earlier and I failed each time. This time, I will not lose again."

Zhang Ruochen walked over. "With your abilities, it'll be impressive if you can take five hits from me. You can only defeat me if you have other hidden cards."

Wang Xu added the rules of light to his legs.

Whoosh!

He turned into a streak of light and rushed instantly to the top of Zhang Ruochen's head. He sent out the scroll that he had hidden.

Wang Xu formed a fingerprint. He pointed down and a demon blade broke out of the flying scroll. It unleashed terrible power that ripped apart the sky and struck down at Zhang Ruochen.

“This Sword Emperor Rune's power can kill a seventh step Saint King. You won't be able to survive at your peak state, let alone being restricted to the first step Saint King Realm now.” Wang Xu's cold eyes had a smile in them. He felt that he'd determined the result.

Last time in the Yin and Yang Palace, Wang Xu had been injured by Zhang Ruochen's Hundred Steps No Life Rune and this affected him greatly.

Thus, he spent about half of his savings to buy this Sword Emperor Rune just for Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1741 - Divine Planet and Purple God Mountain

Chapter 1741: Divine Planet and Purple God Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blackie's expression changed. "Hurry and remove All Lives Equal," it said hurriedly.

Ye Honglei's expression faltered. How could she know that the sword-wielding man had such a terrible hidden card?

The aura of that demon sword was like a demon god arriving. It could kill all beings in the world.

Even if she stood 100 feet away, she still felt like she would get torn apart by that Qi.

However, Ye Honglei was still a ruler, so she didn't get scared dumb. She reacted quickly, bowing toward the center of the dojo. She communicated with the remnant of the ancient god's soul to deactivate All Lives Equal.

Blackie stood before Ye Honglei. It spread its wings, radiating with blazing flames. Each feather had turned into a metal blade. Dense Sword Qi hit Blackie, creating metallic clashes.

Ye Honglei looked at Zhang Ruochen in the distance. The huge demon sword was about to fall upon his head.

Whoosh!

Golden light shone from his body.

A golden umbrella appeared in his hand. It spun and grew bigger, pushing up like a gold mushroom and clashing against the sword.

Argh!

A deafening dragon's roar came from the umbrella.

Eight huge golden dragons flew out of the umbrella. They were hundreds of feet long and created intense winds. All of the stones, trees, and palaces in the Tianluo Dojo began flying.

Kaboom!

Two forces clashed. The demonic sword and the eight dragons were at a standstill for a while before shattering at the same time.

Above the Eight-dragon Umbrella, Wang Xu's headpiece and clothes were torn by the golden energy. His body flew out like a broken kite.

The Eight-dragon Umbrella shrunk quickly until it was a regular size and appeared in Zhang Ruochen's left hand.

The ground underfoot sunk down several meters. It was like a crater. However, he stood up straight and tall like a white-clothed emperor walking in the mortal world with an umbrella.

The destructive energy from that hit killed all of the injured Ruiya Field cultivators.

They couldn't bear the clash of power from the seventh step Saint King level at such a close distance at all.

Only that fifth step Saint King survived. Face full of fear, he fled from the Tianluo Dojo. He flew among the snowy peaks, fleeing toward the horizon.

Zhang Ruochen collected the Eight-dragon Umbrella. His Holy Qi spun quickly, entering the umbrella.

The umbrella was densely covered in golden patterns. The eight dragons flew out again, flying around the handle.

Whoosh!

The Eight-dragon Umbrella flew out as a streak of gold light. It quickly caught up with the fifth step Saint King, broke through his protective Holy Qi, and penetrated him.

The umbrella opened and twirled. The Saint King's strong body was torn apart. Saint blood splattered onto the pure white snowy peak like a blooming flower.

The Eight-dragon Umbrella wasn't stained by blood. It cut a beautiful arc in the sky and flew back to Zhang Ruochen's hand.

Wang Xu was protected by divine patterns, so the power from the Eight-dragon Umbrella and Sword Emperor Rune only injured him slightly. It wasn't fatal.

"It seems that Ziyang is right. You are a great enemy. I'd underestimated you before."

Wang Xu chuckled wryly. He'd been arrogant his entire life, never caring about any cultivators of the same age. He took a harsh hit from Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stood across from him. "Are you surrendering?"

"Surrender? Even if we have to die together, I'll never surrender."

Wang Xu raised his hands. The abstruse martial deity print appeared on his forehead. It released a beam of light that shot into the clouds.

Was he...planning on deactivating his saint source?

Zhang Ruochen activated spatial power. He waved his hand and a long spatial crack flew over.

Before the spatial crack could approach Wang Xu, it was shaken by an aggressive force and actually flew to the side.

"This power..."

Zhang Ruochen was slightly moved.

This force could affect the spatial structure. It spread from Wang Xu's Sea of Qi and swept further and further.

Soon, the mountain that the Tianluo Dojo was on had a dozen cracks from the power. The huge mountain was about to collapse.

Ye Honglei's face paled. "Should we activate All Lives Equal again?"

"Wait a bit. I don't believe this fourth step Saint King can create such a big storm." Blackie stared at Wang Xu. The fire burning on its body grew hotter as if turning into a volcano.

With Ye Honglei's cultivation, she felt that she was going to melt from Blackie's fire. She could barely hold up even after she retreated outside the dojo.

Now, the Tianluo Dojo had become a fatal land. Any cultivators below the third step Saint King Realm would die if they got close.

Kaboom!

Following a loud boom, a ball that was thousands of feet wide appeared above Wang Xu's head.

Half of the entire sky was covered by the ball.

That ball flew out of Wang Xu's Sea of Qi. It was actually a star that had shrunk thousands of times.

The star's aura was very scary. As it spun, the force made Zhang Ruochen and Blackie retreat at the same time. The ground underfoot kept cracking and collapsing.

However, with Wang Xu's cultivation, he clearly couldn't control the star.

As it spun, his entire body trembled. Blood seeped out of his pores. He really wanted to die with Zhang Ruochen.

"This guy actually refined a planet into his Sea of Qi. What is Zhang Ruochen going to do?" Blackie started panicking. It wanted to escape.

It wanted to activate All Lives Equal, but it was too late!

A divine planet was a star born in a divine constellation when a being became a god. It could shine onto the world. When Chi Yao became a god, 33 stars had shone together in the universe, becoming her constellation.

Fang Yi, Heir of Hell Blade Field, had refined an ancient god's planet into his body.

However, the soul of the planet's god had already disappeared. It had limited power. But Wang Xu's planet still contained a bit of the star's soul.

With this shred of soul, Wang Xu could control the planet and unleash a power that far surpassed his own power.

A blow by a planet with a star soul was unstoppable by anyone below the Supreme Saint Realm. They would be turned to dust instantly.

The Thousand Star Maiden arrived on a cloud. "Stop!" she cried.

Wang Xu looked at the Thousand Star Maiden with surprise.

Ruiya Field and Thousand Star Civilization were both top worlds. They'd cooperated and interacted many times before.

Thus, Wang Xu was one of the very few cultivators who'd seen the Thousand Star Maiden's true appearance before. He'd only seen her once, but he'd been shocked. Even the arrogant Wang Xu wanted to fall to her feet.

Wang Xu had even pursued her before but failed. Until then, he finally realized that the Thousand Star Maiden was even more arrogant than him. She was like a pure ice mountain that no one could climb.

"Wang Xu, are you crazy?" the Thousand Star Maiden asked. "Using the planet with your current cultivation, you'll die even if you defeat Zhang Ruochen."

"Goddess...are you worried for me?"

Warmth flowed through Wang Xu's heart.

Blackie's eyes rolled. "What are you thinking? How could the Thousand Star Maiden care about your life? She's worried for Zhang Ruochen. After all, they've already vowed their lives for each other."

"Nonsense."

Wang Xu's eyes darkened. The planet hovering above his head shook violently. It was evident that his emotions were going crazy.

“Zhang Ruochen, take out the marriage letter to make him give up,” Blackie said.

“Zhang Ruochen,” the Thousand Star Maiden said. “You promised me...”

Zhang Ruochen could see that Wang Xu seemed to really care about the Thousand Star Maiden, so he chuckled. “Don’t worry. Since I promised you, I won’t take out the marriage letter for other people to see.”

Wang Xu’s expression was very ugly. He thought of the gossip about the Thousand Star Maiden recently. “Zhang Ruochen, I will kill you.”

“Who’s afraid?” Zhang Ruochen yelled. “Fight!”

“My Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror can counter the planet.” The Amazing Little Taoist wanted to help.

“No need.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the purple divine stone from Lord Lingquan. He poured Holy Qi into it and the stone instantly shone with blinding purple light. It transformed into a purple divine mountain the size of a planet.

According to Ling Xiu, this stone was most likely related to the Stone Race, one of the three Hell World races.

It had once been the size of a star too and hovered beside a black hole. One could imagine that its power wouldn’t be any weaker than a divine planet.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to go full out with Wang Xu. He had to preserve his power for the following battle.

Thus, he summoned the Holy Carnivorous Flower and Emperor Yi Bone Staff. They activated the purple stone together and clashed with Wang Xu’s planet.

“Hurry and retreat.”

Blackie, the Amazing Little Taoist, Ye Honglei, and the Thousand Star Maiden all flew into the distance. They didn’t dare to stay in the Tianluo Dojo.

Kaboom!

Behind them, horrible power burst out. The entire air shook as if the sky was about to collapse.

The mountain where the Tianluo Dojo was situated shattered completely and fell in.

Wang Xu's skin exploded bloodily, but his battle intent was still strong. He wanted to control the planet for a second attack, but he didn't have the power. His legs trembled and his arms couldn't push up the planet anymore. He fell heavily to the ground.

The planet was about to fall and crush him.

Zhang Ruochen used the spatial grab to grab Wang Xu's body and retreat hurriedly.

Kaboom!

The huge planet fell to the ground, lifting up clouds of dirt.

That force shook all the land within thousands of miles as if it was a great earthquake.

"I...lost... Kill me now..."

Wang Xu lay by Zhang Ruochen's feet. His eyes were dull as if he'd lost his soul.

"You still have some use now."

Zhang Ruochen sealed Wang Xu's Seal of Qi and meridians. Then he walked toward the space transfer formation. After checking and confirming that it wasn't damaged, he said, "Bring him along to the Xumi Dojo."

Before activating the space transfer formation, Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power clones to collect the Ruiya Field cultivators' corpses and their treasures.

They all had extraordinary backgrounds and each of their treasures was valuable. Any random one had a high grade.

Zhang Ruochen really needed saint stones, so he would naturally take them all.

He even put Wang Xu's planet into his Mercury Gourd.

Chapter 1742 - Enchantment Formation

Chapter 1742: Enchantment Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After five transfers, Zhang Ruochen's group crossed one million miles and arrived close to the Xumi Dojo.

Looking to the west, Zhang Ruochen saw a dojo 100 miles away with Buddhist light in the sky. It was in the center of a blue lake.

There were a dozen golden temples in the dojo.

The centermost was a 72-level Buddhist pagoda. It soared into the clouds like a mountain.

What was odd was that the dojo was peaceful and quiet. It didn't look like there was a battle.

"Did Kunlun's Field not attack yet?" Zhang Ruochen was confused.

Blackie had a pair of Supreme Saint eyes. It sensed something wrong. "No, it's not right... There's a big problem with this dojo. Let's not rush in."

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eyes and saw some things were wrong, but he couldn't see clearly. He couldn't pinpoint the problem.

"You have the Origin Eyes. Help me investigate Xumi Dojo."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Thousand Star Maiden.

"I'm just here for fun. I don't have to help you." The Thousand Star Maiden lifted her pale chin and looked very

proud.

She hated Zhang Ruochen for spreading the news about the marriage letter everywhere. Her anger hadn't faded yet, so she would naturally go against him.

Ye Honglei seemed to discover something. She stepped onto the lake. Standing on the water, her expression changed. "It's an enchantment."

"What?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"This lake and the Xumi Dojo don't actually exist. It's an enchantment created by a very advanced Saint Master. The Xumi Dojo should be nearby, but it's definitely not here."

Even the Thousand Star Maiden was moved. If this was an enchantment, then even she was fooled by it.

How advanced could this person's enchantment be?

She hurriedly activated her Origin Eyes and gazed toward the Xumi Dojo. Then she had a shocked and solemn expression.

"What did you see?" Zhang Ruochen asked anxiously, grabbing the Thousand Star Maiden's wrist.

The Thousand Star Maiden didn't know how to tell him. After a pause, she said, "Kunlun's Field...might have all died. We shouldn't get involved in this battle. Hurry and leave."

Zhang Ruochen let go of her wrist. He called out the Abyss Ancient Sword and charged toward the Xumi Dojo formed by an enchantment.

"Zhang Ruochen, get back here!" the Thousand Star Maiden cried. "That's not the Xumi Dojo. You can't activate All Lives Equal and you can't change anything. You're only going to get yourself killed!"

Zhang Ruochen released the spatial territory to search the surroundings. This way, he wouldn't make any wrong judgment while the enchantment blinded his Spiritual Power and Heavenly Eyes. But he didn't stop.

As soon as he entered the lake, three beams of saintly power appeared before him.

Three Kunlun's Field cultivators used some tactic to escape to the edge of the enchantment. They burst out, appearing in the sky above the lake.

They were heavily injured and running for their lives.

Behind them, a group of white-winged Angel Race cultivators was chasing after them.

One Saint King Angel with four wings carried a broad white sword. He went above the three Kunlun's Field cultivators like a high and almighty adjudicator. "The elites of Kunlun's Field must all die today. No one can escape."

"That demon rat is quite skillful. It could take two humans and escape from the Illusion Princess's formation."

"They can escape from the formation but not from our hands."

...

The four-winged Angel at the front was a sixth step Saint King. The white sword broke free from his hands and cast a mid-level saint spell, hitting one of the humans.

Thud!

That human cultivator from Kunlun's Field cried out. His body was split into six parts and fell into the lake.

Red blood rained down.

Seeing this, the demon rat and Chi Wansui's hearts pounded. They realized that they might really be unable to escape today. They would die here.

"Are the heavens targeting us, wanting to destroy Kunlun's Field?"

Chi Wansui's chest had a shocking sword injury. His ribs had broken and it injured his organs.

Sword Qi seeped into his body, causing him to be unable to recover. Blood kept pouring out.

A silver-haired Angel Saint King wielded a scepter and laughed loudly. "Yes, the heavens want you to die. We are the heavens."

That four-winged sixth step Saint King said, “It’s not that the heavens are targeting you. It’s that Kunlun’s Field is too weak. In a world of survival of the fittest, being weak is your sin.”

Chi Wansui took out a communication rune and was about to carve on it.

Poof!

The four-winged sixth step Saint King struck his sword and broke Chi Wansui’s remaining arm from a distance.

“You want to carve a communication rune to send a message to the Truth Godly Palace? Unfortunately, we won’t give you that chance.” An Angel Saint King laughed loudly. It felt great to have someone’s life in his hands.

“This trap was set up by Lord Ziyang personally,” the sixth step Saint King said coldly. “It’s well-established. Even if you send out the rune, it won’t reach the Truth Godly Palace. Of course, just to be safe, I won’t let you send it out.”

Chi Wansui’s expression was tragic. He couldn’t imagine all elites dying here. How low would Kunlun’s Field sink?

They’d improved a bit with such difficulty, but now, they would reach the bottom of the abyss and never recover.

The demon rat didn’t reply. It felt helpless.

If it ran into a powerful enemy in Kunlun’s Field, it could mention the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect and the enemy would be afraid.

But in Heaven World, it had no support. It could only rely on itself.

The demon rat sighed. Suddenly, its eyes brightened. Seeing the figure standing on the lake, it cried in excitement and flew over quickly. “Lord Chen, you’re finally here! Heaven Field is such a bully. They want to kill us all. You have to help us!”

“Help? We’re part of Guanghai Field now and we’re just here to watch the show.” Blackie strolled on the lake, wagging its fat behind.

Seeing Blackie, the demon rat's eyes gleamed. All of its fear disappeared. It pounced and grabbed Blackie's claw. "Lord Blackie, don't you say that. Since you and Lord Chen are here, how could you just be here to watch? You're the true pillars of Kunlun's Field. They think they can bully us because the true top figures haven't arrived."

"You just know how to grab onto people." Blackie laughed.

"I can grab onto you forever," the demon rat said shamelessly.

Blackie was enjoying this. Squinting and nodding, it said, "Okay, because you said that, I'll take responsibility for this today!"

"No one can take responsibility for today!"

That sixth step Saint King Angel waved his arm. The Angels standing behind him all attacked Blackie and Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen pushed up the Eight-dragon Umbrella. The eight dragons flew in unison, shining brightly and blocking all attacks.

The sixth step Saint King was shocked and his eyes hardened.

Could a top figure of Kunlun's Field really have arrived?

"You ants don't qualify to fight with me."

Blackie took out a millstone-sized divine bone. It had many holes and looked like a beehive.

Poof!

Hundreds of Trifoot Carnivorous Insects flew out and swarmed at the Angel like black dots.

"They're just bugs... No, they're Trifoot Carnivorous Insects."

By the time the Angels reacted, they were already surrounded by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects. They could only push up saint armor and strike with saint weapons in panic.

After all, the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects could even eat a Supreme Saint's immortal body. How could they not be afraid?

Zhang Ruochen's eyes brightened. "There seem to be more Trifoot Carnivorous Insects now."

He remembered that there had only been around 200 when he gave them to Blackie.

Now, there were around 700 or 800. The number had doubled.

Blackie laughed proudly. "When you were cultivating in isolation, I conquered all of the Guanghan Field's dojos. I also collected a lot of Saints to feed the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects. Not only did they get stronger, they also laid eggs and produced a new batch."

"Then you must have collected many treasures and saint stones?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie looked cautious. "No, I didn't get a single saint stone."

Pained cries came from within the insect cloud.

Angel after Angel was gnawed to the bone by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect. In the end, even the bones were eaten up.

The sixth step Saint King Angel grew more and more uncomfortable. If he couldn't get rid of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, all of his cultivators might die.

If he had to get rid of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, he had to first deal with the creature controlling them.

His eyes fell upon Blackie. He poured all of his Holy Qi into his armor. The armor shone with blinding light, forcing all of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects around him away.

Before the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects could fly back, he flapped his four wings. He turned into a pillar of silver light and attacked Blackie.

Those who could reach the sixth step Saint King Realm in the Truth Heavenly Domain were all uncommon people. A regular seventh step Saint King might lose in a battle after a few blows.

If Zhang Ruochen didn't use time and space power, he would be in trouble too if he met people at this level.

"Xie Chengzi, go!" Zhang Ruochen said.

Wearing heavy armor, Xie Chengzi rushed out from behind Zhang Ruochen. Evil black Qi seeped out of him and crashed against the sixth step Saint King Angel.

Poof!

It was only one exchange, but the sixth step Saint King was sent flying back and blood flowed out of his mouth.

Xie Chengzi, leader of a world, was also a sixth step Saint King, but he was clearly much stronger than the Angel.

“You... You are Xie Chengzi...”

That sixth step Saint King had a high status in Heaven Field and could interact with people at Xie Chengzi’s level. He recognized Xie Chengzi, so he was very shocked.

“Kill him,” Zhang Ruochen ordered.

The sixth step Saint King looked at Zhang Ruochen with even more shock. What kind of person could rule over Xie Chengzi?

He looked familiar.

“It’s him!”

The Angel had seen Zhang Ruochen’s image before. He finally recognized him. Ignoring the Angels surrounded by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, he spread his four wings and rushed toward the enchantment.

“Since my master ordered for me to kill you, you won’t be able to escape today.”

Xie Chengzi took out the Ring of Bloodlust and attacked the sixth step Saint King.

The ring spun quickly, releasing a large amount of Blood Qi. It grew to three feet wide and buzzed as it flew in the sky.

Boom!

The Ring of Bloodlust pushed back all of the sixth step Saint King’s weapons and finally hit him in the back. His body exploded into a cloud of blood.

Next, the Ring of Bloodlust absorbed all of the bloody mist.

Chapter 1743 - Blood and Tears

Chapter 1743: Blood and Tears

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The group of Angels was chased by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects and ran everywhere. However, the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects stuck to them and dug into their bodies, eating furiously.

Blood-chilling cries echoed across the lake.

When the cries disappeared, all of the Angels had been eaten by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

Whoosh!

A dozen Spiritual Power clones flew out of Zhang Ruochen. They collected the saint weapons and storage containers left behind by the Angels.

They were all good things that could be sold for saint stones.

The demon rat laughed loudly. “Lord Blackie and Lord Chen are so powerful. You could kill 16 Heaven Field figures so easily. These tactics, these skills, I’m so impressed... Lord Chen, what are you—”

A Spiritual Power clone picked up the corpse in the lake that had been cut into six pieces and brought it before Zhang Ruochen.

He placed a finger on the unharmed head and started investigating. “The Sea of Qi wasn’t destroyed and his saint soul was preserved. He hasn’t died completely. There might still be hope.”

This broken corpse was the Kunlun's Field cultivator just killed by the sixth step Saint King.

However, this guy was quite impressive. He'd gotten hit by a sixth step Saint King's sword technique, but it had missed his Sea of Qi and he'd saved his saint soul.

This was the only way he could have a chance of coming back to life.

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power to put the broken pieces together. Then he took out a green lotus.

It was even greener than jade and shone with green light.

The greenness contained powerful Vitality Qi and wrapped around the six pieces.

A moment later, the pieces connected as one. The vitality grew stronger and stronger. Blood started flowing, the eyes opened, and the body walked out of the light.

This half-step Saint King was a regional king of the imperial court. Even though his body had been cut apart, his saint soul had stayed awake. He'd thought that he would die soon and didn't imagine that Zhang Ruochen would save him.

In the Tianluo Dojo, the regional kings had all bullied Zhang Ruochen, saying he was a traitor and didn't qualify to enter Kunlun's Field. Now, he felt unspeakable guilt.

How could the Kunlun's Field's traitor save him?

Zhang Ruochen's generosity made him feel very insignificant.

"Thank you." He bowed to Zhang Ruochen, no longer feeling disdain or animosity. Instead, he was impressed.

From now on, if anyone dared to say that Zhang Ruochen was a traitor, he would be the first to beat them up.

Zhang Ruochen studied the green lotus with suspicion.

Earlier, when he'd activated the lotus, he'd felt subtle strange tremors from the bottom of the lake.

Those tremors disappeared instantly.

"Is it my imagination?"

He released his Spiritual Power to check under the lake and didn't find anything.

Whoosh!

There was wind.

The Thousand Star Maiden, dressed as a man, appeared above his head and said, "I've already used my Origin Eyes to check. One-fourth of all Saint Kings from Heaven Field in the Truth Heavenly Domain are inside the enchantment. Even if you go, you won't be able to save them. Instead, you'll kill yourself too."

"I don't think this is any of your business," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Thousand Star Maiden didn't know why she'd come to stop this annoying man. She just felt that she would be unhappy if he died here. Instead, she would feel like something was missing.

Perhaps, it was because Zhang Ruochen was the first person in the same realm that made her feel a sense of failure.

Even if Zhang Ruochen had to lose or die, he had to lose by her hand, die under her sword.

Lifting her chin, the Thousand Star Maiden said, "I wouldn't watch anything kill itself, not even a dog, let alone a human like you. Of course, if you insist on it, give me that thing first. Otherwise, if you die and it gets into the hands of Heaven Field, it'll be troublesome for me."

Zhang Ruochen didn't know if she meant the marriage letter or the Mysteries of Truth.

If it was the marriage letter, then Zhang Ruochen had really considered giving it to her. After all, he didn't have much confidence in this battle either. As for the Mysteries of Truth, he wouldn't hand them over even if he died.

Blackie, the Amazing Little Taoist, and Ye Honglei all stared at Zhang Ruochen, waiting for his decision.

Chi Wansui's arms were both disabled. He stood on the lake surface, staring blankly at the Xumi Dojo formed by the

illusion. He seemed to be able to see through it to the Kunlun's Field cultivators inside. They must be suppressed mercilessly by the Heaven Field now and unable to be saved.

His lips kept twitching as his inner heart became embattled.

Under everyone's shocked eyes, his legs bent and he knelt before Zhang Ruochen. With a low voice, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, save Kunlun's Field! Only you can save them now. If they all die in the Xumi Dojo, then Kunlun's Field would really be...over!"

Zhang Ruochen stared at Chi Wansui's pale and ashen face.

A noble royal like him would actually kneel down before his enemy. This really was beyond Zhang Ruochen's expectations. Perhaps, the fate and honor of Kunlun's Field had long surpassed his own dignity and hatred.

The Thousand Star Maiden rolled her eyes, thinking that Chi Wansui was immature. "That isn't even the Xumi Dojo. It's a trap formed by an illusion. How can Zhang Ruochen fight against the entire Heaven Field by himself?"

"Zhang Ruochen, just give up!" the Amazing Little Taoist said. "Heaven Field clearly wants to destroy Kunlun's Field. There's no reason why we should jump into the trap."

The capillaries inside Chi Wansui's eyes were about to explode. He cried tears of blood and yelled, "I'm sorry, Zhang Ruochen... Sorry, our rivalry, I shouldn't...shouldn't have used those two kids. If you hate me, you can kill me, but you can't watch those two kids...die in there..."

How could Zhang Ruochen not hate Chi Wansui?

It was he who urged Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue to kill Zhang Ruochen. He was so vicious. No one would know how Zhang Ruochen hurt at that time.

But on the other hand, Zhang Ruochen had killed all of Chi Wansui's family. How could he not be in pain as well?

If the rivalries from 800 years ago hadn't happened, then Chi Wansui and Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be enemies either.

His thoughts battled for a long time before he uttered, “Get up.”

Zhang Ruochen reached out and grabbed Chi Wansui’s shoulder, pulling him up.

At that moment, the power of the green lotus burst out again, entering Chi Wansui’s body.

Poof.

Chi Wansui’s broken arms grew back out. Even his bodily injuries were healing quickly. In the span of a few breaths, he was back to his peak state.

All of the cultivators there were shocked, including Chi Wansui.

What kind of treasure could be so magical?

“I’ll return my arm to you. I’ll wait for you to come take revenge. As long as you have the skills, my life is yours.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen stopped caring about the dazed Chi Wansui. He held the Eight-dragon Umbrella in one hand, the Abyss Ancient Sword in the other, and rushed into the illusion.

“The young are so impulsive. Fine, I’ll go crazy with you one more time.”

Blackie spread its wings and flew into the illusion too. Clearly, it was ready to go to the end with Zhang Ruochen.

The Amazing Little Taoist sighed helplessly. “I’ll just treat it as a challenge. I’ll stir up a storm today too.”

Xie Chengzi, Chi Wansui, and the demon rat rushed into the illusion too.

Ye Honglei wanted to go in too, but the Thousand Star Maiden stopped her.

“You’re an enchantment Saint Master, so why should you go do the killing? Follow me. We’ll go meet the Heaven Field figure who set this up. You can learn some things too.”

The Thousand Star Maiden decided to get involved too, either because she wanted the challenge or because she found it

interesting.

...

Inside the enchantment

Most of the Kunlun's Field's cultivators had fallen into puddles of blood. Some were stepped on by dwarves holding battle axes. Some were on their last breath. Others had died completely and turned into broken corpses.

This island had turned into scorched earth. It was covered with the blood and tears from Kunlun's Field.

They'd come with high morale, determined to take back the dojo that belonged to Kunlun's Field. But after breaking in, they discovered that a large group of Heaven Field figures was waiting. They were all Saint Kings and had more than ten times the numbers.

A trap!

This was a trap set up by Heaven Field!

The cultivators of Kunlun's Field hadn't expected this at all, so Chi Kunlun quickly contacted Saint Monk Xumi's saint soul to activate All Lives Equal.

As long as it was activated, they could at least work to let most of them escape.

But Saint Monk Xumi's divine power didn't appear. All Lives Equal didn't happen either.

Without that support, they were like fireflies compared to the moon when put up against Heaven Field. They were crushed. Defeat was a fact.

Bu Qianfan was pressed under a thunder net by three elven Saint Kings. Scorched black, he half-knelt and yelled, "If All Lives Equal was activated, I'd definitely be able to kill you all with my weapon."

A beautiful female elf in blue clothing chuckled. "There aren't so many ifs. Cultivation is everything. Only the weak would put all their hope on All Lives Equal to defeat their enemies. If

you write down your techniques and saint spells, I can kill you quickly.”

In the distance, Gai Tianjiao was stabbed in the chest by a Tenthousand-pattern Saint Weapon and nailed to the ground. Blood flowed out of her injury and dripped onto the ground. An Angel Saint King was searching for her cultivation techniques and spells and interrogating her for secrets about Kunlun’s Field.

Chapter 1744 - A Bloody Battle

Chapter 1744: A Bloody Battle

“Why... Why can't we start All Lives Equal? Did Saint Monk Xumi forsake us too...?”

Gai Tianjiao's confused gaze turned to the sky as she coughed up blood, feeling extremely upset.

Within the same cultivation level, she was fairly confident that she could defeat these Heaven Field cultivators.

However, as she was much younger, her cultivation was significantly lower than the Heaven Field foes, and she could barely fight back if All Lives Equal was not activated.

That Saint King wanted her to sink further into despair, and intentionally said, “Kunlun's Field was abandoned a hundred thousand years ago. Only idiots like you think that Kunlun's Field could rise again. Your ancestors are actually quite dumb too. Who else would think to fight with Hell World?”

“Who did you say is dumb?”

A cold voice exploded beside him.

Zhang Ruochen stepped into the Mirage Formation, and with a flash, he appeared before that Saint King with a cold gaze.

That angel race Saint King looked around, and confirmed that Zhang Ruochen was not a Kunlun's Field cultivator and had barged in from outside, before shouting, “How dare you! Did you not know that Heaven Field is here? Get lost...”

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen was too lazy to waste time dealing with him, so he swung his blade without waiting, leaving a trail of Sword Way Xuangang.

Xuangang was much stronger than Sword Qi, and was said to be able to penetrate even the heavens.

That Saint King's face changed and he quickly pulled out the spear that was impaled in Gai Tianjiao. Smashing the spear, he hoped to block the incoming sword.

Goosh!

The Abyss Ancient Sword slashed apart that Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon like a hot knife cutting through butter, and off that Saint King's head went.

Seeing his body draw further and further away, that angel Saint King's face was filled with terror.

Mustering the remaining Qi he could, he controlled his head to fly towards the center of the island while screaming, "Help! A strong enemy is—"

Whoosh!

From Zhang Ruochen's eyes came two pillars of Divine Fire Jingmie, striking that floating head squarely.

The head exploded, turning into a rain of sparks.

Not far away, the three elven ladies who were suppressing Bu Qianfan were all taken by surprise, and their gazes turned cold as they saw Zhang Ruochen's figure.

"Even though Heaven Field warned him, he still dared to make trouble for us."

"You two, go and kill him."

The two who left both had spiritual power at the peak of the 56th level. They raised their Saint Jade staffs and recited a chant. Using a Saint Spell, they assaulted Zhang Ruochen.

One of them gathered the power of wind, and condensed it into a Wind Phoenix Beast. With countless wind blades hidden within the dust it blew up, it flew towards Zhang Ruochen.

The other summoned the power of fire. With over a thousand balls of flames floating around her, she sent all of them flying at Zhang Ruochen like a firestorm.

Regardless of whether they were fireballs or wind blades, they were all extremely dense, and could easily tear apart a Saint King. If this was in a commoner's world, every fireball could destroy an entire city, and every wind blade could slice apart a mountain.

Zhang Ruochen remained calm, and opened the Eight-dragon Umbrella.

From the surface of the umbrella, eight golden dragons dashed out, and smashed their spells into smithereens.

Roar!

The eight dragons tackled the two elves, and their beautiful figures exploded into two blobs of bloody mists. The only things left of them were their skeletons, which flew out.

The last elvish Saint King who was still suppressing Bu Qianfan was called Yan Ni, and she had attained a spiritual level of 57. Seeing that the two ladies had been murdered cold-heartedly by Zhang Ruochen, she was absolutely furious.

The two ladies, with a spiritual level of 56, both had the potential to become spiritual Supreme Saints. To the Elf race, their deaths were a huge loss.

A pair of thin and translucent wings appeared with a blue glow.

Instantly, Saint Qi from the entire world gathered onto her Saint Wand.

The light from the Saint Wand was extremely brightly, and was filled with the power of destruction. The lake water tumbled, and from the sky, icicles fell like rain.

Zhang Ruochen ignored Yan Ni, and holding the Eight-dragon Umbrella, he walked towards Gai Tianjiao.

As the icicles fell on the umbrella, one could hear the dull sounds of clashing and the sharp sounds of icicles breaking.

“Big Senior Sister Apprentice,” Zhang Ruochen called out.

Gai Tianjiao, upon seeing Zhang Ruochen's figure, showed an expression of relief as she softly whispered with all her

strength. "I... I knew... you would definitely... be back. Unfortunately... I can't fight anymore."

"Don't say that. The battle has just begun."

Zhang Ruochen took out a blue lotus seed, and by extracting the blue light, he sent it into Gai Tianjiao's body.

Yan Ni, on the other hand, was furious. She was a level 57 Spiritual Saint King after all, yet she had been completely ignored. As such, she took the opportunity to gather all of her spiritual power, and pointed her staff at Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

An electric dragon with the thickness of a water bucket flew out from her Saint Staff.

Zhang Ruochen looked out of the corner of his eyes, and said, "Don't kill her. I want her alive."

Xie Chengzi flew beside Zhang Ruochen, and executed a Saint Spell. Immediately, two clouds of Evil Qi emerged from his hands. From the clouds, a black claw that was several hundred meters long stretched out, smashed the electric dragon, and went onto Yan Ni.

Boom!

As expected of a Spiritual Saint King. On her petite body, fifty-four layers of a light shield appeared, and easily blocked Xie Chengzi.

Only stepping back a few steps, Yan Ni stabilized herself.

Xie Chengzi began his pursuit, and threw out the Ring of Bloodlust.

Whoosh!

The ring flew above Yan Ni, and locked down on her and her fifty-four layers of shields. As the ring tightened, the shields broke one after another.

Finally, all the shields broke, and turned into light particles.

The Ring of Bloodlust tied Yan Ni up, and she was immobilized.

With healing from the lotus seed, Gai Tianjiao and Bu Qianfan's wounds quickly recovered.

Bu Qianfan coldly looked at Yan Ni, and said, "She has quite a high status in Heaven Field. Having caught her, we can negotiate with them."

Xie Chengzi recovered the Ring of Bloodlust, and Bu Qianfan used a Saint-binding Chain to lock Yan Ni up.

Gai Tianjiao explained the situation. "When we realized we were ambushed, Nine Heavenly Maiden used a Divine Palace to hold over half of the Kunlun's Field cultivators. Heaven Field's cultivators would definitely target her first. I wonder if she has escaped...?"

The Divine Palace was a Saint Weapon belonging to the Siming Goddess, and Zhang Ruochen had seen her use it once.

That was a real Divine Palace, and it was a place where the ancient gods had lived before. It could be either used to defend or to lock down the opponent.

If the Divine Palace was completely extended, it would be fairly large, about the size of a small planet.

The Nine Heavenly Maidens possessed a lot of hidden aces, and every one of them was surprisingly shocking throughout history. For example, the Qingmo's knife, Saint Lady's Saint Book Ruzu.... The other Maidens surely had equally lethal weapons too.

Considering the number and quality of their treasures, Zhang Ruochen could not match them. Moreover, with their cultivation speed that was nine times that of an average person, they were no weaklings either.

Perhaps... they would be fine.

Seeing that everyone was ready, Zhang Ruochen ordered, "Go! Let's get into the fray."

The previous battle had already alerted the other Heaven Field practitioners of their presence, and many of their foes were already rushing over using all kinds of methods.

Merely counting those that were running and flying over, there were already almost a hundred of them. Their collective Saint Might was terrifying, much like a mortal facing off with a heavenly army.

“Who is it that dares to help Kunlun’s Field? Are you trying to make enemies out of Heaven Field?” A giant with the cultivation of a sixth-step Saint King roared while holding a war hammer the size of a small tower.

His body was over a hundred and thirty meters tall, and his eyes were like the sun and moon hanging in the sky. His aura seemed overwhelming.

This giant was one of the strongest here, and could place in the top ten of this ambush of Kunlun’s Field cultivators.

As for Yan Ni, she could not even enter the top twenty.

Another sixth-step Saint King, easily among the top twenty strongest cultivators present, was a dragon race master. With a human body, he had a pair of huge dragon wings on his back. His facial features were fairly handsome.

This dragon was called Yu Tian.

Seeing that Yan Ni was being apprehended, he shot a sharp gaze over. His tyrannical voice echoed across the battlefield. “Just the likes of you few worms...instead of running away, are you here to die? Let Yan Ni go, and this King shall consider letting you off alive.”

Zhang Ruochen transmitted a thought to Blackie, Chi Wansui, Bu Qianfan and Gai Tianjiao, and said, “Go and save those people. I will block them.”

On this land, there were countless Kunlun’s Field cultivators who were on their last breaths, or being suppressed by Heaven Field cultivators while being threatened to write down their techniques.

They must be saved quickly.

Blackie refused instantly. “No way. Aren’t you wasting my potential to let me save people?”

“You can control Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, and could secretly kill those Heaven Field cultivators. This is something that only you could do.”

Zhang Ruochen did not bother saying any more. He took out the Nine-dragon Carriage, and activated the nine dragons. With the Dragon Carriage spearheading the way, he charged towards the enemies.

A bloody battle officially began.

Sitting on the carriage, Zhang Ruochen’s two pupils shot out two pillars of Divine Flame Jingmie, and pierced through an elvish Saint King easily.

That elvish Saint King shrieked and fell from the sky.

Chapter 1745 - Show You My Might

Chapter 1745: Show You My Might

With the combined might of Zhang Ruochen, the Carnivorous Holy Flower, and Xie Chengzi, the Golden Dragon Carriage emitted six layers of Saint Power, with the golden light lighting up the entire area. The aura it possessed made even Saint King level creatures tremble in fear.

Rumble!

The nine golden dragons dashed out, pulling the carriage behind. Countless Saint Kings were pushed aside.

Some Saint Kings were severely wounded, as they were bloodied by their wounds.

Seeing that, the giant that towered over a hundred and thirty meters tall roared with rage, his roar like thunder.

His enormous war hammer was raised up, with thousands of lightning bolts converging upon it.

Crackle!

The entire sky seemed to be covered by lightning, with the center being that hammer that seemed to give off a light divine aura.

That was a godly remains ancient weapon. As long as it was being activated, it would possess a tinge of godly powers. One should not underestimate it.

The hammer swung down and clashed with the Golden Carriage.

Boom!

The lightning and blinding light split the world into two, as the huge surge of energy spread out like a tsunami, knocking nearby Saint Kings back.

That giant was really quite a disaster to fight against. It was already not far from reaching seventh step Saint King.

However, the Golden Dragon Carriage was being controlled by Zhang Ruochen, the Carnivorous Holy Flower, and Xie Chengzi together. They would naturally not lose to him.

“Charging is not the only use of the Golden Dragon Carriage.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up as he summoned his Saint Qi to utilize another part of the inscriptions on the carriage.

Instantly, a round formation appeared below the carriage.

Whoosh!

The formation extended out to hundreds of feet, and even covered the entire giant.

“Crap.”

Being alert, the giant realized that he was in trouble.

Due to this distraction, his momentum and strength were both drastically reduced, as he was forced back by the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Immediately, a golden light wall was formed on the edge of the formation, with hundreds of dragon figures flying.

Roar!

The dragons flew out and tackled the giant.

“Such an attack can at most tickle me!”

The giant’s armor was truly outstanding. As the dragons clashed with him, they broke like bubbles, unable to damage him in the slightest.

Of course, it was not as simple as what he said either.

Every dragon caused him to slightly shake, and it was obvious that he was enduring the pain.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. “That huge thing is really quite strong. He could withstand such a powerful attack. How insane must his defense be? Even if he doesn’t retaliate, a normal seven-step Saint King could not hurt him in the slightest.

Xie Chengzi explained, “He is called Kun, a member of the Huge Eye Giant race, which is a powerful race in Heaven Field. Kun is the number one master from that race in the Truth Heavenly Domain. His mother is a god, thus within him, there is extremely pure god blood. Furthermore, his constitution is way more powerful than a typical practitioner. Even if I were to face him, I could not be sure that I could defeat him.”

Even if they were all children of gods, there were differences. The god could be their father, or their mother.

Evidently, if a god was their mother, they would be more powerful.

That was because, before birth, the mother’s god blood and god power would be continuously fused into the baby’s body. As such, the child would have an insane constitution, and a part of the godly power and rules would be left within the baby’s body.

As such, after being born, the child could easily raise its cultivation.

Over ninety-nine percent of the descendants of a god in Heaven Field were from a father who was a god.

A god’s descendant like Kun was a rare sight. However, every time one encountered someone like him, it would be evitable that he was invincible within the same cultivation level.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower laughed. “His war hammer and Saint Armor would be quite valuable if we were to sell it.”

Boom!

Kun did not last very long before he was pushed back by the power of the Golden Dragon Carriage.

After gaining some distance, Kun roared, “The enemy is Zhang Ruochen, initiate the Sword of Life and Death Judgement and Staff of Degenerate Age. Don’t let him leave this place alive.”

Sixteen Angel race Saint Kings quickly gathered together. Led by a handsome man, they commanded the Seven-Yao ten-

thousand pattern Saint Weapon, the Sword of Life and Death Judgement.

The other Saint Kings sent out beams of Saint Qi to power the sword.

The sword grew larger and larger, as the presence grew more and more fearsome.

Sharp sword Qi scattered around in the surroundings, and some even seemed to pierce the clouds.

On another side, thirteen elf race Saint Kings stood behind an elf lady whose spiritual power had reached the late 57th stage.

Her spiritual power was even stronger than Yan Ni. Holding the Staff of Degenerate Age, she seemed ever so holy and prim, like a divine person visiting from the heavens.

Yet, the lightning that was being gathered by the staff seemed even more powerful than the massive lightning attack that Kun had previously summoned.

The entire area seemed to turn into a sea of lightning.

The soil under her feet turned charred, as though it was about to be melted.

“Xie Chengzi, go and deal with Kun,” Zhang Ruochen instructed.

“Master, what about you?”

“Don’t worry. I can handle this.”

Zhang Ruochen flew to the top of the carriage, and roared, “Amazing, where is your Purple-gold Bagua Mirror?”

The Amazing Little Taoist appeared out of nowhere, and walked next to Zhang Ruochen while saying, “Man, I thought you would fight them all by yourself, and wouldn’t need the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror...”

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen’s pupils shrunk.

He saw that under the control of the sixteen Angels, the Sword of Life and Death Judgement was being swung down.

With the blinding sword light, it seemed like even the world would be sliced into two.

“Don’t waste time. Quickly activate the Supreme Power and block this attack.”

Holding the Eight-dragon Umbrella, Zhang Ruochen leaped off, and opened the umbrella in mid-air. Eight dragons appeared and clashed with the Saint Sword that was several hundred feet in length, giving out a deafening explosion.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen was thrown back as he landed. The earth under his feet cracked into a spider web pattern from the force.

Thanks to the Eight-dragon Umbrella, even though he was able to block the attack, his arms felt numb from the rebound. His organs also seemed to have been shuffled around due to the impact, and he felt horrible.

If this repeated a few more times, he would surely be injured.

On the other side, a divine thunderbolt was being brought upon by the fourteen elf Saint Kings.

Once again, Zhang Ruochen opened the Eight-dragon Umbrella to block the attack.

Yet, it only lasted a second before he was engulfed by the lightning.

That elf lady Saint King seemed to believe that she was already in control of Zhang Ruochen’s life, and coldly said, “Zhang Ruochen, if you are willing to give up your body for us to control, we could keep your Saint Soul alive. Else, you will perish today.”

The dragon race expert, Yu Tian, who was watching the show from above interjected, “Don’t bother. Zhang Ruochen’s will is strong and steady. He would definitely not bow down to us. Just kill him.”

The divine lightning continued to assault Zhang Ruochen. Only after nine breaths did the storm of lightning subside.

The earth underneath had already been shattered, and one could even see patches of lava and pieces of obsidian. Yet Zhang Ruochen had yet to die as he held the Eight-dragon Umbrella, standing on the lake.

The Saint Kings of Heaven Field sucked a breath of bold air, as they thought it was unimaginable.

Zhang Ruochen's face was covered in sweat and he heaved a sigh of relief before glaring at the Amazing Little Taoist. "Are you trying to make a joke out of me? If you don't activate the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, I will have no choice but to use my spatial abilities. By then the first to be suppressed would be you."

"Don't rush, I will let them know the power of Purple-gold Bagua Mirror immediately."

Standing on the Golden Dragon Carriage, the Amazing Little Taoist raised the mirror with its right hand.

Supreme powers raised out of the mirrored surface in the form of purple mists and turned into a huge Purple-gold Eight Trigram Seal hundreds of feet in size.

Having reached eighth-step Saint King, the Amazing Little Taoist could control the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror to make even more powerful attacks.

Feeling the supreme power, the Saint Kings of Heaven Field all stared at each other in horror.

"What is the situation? How did he obtain a Supreme Saint Weapon?"

"His Saint Weapon doesn't seem to be complete. Quickly, activate the Sword of Life and Death Judgment and Staff of Degenerate Age. We should be able to withstand the attack."

The Saint Kings quickly summoned their powers into the two Seven-Yao ten-thousand pattern Saint Weapons.

On the Sword, six layers of Saint Energy formed, and now it seemed like even a seventh layer was forming. Yet, it was clear that the seventh layer was still rather dull and it could not completely reach Seven-Yao strength.

Controlling the sword, the six-step Saint King Angel slashed at the Amazing Little Taoist, hoping to kill him to seize the initiative.

“Just these few low-level Saint Kings dare to challenge me. Today, this Taoist will let you know what true strength is.”

The Amazing Little Taoist breathed out a breath of purple air onto the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror. The enormous Bagua sign started spinning, and smashed into the Sword of Life and Death Judgement.

Boom!

It was without suspense, as the sword lost its luster and flew out of the Angel’s hand, falling into the ground.

Goosh!

A streak of purple light struck the Angel’s body, and pierced right through.

After losing the Sword of Life and Death Judgement, the Saint Kings were all exposed under the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror. Being subjected to the huge pressure, their faces were white as though they were facing the end of the world.

“Did you really think I was just a Saint Herb? Today I will show you my might.” The Amazing Little Taoist gave a war cry.

Boom! Boom!

Under the bombardment of the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, several dozens of Saint King experts exploded like ragdolls, with no survivors. A huge area was cleared out.

Including Yu Tian and Kun, who stood beyond the area of attack, they were all shocked beyond belief.

Chapter 1746 - This Taoist Will Shake The World Up

Chapter 1746: This Taoist Will Shake The World Up

Zhang Ruochen was too surprised by this outburst. Who would have expected that the Amazing Little Taoist could be so savage after going on a rampage?

After all, from the moment that the Amazing Little Taoist appeared, he had immense cultivation of a seventh-step Saint King, but was a coward who would run away even from Zhang Ruochen who had just reached Saint King level.

Not only was he suppressed by Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan once, he had also been sealed by the Time and Space Secret Guide and was almost killed by King Yan.

Precisely because of that, Zhang Ruochen had underestimated him.

Yet, since Zhang Ruochen had saved him from the edge of death, the Amazing Little Taoist was no longer the same. It was like he had said himself...it seemed like he had remembered some things.

That was the first time the Amazing Little Taoist had changed. The second time was after he had obtained the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.

The third change only happened in the past 1 year.

This year, Amazing and Blackie managed to snatch back all of the Dojo of Guanghan Field.

After Zhang Ruochen's short seclusion, after seeing Amazing again, he was no longer afraid of Blackie, who was able to release Supreme Saint Might, with his cultivation improved to eighth-step Saint King.

With all that, it was clear that this old taoist was not just a simple Saint Herb, and possibly possessed a huge secret.

And that secret was probably related to the Purple-gold Bagua mirror.

“Today will be the day that this Taoist shakes the world up! You cowards, come and be slain!”

Holding the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, the Amazing Little Taoist attacked the group of people who were holding the Staff of Degenerate Age. With his immense aura and seemingly divine might, it was as though he was a different person.

On the other hand, Blackie, who was trying to rescue people, felt really left out, and quietly snapped, “What arrogance? How is this shaking the world up? If I possessed a Supreme Saint Weapon, I could do the same. Just my Saint Might would be enough to petrify all of them.”

Seeing that the Amazing Little Taoist was so eager to fight, with a momentum that seemed like he could move the mountains and split the sea, Zhang Ruochen instantly lost interest in fighting. With his spiritual powers, he made doppelgangers to collect his loot from the battlefield.

But for the Seven-Yao Saint Weapon, Sword of Life and Judgement...Zhang Ruochen walked over in person to collect it.

Such a weapon could be easily worth over a hundred million Saint Stones, and even a ninth-step Saint King might not have one.

Boom!

The earth shook, as though there was an explosion.

The Purple-gold Bagua Mirror clashed with the Staff of Degenerate Age, and with that, the Staff suddenly had cracks all over it. After a short while, the Staff split into millions of crystals and scattered all over the place.

“How could the Staff of Degenerate Age.... be destroyed...?”

“Is the Supreme Saint Weapon really unstoppable?”

...

The purple light from the mirror surged to the Saint Kings who were controlling the Staff of Degenerate Age earlier.

Boom! Boom!

The Saint Kings all exploded simultaneously into powder.

Before a Supreme Saint Weapon, even Saint Kings were completely unable to retaliate, and would be easily defeated.

The remaining surviving Saint Kings of Heaven Field all lost their will to fight, including Kun and Yu Tian. They all started their escape to the middle of the island.

Chasing after them, the Amazing Little Taoist roared, “This taoist will kill you today to show the world that no one can mess with me! You cowards dare to run?”

This was a fairly strange scene. A taoist who was only fist-sized was chasing an entire group of Heaven Field masters.

It was especially so for Kun, as his enormous body made for a sharp contrast against the Amazing Little Taoist’s tiny body.

Seeing that the Amazing Little Taoist was drawing nearer, Kun screamed with rage, “The older generation cannot take part in the Truth Heavenly Domain! This is against the rules! You will die a horrible death.”

Given the Amazing Little Taoist’s immense cultivation, Kun thought that it was an ancient expert from Kunlun’s Field or Guanghan Field.

Gai Tianjiao shouted back, “What are rules to you? Don’t fear them! They were the ones who laid a trap for us. Even if we kill all of them, the Truth Godly Palace cannot do anything to us.”

Even Gai Tianjiao thought that Amazing was a senior from Guanghan Field.

Only Zhang Ruochen knew that Amazing did not belong to any Field, and was native to the Truth Heavenly Domain. It was not restricted to the Truth Godly Palace’s rules.

Boom!

Another streak of energy struck Kun’s back.

Crack!

Kun's armor started to crack as his gigantic figure was knocked back several miles, falling into the center of the island. No one could tell if he was still alive.

After gathering all the treasures, Zhang Ruochen walked towards Blackie and Gai Tianjiao and the rest.

The remaining Kunlun's Field practitioners were all rescued, and there was a total of 53 of them. Yet nothing could be done for those who had already died, either turning into a bloody mess, or having been completely erased from the world.

It almost seemed like Zhang Ruochen was omnipotent, so Chi Wansui and the demon rat gathered a bunch of bones and some body parts, and looked eagerly at Zhang Ruochen, as though hoping that Zhang Ruochen could revive them.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen did not possess such powers, even if he possessed the Lotus Seed.

The 53 Kunlun's Field practitioners were all heavily injured, and they all looked at Zhang Ruochen with differing emotions in their gazes.

Some were happy, some were respectful, some were ashamed...

Among them, there were some who had been rude to Zhang Ruochen, claiming that with or without him the battle would have gone the same.

Yet, what really happened gave these people a tight slap to their faces. If not for Zhang Ruochen, they would have all died here.

Perhaps some of them would have suffered a fate even worse than death, as they would suffer through torture.

"Thank you... for helping us...."

The first to open her mouth was a pretty lady. Her Saint robes were bloodied, and her pristine white face had a huge gash running across it.

This was Wan Huayu, Wan Zhaoyi's only daughter. She knew Zhang Ruochen from way before.

Once, she had the same level of strength as Zhang Ruochen, yet after these years, the two of them had a wide skill gap between them.

Back then, Wan Huayu was merely impressed by Zhang Ruochen.

But now, she was already feeling a bit intimidated.

This was a man who was more powerful than her father!

“Thank you!”

“Zhang Ruochen, this was a huge favor. I will surely return it in the future.”

...

Those who were not that injured all stood and thanked Zhang Ruochen.

Bu Qianfan, seeing that some of the practitioners were severely injured, quickly walked out and said, “Save them, I am sure they will remember your favor. We are not enemies. In this unfair, unkind, and immoral foreign land, we are all brothers.”

Bu Qianfan had seen Zhang Ruochen's abilities before, and knew that he could save those people.

Looking deeply into Bu Qianfan's eyes, Zhang Ruochen simply replied, “This favor will be repaid by you.”

Bu Qianfan was not only an extremely talented genius, but his morals and willpower were both top-notch. It was impossible to fathom what his achievements would be in the future.

Zhang Ruochen had always seen him, Han Qiu, Le, Murong Yue, and a few members of the nine Heirs as representatives of this generation, as their willpower were peerless.

Bu Qianfan's talent lay in the fact that he was particularly good with military tactics.

This was not something that the others could simply copy, not even Zhang Ruochen.

In a massive battle that involves millions or even billions of soldiers, someone like Bu Qianfan would really shine.

Such a talent...even if Zhang Ruochen couldn't get him to be on the team, he must be made to be indebted to him.

As such, when Bu Qianfan was needed, he couldn't just refuse.

Taking out the Lotus seed, Zhang Ruochen injected Saint Qi into it. Like a lantern, it emitted a bright yet soothing glow.

A moment later, the 53 injured Kunlun's field practitioners had all recovered. All their pains were gone, and they had recovered their energy. The battle before seemed like a dream.

That feeling was magical!

Looking at Zhang Ruochen again, their gazes changed yet again.

If before they were intimidated yet thankful, now they were mostly looks of respect.

Just as they were about to thank him, Zhang Ruochen stopped them, and declared, "Don't say anything. Demon rat, take them away."

Wan Huayu replied, "No, my father and the majority of the Kunlun's field people are still fighting for their lives deep in the islands. How can we escape alone?"

"If you can't activate All Lives Equal, you are useless. Going to the battlefield will merely get you killed." Zhang Ruochen brutally responded.

Wan Huayu countered, "We couldn't activate it because this is not the real Dojo location! My father is retreating to the island precisely to find the real dojo.

"As long as we find the real dojo, we can activate All Lives Equal. As long as we find the treasures left behind by Saint Monk Xumi, we could possibly turn it around."

Zhang Ruochen replied, “It is never easy to find the real dojo within an illusion. Eh? The guy behind the illusion did not launch any mirage attacks?”

Logically, anyone who could make such a strong illusion formation must be a spiritual master, and could make use of mirages and illusions to control the battle.

Yet when Zhang Ruochen and the Amazing Little Taoist had their massacre, no one tried to obstruct them. That was a fairly unusual situation.

Zhang Ruochen looked around, and found no sign of Ye Honglei’s figure. Instantly, he sank into his thoughts.

Chapter 1747 - Well-rounded Saint Master

Chapter 1747: Well-rounded Saint Master

Illusion Princess was an Illusion Saint Practitioner who had reached a spiritual level of 58. The illusion that covered the entire lake was entirely made possible by her hard work over three entire months.

With both spiritual cultivation and illusionary cultivation reaching such heights as her, she was already a top-notch presence below Supreme Saints. Even if Nine-step Saint Kings met her, they would be rather worried.

Her two disciples, Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing, held a Formation ball each, maintaining the Formation.

Their spiritual levels were both 56, and they could be considered top talents in spiritual cultivation. Of course, their abilities were nothing compared to Illusion Princess herself.

“Kunlun’s Field’s practitioners are at most six-step Saint Kings. Mister Ziyan actually brought almost a quarter of all Saint Kings here to defend against them. He is really overestimating the enemies.”

“Just with this illusion formation, Master could destroy them by herself.”

Due to the constant praises from others around them, Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing were elitist to the core, and always looked down on other people from outside of Heaven Field.

It went without saying that they looked down on Kunlun’s Field as well.

“A hundred thousand years ago, Kunlun’s Field was a huge world that could compare to Heaven Field. Yet now it had totally fallen, with not a single genius that could compare to others.”

Looking at the illusionary mirror floating in the air, Xiao Qianji sighed.

Through this mirror, they could see everything within the illusion formation.

Suddenly Xiao Qianji's gaze stopped. "A human master dashed into the illusion formation. Who is that?"

"Qianluo Saint King was beheaded by him in one move, how could this be?"

"Oh my god! Yan Ni Saint King... was captured! She was captured! Who is he? He is so powerful!"

Zhang Ruochen's figure appeared on the illusionary mirror.

Gradually, his facial features became clearer.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was extremely famous in Truth Heavenly Domain, that Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing could both recognize him. They were stunned, and immediately reported this to Illusion Princess.

Whoosh!

Below the mirror, the air lightly shook.

An attractive lady wearing a crimson red robe appeared. With lush long hair and a curvaceous body, pristine white fox tails poked out from under her skirt, along with jade-like legs.

This was a top-notch expert, Illusion Princess.

Staring at Zhang Ruochen who was in the mirror, her delicate tongue licked her lips, and she smiled. "Zhang Ruochen is way more handsome than in the drawings! What a pity. If only someone could take over his soul and body so he could be on our side."

Raising her arms, the long red sleeves fell, revealing two silky white limbs, as though they were carved out from jade.

From her two palms, spiritual power was being radiated. It seemed so casual, but the energy was horrifying, as Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing both retreated far away.

Just as she was about to control the formation to launch an attack, something happened.

A short giggle could be heard in the darkness of the night. “As expected of Illusion Princess. Even I was almost tricked by it.”

Thousand Star Maiden and Ye Honglei flew over, riding on the wind, falling onto the top of the formation.

Thousand Star Maiden, despite her beauty, was now dressed as a delicate-looking young man as she walked up the stairs while smiling. “What a coincidence. This young man happens to be rather confident in my illusion abilities too. How about we have some discussion about it?”

Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing were both utterly shocked.

One must know that they had put extra layers of illusions around the formation. Normal people could not simply have entered here.

“What ‘young man’? You are definitely a female,” Yun Bing snorted.

Thousand Star Maiden glared at Yun Bing and smiled.

“Sometimes it’s better to not point out even if something is obvious. Did your master not teach you that?”

Even if disguised as a man, Thousand Star Maiden could not conceal her overwhelming beauty and her beautiful figure. Her chest was still obviously puffy, and the curves below her thin waist was also rather obvious. Even Xiao Qianji, whose spiritual power had reached 56, could not help but to wonder how she would look without a disguise, or even without clothes.

“Qianji, wake up,” Illusion Princess lightly warned.

The words were like a bomb in Xiao Qianji’s consciousness.

Instantly, Xiao Qianji, who was lost within Thousand Star Maiden’s illusions, woke up. He looked at Thousand Star Maiden on high alert, and stepped back a few steps.

Illusion Princess realized that the intruders were not exactly her allies, and immediately retracted the energy that was already injected in the illusion formation, with her attention

completely on Thousand Star Maiden. “Saint Masters who practice Illusions in Truth Heavenly Domain number only so few, and I am rather familiar with all of them. Who are you?”

“I am not an Illusion Saint Master.”

As Illusion Princess frowned to show her doubt, Thousand Star Maiden continued, “I am a well-rounded Saint Master. There is no spell in this world that I don’t know.”

“Well-rounded Saint Master? What a joke. Even Supreme Saints who live to a few thousand in age couldn’t become one. How old could you be to reach Saint Master in multiple domains?”

Illusion Princess could hardly believe this young lady’s words. After all, to reach Saint Master in any field would require huge amounts of time.

Everyone has limited time after all.

Thousand Star Maiden replied, “So be it if you don’t believe me. Anyways, back to the main topic. I want to have a friendly match between us using Illusionary spells. I will not use my other abilities.”

“If you want to have a match with our master, you must fight us first!”

Yun Bing took out a white flower, and with a light tap, an intense fragrance was emitted, filling the entire platform.

Suddenly, countless flower petals descended from the heavens.

At that moment, a frozen illusion materialized, as the earth turned into snowy tundras, and the snowflakes that fell from the sky were sharp like blades.

At the same time, Xiao Qianji took out a drawing, and pressed on it.

Whoosh!

Within the snowy tundra, countless ice knights appeared.

Wearing black robes and holding ice spears, they rode on ice dragons. With immense momentum, they charged toward Thousand Star Maiden and Ye Honglei.

“With such a low skill level, you still dare to lift your finger against this Mai.... me.”

Thousand Star Maiden lifted the corners of her lips as she swung her sleeves. Endless flames gushed out, and melted the entire snowy plains. The divine flames spread onto Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing, instantly igniting their bodies with crackling sounds.

“Ahh! Master, Save me!”

“Master! Master!”

On the platform, Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing lost their cool as they threw away the scroll and white flower respectively, hitting their bodies as they retreated as if trying to put out the flames.

In reality, there was nothing on them.

People who didn't know that they were targets of an illusionary spell would have thought that they'd gone mad.

Bam! Bam!

Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing fell off the platform, while still shrieking for help.

Illusion Princess's face turned more serious. “Not bad. My two useless disciples seemed to be easily taken out by you.”

“That was indeed why I wanted to challenge the master of such useless disciples!” Thousand Star Maiden taunted.

Illusion Princess's eyes closed, and then opened again.

This seemingly normal action was actually already a deadly attack. An overwhelming surge of spiritual power raced towards Thousand Star Maiden.

Facing Illusion Princess, Thousand Star Maiden's face also turned more serious, as she cautiously drew a circle with her right hand. Eight blinding golden beads appeared in a circle.

These were eight Unfounded Pearls.

The illusion attack launched by Illusion Princess came in contact with the eight pearls, and was split into eight. Some

were absorbed by the pearls, some flew away. Nothing even touched Thousand Star Maiden.

“The unfounded pearls were something condensed by the Buddhas. Every one of them was priceless. You could take out eight of them at once?” Illusion Princess was fairly shocked.

An Unfounded Pearl could either launch spiritual attacks, or act as a spiritual defense. Every one of them was worth over ten million Saint Stones.

Thousand Star Maiden lightly smiled. “I forgot to tell you something. What you should fear the most about me is not the fact that I am well-rounded. It should be the fact that I have so many Saint Stones I could never seem to finish spending them. If you want an Unfounded Pearl, I could even give you one entire basket of them. But given your abilities, you probably can’t match the talent required to use one.”

Illusion Princess didn’t believe Thousand Star Maiden at all. What kind of exaggerations were these? Even Supreme Saints would not make such arrogant comments.

“Shapeless; Shadowless,” Illusion Princess uttered.

Boom!

Her beautiful figure turned into a bright pink mist.

In the end, even the mist disappeared.

On the platform, there was only Thousand Star Maiden and Ye Honglei. Ye Honglei’s face cringed. “Shapeless; Shadowless is a fairly advanced illusion spell. That fox probably almost reached the level of Earth Master. What do we do?”

Ye Honglei wanted to drag Thousand Star Maiden to retreat.

After all, if they couldn’t see Illusion Princess, then they were essentially blind and deaf, and could only be on the receiving end of attacks.

Such a situation was truly too dangerous.

Yet, Ye Honglei shockingly realized that Thousand Star Maiden did not move. Her pair of beautiful eyes kept moving, as though tracking Illusion Princess’s figure.

The reality was really so. Even an advanced spell like Shapeless; Shadowless was unable to hide from Thousand Star Maiden's Origin Divine Eyes.

Origin was, after all, the origin of all matter.

Speaking of which, those who practiced the way of Origin were a natural counter to those who practiced illusions.

Illusion Princess was even more shocked than Ye Honglei. No matter how she moved, she could not escape her foe's gaze. She had never been met with such a situation before.

At this moment, Thousand Star Maiden's finger grabbed onto a rune scroll, and she muttered to herself, "This was an Illusion Earth Master's present to me, an Illusionary Death Rune. Anyone who is hit by this would enter an illusion of death, and think that he had died. In reality, he would fall asleep, never to wake up again."

Illusion Princess had heard of that rune before, and it was indeed a rune that only an Earth Master could make. She could feel danger tingling on her skin.

Yet, Thousand Star Maiden hesitated, and frowned, and said, "Oh well, since I am out to practice, I should not use the rune, and instead fight with my own strength."

Saying that, she put the rune away and started controlling the eight Unfounded Pearls to attack Illusion Princess.

Illusion Princess heaved a sigh of relief. "I almost got tricked by her. How could an Earth Master be so easy to find? And why would an Earth Master give such a priceless scroll to her?"

Illusion Princess was sure that it was a fake scroll, and launched her attack again.

As such, countless beautiful figures appeared on the platform. They looked like fairies dancing in the air, but it was inevitably a dangerous place to be, with murderous intent hidden under the beauty.

Chapter 1748 - Wan Zhaoyi's End

Chapter 1748: Wan Zhaoyi's End

Before finding the Xumi Dojo, even if the Kunlun's Field Practitioners headed deep into the island, they would not be of much help, and could in fact be a burden to Zhang Ruochen.

They seemed to understand that as well, and thus they followed the demon rat and left the illusion formation.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze swept around, and he asked, "Where is Amazing?"

"It seemed like he has already charged deep into the island alone," the Carnivorous Holy Flower replied.

A large number of roots spread out from under her feet, and penetrated into the dead Heaven Field Saint Kings' bodies, absorbing their nutrients.

"Shang Ziyan is not a typical enemy. Amazing could not deal with him; we should quickly follow up. Don't bother with all the nutrients. After this battle, all the nutrients will still belong to you."

Carrying out a teleportation, Zhang Ruochen brought Blackie, the Carnivorous Holy Flower, and Xie Chengzi deep into the island.

...

The island was massive, and near the center, there were many enormous cliffs and mountains.

These peaks all had different levels of damage to them. Some mountains were lit with blazing flames, some were sliced into halves, turning into smooth ridges, some were entirely crushed into flatlands.

And amidst all this, a gigantic palace sat in the middle of the mountains.

Divine Blood War Palace leader, Xun Ya, along with four four-winged crimson angels, were controlling a wheel-shaped Supreme Saint ancient weapon, and tore a hole in the defenses of the palace.

“As expected of the famed Blood War Wheel. We finally broke through the defenses.

“Losing the protection of the palace, these Kunlun’s Field cowards are helpless.

“It is finally over.”

...

Following this, the various Saint Kings of Heaven Field dashed into that gap as fast as possible.

Even between two Supreme Saint ancient weapons, there were differences in power.

The lowest level might have been used by the Supreme Saint only a few times, and had a tinge of the Supreme Saint’s remnant presence, and could only evoke a little of the Supreme Saint powers.

Yet, the strongest Supreme Saint ancient weapons had grown with the Supreme Saint, and could be his personal weapon of choice.

Within weapons like that, there could be an entire subspace area to store the powers of the Supreme Saint. And it was also possible that the weapon spirit itself had reached the cultivation of a Supreme Saint.

The Blood War Wheel was actually the latter.

However, after reaching the Truth Heavenly Domain, the weapon spirit was sealed by the Truth Godly Palace.

Even then, the Supreme Saint powers stored within the Blood War Wheel were sufficient to bring out deadly attacks. It was precisely this force that tore open the defenses of the palace.

Xun Ya stood in mid-air, his two hands holding the Blood War Wheel that was the size of a grindstone. He praised, “The Nine Heavenly Maidens are truly impressive. With them controlling

the palace, it took 73 hits from the Blood War Wheel to destroy the defenses. For that, over half of the Supreme Saint power stored within the Blood War Wheel has been used up.”

Instantly, Xun Ya transmitted an order. “Catch the Nine Heavenly Maidens alive, don’t kill them.”

The moment that the defenses were being destroyed, the Nine Heavenly Maiden, Luo Xu, Wan Zhaoyi, and several others, all vomited blood at the same time, as though they had been hit, and they flew out.

That was already their limit.

Looking at the continuous stream of Saint Kings, Li Xian’s gaze was a bit dim. “What a pity. Heaven Field’s illusion Formation was too powerful. Before we could even find the Xumi Dojo, we are going to die here.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden stood up and replied, “We could find the direction of the Xumi Dojo using the Siming Compass, and we should be really close. But Shang Ziyan was really careful, and even brought a quarter of all the Saint Kings to fight with us. That was not giving us any chance at all.”

Wan Zhaoyi stood up. “Before coming here, we already knew that this would be a difficult fight, and not many of us would return. Since we were unable to accomplish our mission, we could only try our best to fight. The more we kill them, the more pain they will feel after that.” As he spoke, the Supreme Saint ancient weapon, the Blue Dragon Armor, seemed to roar together with him. With that, a blue dragon appeared from the armor and landed on him.

Then, Wan Zhaoyi took out the Tianming Summoning Rune, and walked towards the blanket of Heaven Field Saint Kings, like a defeated conqueror heading to his last battle.

A few years back, to prevent Emperor Qing from releasing Lord Pluto, Wan Zhaoyi had used the Tianming Summoning Rune. With a cultivation that had yet to reach Saint King level, that had cost him half of the Saint Blood within his body, along with hundreds of years of his lifespan. And in the end, he withstood three hits from Emperor Qing.

Although he almost died from his wounds, Wan Zhaoyi never regretted his actions.

No matter how strong his foes were, he would never hide away, and would always face the enemy.

Now, having reached fourth step Saint King, there was even less reason not to fight.

Of course, Wan Zhaoyi was well aware that using the Tianming Summoning Rune again to display power that was well above his cultivation level could have serious consequences. He would likely die as a result.

But so what?

He could not step back, and had to face the difficulty.

Wan Zhaoyi's Saint Blood seeped out from under the fingernails of his ten fingers, flowing into the Tianming Summoning Rune.

At that instance, a deafening roar came from the heavens, and a presence comparable to that of a Supreme Saint could be felt. The shockwave raced to the Saint Kings of Heaven Field like a tsunami.

The Saint Kings of Heaven Field all frowned in disbelief, and stopped for a short moment, being stunned by this unexpected display.

It was then that they saw a muscular man walking out from the palace. On his body there was a blue dragon, with a scroll above his head, and blue light from his eyes. He was like a demon.

“He is...”

“How could Kunlun's Field have such an expert? His presence is terrifying.”

“It is only his presence that is strong. He might be merely faking it. Fight him!”

The Heaven Field practitioners wielded their weapons and sent spells flying at Wan Zhaoyi.

None of them were weak, and their combined attack had enough power to destroy a small world.

Roar!

Wan Zhaoyi howled, and from the Tianming Summoning Rune came Supreme Saint power that buffed his body.

Lightly bending his knees, he opened his arms. Instantly, all the attacks launched at him were stopped dead in their tracks. Following this, they flew back towards their masters.

Boom!

The entire group of over a hundred Saint Kings was thrown into disarray. Some of them even sustained heavy injuries.

“Who is this? A hidden champion raised by Kunlun’s Field?”

“Retreat! Don’t fight with him! Get Master Xun Ya to suppress him with the Blood War Wheel....”

Just as a five-step Saint King shouted, he was shocked to find that Wan Zhaoyi had just appeared before him.

Boom!

Wan Zhaoyi punched out, and his fist pierced straight through that five-step Saint King’s chest, and Saint Blood spurted out from the wounds.

Following which, Wan Zhaoyi flew out. With his insane speed, he dashed around the battlefield. With every punch, an enemy fell victim to him.

In merely a few breaths, over a dozen Saint Kings were slain by him alone.

The remaining Heaven Field practitioners had their morale utterly shattered, and retreated in disarray.

This person was too ferocious. With a presence like an ancient beast, his strength seemed to be able to destroy even stars.

A sixth-step Saint King threw a rune towards Wan Zhaoyi, with a power that could rival an attack from a seventh-step Saint King.

Enduring the hit, Wan Zhaoyi’s body had countless wounds.

Yet, those wounds did not bleed much. That was because over half of his blood had already been lost to the Tianming Summoning Rune. He already did not have much blood left in him to bleed.

Just like an unfeeling killing machine, Wan Zhaoyi dashed out, ignoring his wounds. Using the 11th Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, he smashed that sixth-step Saint King into a bloody mist.

Seeing how Wan Zhaoyi was going on a killing spree, the remaining Kunlun's field practitioners were excited, with their blood boiling with adrenaline.

“As expected of the hero who stood in the first place of the Five Heroes list. His battle abilities are truly unrivaled.”

“These Heaven Field practitioners looked down on us, but now they are dying to us from Kunlun's Field!”

...

Among those present, only Nine Heavenly Maiden did not seem to be happy about the situation. Instead, she sighed bitterly.

That was because she knew of the previous time when Wan Zhaoyi did the same. Even though he survived, the Empress warned that if he did that again, that would be when he died.

In other words, every fist he swung was fueled by his very life.

This was trading his life for the enemies'!

Nine Heavenly Maiden did not stop him, as this was his own choice. This was something she could not stop him on. For someone as prideful as Wan Zhaoyi, he would rather fight until the bitter end and bleed his last droplet of blood than to get captured by Heaven Field and die in an unknown corner of the world.

“Zhang Ruochen, why have you not come?”

Nine Heavenly Maiden knew that Zhang Ruochen would definitely come. He was the only one who could save Kunlun's Field.

If Zhang Ruochen did not arrive on time, she had no choice but to follow suit, and use the secret arts to fight to the death.

Shang Ziyan stood above the palace with his arms clasped behind him, and nodded while looking at the massacre below caused by Wan Zhaoyi alone, and said, "This man fits the description of the legendary ancestors of Kunlun's Field. Luckily he can no longer grow up, else we would have another potent enemy.

"No matter how beautiful the dusk is, it is merely a short prelude to the dark night. This was merely his final spark. He is sustaining his fight with only his willpower. I will go and send him off."

Holding the Blood War Wheel, he dashed into the palace. Raising it, a ruthless Supreme Saint power emerged and assaulted Wan Zhaoyi.

Beneath Wan Zhaoyi's feet was nothing but a mess of Saint Kings' bodies. There were dozens of Saint Kings who had fallen to his relentless attacks.

Feeling the incoming attack, Wan Zhaoyi looked up.

Under his messy and bloodied hair, one could vaguely see Wan Zhaoyi's frail face. It was completely different from the look of the conqueror he had previously. If one were to observe carefully, it was clear that his hair had turned white under the red mess of blood and other body fluids.

"Great! Fight me!"

Wan Zhaoyi knew that he was reaching the end of the line, but he forced himself to keep in tiptop fighting shape.

His intense willpower sent Saint Qi surging around him.

Roar!

A dragon's roar could be heard from his left arm, and an elephant's trumpet from his right.

Using the 11th Dragon and Elephant Pragna Palm again, his two palms flew out together, clashing with the giant Blood War Wheel.

Boom!

The Blood War Wheel and Xun Ya flew out, to everyone's shock.

Xun Ya's face turned into terror as well, and tried to regain initiative by using the Blood War wheel. However, Wan Zhaoyi chased behind Xun Ya, and with a torrent of palms, sent him flying into the ground.

Boom!

Boom Boom!

...

Standing on the Blood War Wheel, Wan Zhaoyi pressed onto Xun Ya, locking his movements as he continued the relentless assault.

With every palm, Xun Ya would throw up a mouthful of blood.

After sixteen palms, Xun Ya's organs were all smashed, and the Blood War Wheel was even embedded into his body.

Even Xun Ya thought that was the end of him, when the ferocious Wan Zhaoyi suddenly stopped on top of the Blood War Wheel.

He had passed on.

In the deafening silence, and the cold wind, the only movement left in the world was the blood dripping from his white hair.

Chapter 1749 - Eight Ninth-Step Saint Kings

Chapter 1749: Eight Ninth-Step Saint Kings

The world turned dead silent.

The Kunlun's Field practitioners in the Palace had already seen something amiss with Wan Zhaoyi before the final fight, but Nine Heavenly Maiden had blocked them.

When they finally saw that Wan Zhaoyi's presence had finally died down, their hearts sank, and they felt sorrow so heartrending they wanted to cry.

In merely half an hour, he set fire to his life, shining brighter than anything, before returning to the void.

Wan Zhaoyi, who represented his entire generation, had become history.

Dong Wutian, Xi Wufa, Nan Xinshu, Bei Yutian... There were more heroes now.

Countless heroes were buried within the flow of time, and Wan Zhaoyi became yet another one.

There were many from before, and there would be many more in the future.

Shhh...!

Wan Zhaoyi's essence, qi, and spirit had all been exhausted. As the chilling wind blew, his body turned into sand, and spilled from the Blue Dragon Armor. His two legs, his body, and his head had all disappeared, as though he had never been in this world.

Xun Ya heaved a sigh of relief, and slowly stood up. He put a healing pill into his mouth.

As his wounds stabilized, he looked towards the Tianming Summoning Rune and Blue Dragon Armor.

That Kunlun's Field practitioner had almost killed him due to this equipment, not because of a difference in cultivation.

Xun Ya was just about to take them when Kunlun's Field practitioners started to scold him.

“Those belonged to Wan Zhaoyi. You Heaven Field scum don't deserve them!”

“Little Saint God has died, and didn't even leave behind his body. We must bring his remnants back to Kunlun's Field!”

...

Dong Wutian, Qing Xiao, and Fei Yutian all dashed out from the palace, wanting to snatch back the Tianming Summoning Rune and the Blue Dragon Armor.

They were in the same generation as Wan Zhaoyi, and had fought together, had competed with each other, and had matched up with each other on the Earth Board and Heaven Board. They had truly respected him.

Yet, they were stopped by the Heaven Field Saint Kings, unable to even get close to Xun Ya.

Xun Ya snickered, “With your puny cultivation, you dare to jump before me? Or do you also have secret arts that make you able to make a last-ditch attempt?”

“What last-ditch? Who was the one who got beaten down like a dog?” Qing Xiao taunted.

Xun Ya's face blackened and showed murderous intent. “What ignorance. I will torture you even after death.”

Although he was severely injured, Xun Ya's Saint Qi quickly activated, and a strong Saint Might emerged from within him. With just that, he was able to make Chen Wutian, Qing Xiao, and Fei Yutian almost lose their footing.

Chen Wutian showed a look of desperation and said, “This man is the leader of Divine Blood War Palace, and we might not be a match for him even if we had the same cultivation level. Now, with his cultivation way higher than us, it would be even harder for us to match him. I need to use the final

move in the Four Nine Techniques, Beyond the Five Elements, to be able to tank his attacks.”

Fei Yutian replied, “You can indeed use Beyond the Five Elements to evoke massive powers, but that would mean death. Why don’t you lend me your Saint Qi such that I could use the stone blade to quickly kill him?”

Fei Yutian’s stone blade was a heavenly treasure created naturally within the northern regions of Kunlun’s Field. The inscriptions on the stone blade followed the mountains and rivers of the northern regions.

Someone had once made a prediction that, should Fei Yutian reach Supreme Saint, he could command Kunlun’s Field’s northern region’s heavenly powers.

Of course, with his current cultivation, doing something like that would cost him dearly, landing him in a situation no better than Wan Zhaoyi.

Yet, it wasn’t time to think too much. Chen Wutian, Fei Yutian, and Qing Xiao were all prepared to fight to the death. If they could kill Xun Ya, it would all be worth it.

At this moment, something miraculous happened.

Xun Ya intended to take the Tianming Summoning Rune and Blue Dragon Armor. However, the Tianming Summoning Rune gave off a blinding glow.

Whoosh!

Xun Ya was caught off guard, and was knocked back by a few steps.

The Tianming Summoning Rune and Blue Dragon Armor flew off into the distance, falling to a youth who looked to be about 16 or 17 years old.

That youth stood atop a mountain with its peak cleaved off, and was extremely handsome. Even though he didn’t look old, his gaze seemed very steady and mature. He had the aura of an Emperor, being able to dictate the life or death of billions.

Xun Ya was a tad frustrated, and asked, “Who are you?”

“Tianming,” the youth dressed in white replied.

The Blue Dragon Armor automatically attached itself to him, and the blue glow on it was even brighter than when Wan Zhaoyi was wearing it.

The youth dressed in white murmured to himself, “It has been seven thousand years, and this has finally returned to me. What a pity for Wan Zhaoyi. If this generation did not have Chi Yao and Zhang Ruochen, or the huge calamity in Kunlun’s Field, perhaps he could become the next Emperor of Kunlun’s Field.”

The Kunlun’s Field practitioners were confused by his appearance.

“Who is this? Is he also a Kunlun’s Field Practitioner?”

“We have never seen him before, he seems like a big shot.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden gazed at that youth, and said, “He was the first one who established a central emperor in Kunlun’s Field after the ancient period, Tianming Emperor...”

Many practitioners were shocked. “Didn’t Tianming Emperor pass away seventy thousand years ago? How is he still alive?”

Nine Heavenly Maiden obviously knew some secrets, and replied, “Tianming Emperor had obtained a treasure, the Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, and stored his body within. He turned into a Corpse Emperor, and lived his second life.”

Many of the Kunlun’s Field practitioners had heard of the legendary marble, and believed what Nine Heavenly Maiden was saying.

Perhaps...Tianming Emperor was really back!

Corpse Emperor Tianming stared at another Saint King in Heaven Field and declared, “I have come here to bring away the Kunlun’s Field practitioners. Move aside!”

“Why should we listen to you?”

“Even if you are restraining your corpse Qi, you can’t trick us. Who are you to command us?”

Among the Saint Kings of Heaven Field, one that could rank among the top ten stood out. Thinking that Corpse Emperor Tianming was too arrogant, he took out an iron pagoda, a Seven-Yao Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon, and suppressed him.

The iron pagoda was originally seven inches in size, but it turned into a mountain in mid-air. Tens of thousands of inscriptions blinked on the pagoda as it gathered an overwhelming momentum.

Everyone nearby stepped aside out of fear that they were being attacked by the Iron Pagoda.

Boom!

The mountain that Corpse Emperor Tianming stood on was shattered and turned into a flatland. It happened with such ease that one would liken it to a balloon being burst by a needle.

The various Saint Kings of Heaven Field smiled.

“He didn’t even try to dodge the attack. What an arrogant fool.”

“Wait... He could hold off the attack?!”

The elf Saint King’s face twisted into disbelief and he pointed at the shattered mountain, his heart racing with terror.

It was as he had said. That youth held the pagoda at bay with merely one hand. He looked so relaxed, and it didn’t appear like he had to even try to block the damage.

“What a coincidence, I needed a nice Saint Weapon. This pagoda will be pretty good.”

The Tianming Summoning Rune flew out and wrapped around the pagoda.

Instantly, the connection between the weapon and the Saint King was severed. The pagoda turned back into its small form, and landed with Corpse Emperor Tianming.

Seeing that, everyone present, friend or foe, sucked in a breath of cold air.

Even Xun Ya quickly retreated to make some distance between himself and Corpse Emperor Tianming.

One must know that the assailant, Heart Ending King, was no slouch. Even if Xun Ya was in tip-top shape, he couldn't be unscathed after receiving such a blow. Yet this youth dressed in white could do that so simply, and was definitely a difficult enemy to fight against.

Shang Ziyang's gaze sharpened. "That was pretty amazing. However, I am afraid you are not strong enough to bring away the Kunlun's Field practitioners."

Corpse Emperor Tianming looked towards Shang Ziyang.

Boom!

As they looked into each other's eyes, a massive thunderbolt was generated.

The powerful gush of Qi spread outwards, and blew away countless Saint Kings.

Corpse Emperor Tianming lightly groaned, and stepped back a few steps.

On the other hand, Shang Ziyang stood still, and merely said, "I told you so. You are not strong enough."

Gong Ziyang and a dwarf seventh-step Saint King stepped up behind Shang Ziyang, as though to cover his flanks. It seemed like they were prepared to take down Corpse Emperor Tianming as well.

"What if you include me?"

The gentle voice of a lady resounded.

After which, a patch of bloody mist surged forth within the gloomy skies. The presence was enough for Shang Ziyang to frown.

Within the blood mist, eight practitioners were lifting a red carriage that was the size of a palace, walking over with great gusto.

Within the carriage lay a woman with crystal clear skin. Her lush hair was jet black, and her face was covered by a mask

carved out of ice. One could see an extremely bewitching pair of eyes.

Her cultivation was not high, or at least, Shang Ziyang would not have been threatened by it. However, the eight people lifting the carriage was the real problem. They were all Ninth-Step Saint Kings.

Eight Ninth-Step Saint Kings carrying a single lady was a scene that was all too surreal.

Precisely because of how atrocious it seemed, Shang Ziyang went on high alert and asked, "Are you also a Kunlun's Field practitioner?"

"Indeed! But I am not here for this bunch of people. Their life or death has nothing to do with me. I came for another person, but it seems like he has yet to arrive."

Shang Ziyang replied, "Being able to bring eight Ninth-Step Saint Kings of the previous generation here, you must have a pretty strong background!"

"They are all my servants, why can't I?" she asked.

None of the Heaven Field practitioners could sit still after hearing that.

One must know that even Supreme Saints may not be able to have so many Ninth-Step Saint Kings as their servants. More so if the Ninth-Step Saint Kings were the leader of large swathes of territory and had lived for over a thousand years.

At the same time, Kunlun's Field practitioners were confused too. Just when did Kunlun's Field have such a powerful force?

Their gazes turned to the Nine Heavenly Maiden.

She knew most of Kunlun's Field's secrets after all.

However, this time, Nine Heavenly Maiden did not say anything, and instead, she seemed to be deep in thought.

Chapter 1750 - Shang Ziyan's Sword

Chapter 1750: Shang Ziyan's Sword

The various Saint Kings of Heaven Field looked toward Shang Ziyan, wondering what kind of choice he would make.

Neither of the two people who had just entered was easily dealt with. Even if they had the upper hand in numbers, it was highly likely they would need to pay a heavy price.

The Heaven Field practitioners present were all talented individuals, and could possibly become Supreme Saints. Who would want to die?

Shang Ziyan could tell what they were thinking, so he looked at the dwarf seven-step Saint King and said, "Zhuo Man, take your pick first."

Zhuo Man lifted his axe and licked his dry lips. Looking at Corpse Emperor Tianming, he smiled. "I will fight that guy."

Following that, he dashed out and smashed his axe towards Corpse Emperor Tianming.

Within the palace, a Saint of the Kunlun Field uttered in shock, "Complete Seven-Yao power!"

Normally only ninth-step Saint Kings could command such a power.

Even though Zhuo Man had been preparing that attack for a long time, it was still shocking. It was obvious that he was an extremely talented person, and was significantly stronger than others on the same cultivation level.

Corpse Emperor Tianming frowned a little, and did not take the hit. Using a marvelous movement spell, his figure leaped away, appearing a dozen miles away.

Boom!

As the axe struck the ground, the entire island shook.

Earth was split by a huge crevice, and two sandstorms of dirt and dust spread outwards in the two directions.

A dozen miles away, Corpse Emperor Tianming closed his two palms, as though he was praying. The Blue Dragon Armor glowed and a blue dragon appeared, clashing with the aftershock of the attack.

The clash shook the world again, as the strength dissipated.

It was lucky that Corpse Emperor Tianming had blocked the aftershock of the attack. Else, the crack made by the attack would have stretched for over a hundred miles.

With cultivations below a Supreme Saint, creatures who could cause such devastation in Heaven Field were few and far between.

Shang Ziyan, seeing that Zhuo Mand had blocked Corpse Emperor Tianming, lightly nodded. “We will block them. The rest of you, go and get rid of the rest of Kunlun’s Field’s forces. Be careful, there are still several difficult enemies.”

“Leave it to me. They can’t do much.” Gong Ziyan smiled.

Shang Ziyan grinned. “If you were to attack, we would surely succeed.”

Shang Ziyan’s figure blurred, and the next moment, he appeared before that mysterious lady’s carriage. With a look of admiration, he looked at her despite the saint might of eight ninth-step Saint Kings.

“You must be Heart Demon, of the Bounty Ranking in the God of Death Palace,” Shang Ziyan probed.

“What Heart Demon? There are only people whose will power is not strong enough. Only then will they fall victim to the demons within...”

The lady seemed a bit lazy, as her two limbs slowly pushed her up from a lying position. Her long legs slowly bent in, and one could catch a glimpse of her silky thighs.

Her subtle grace was tempting enough that even Shang Ziyan felt a bit moved.

Shang Ziyan replied, “I can finally understand how Feng Qiongqi, Lijiang Dragon King, Dao Xu, and other masters would fall to become your servant. You are truly an attractive woman. Unfortunately, that is useless to me.”

The lady smiled. “You are indeed quite special. It would be nearly impossible for me to control you. However, with just yourself, can you stop eight ninth-step Saint Kings?”

“That is hard to say,” Shang Ziyan replied.

At this moment, Gong Ziyan and Xun Ya, along with a huge batch of Heaven Field masters, dashed into the palace and began their assault on the remaining members of Kunlun’s Field.

The lady looked towards the palace and sighed. “I don’t care about the deaths of those Kunlun’s Field practitioners, but Zhang Ruochen does. Oh well.”

Putting the carriage down, an old man who had wings protruding from his back, along with a middle-aged man with dragon horns on his head, dashed out towards the palace to stop the Heaven Field Saint Kings.

As ninth-step Saint Kings, their speed was unimaginable. A normal Saint King might not even see their shadow.

Yet, Shang Ziyan’s speed was even faster. He stood before them.

The two ninth-step Saint Kings were slightly stunned, before quickly summoning their Saint Qi to perform a Saint Spell using their palms.

“Kid, step aside.”

Shang Ziyan’s armor glowed with three different colors. His two arms were moving like rivers intersecting. He too made two palm seals, clashing with the incoming attacks.

Boom!

The attacks clashed, with ripples of Qi flying out.

The two ninth-step Saint Kings' Saint Robes expanded like two balloons, and they flew backwards, falling next to the carriage.

On their faces, there were tri-colored light inscriptions. It seemed like they were unable to move.

Only after a short moment could they remove those inscriptions and recover.

Shang Ziyan's silvery hair fluttered in the wind, and he walked over to the carriage while saying, "For a lady like you who is so beautiful and powerful, wouldn't it be better if we make friends instead?"

The lady's gaze was not so attractive and calm anymore.

Evidently, Shang Ziyan's strength had surprised her.

With merely the strength of a seventh-step Saint King, he could defeat two ninth-step Saint Kings.

Even though he had used Rules of Truth, it was still impressive. Any older generation masters who saw that would agree that the youths now were truly scary.

Taking out an ancient mirror, the lady murmured something to it. After which, apart from two Saint Kings who remained to protect her, the other six Saint Kings dashed out, launching their attack at Shang Ziyan.

Two of them even took out a Seven-Yao Saint Weapon, and injected Saint Qi within. Instantly, there were layers after layers of light appearing on it.

Evidently, they wanted to evoke a complete Seven-Yao strength to suppress and kill Shang Ziyan.

Of course, even for a ninth-step Saint King, that would require some time.

The other four Saint Kings took the opportunity to gain some time for them.

The attacks they launched were all mid-level Saint Spells, and had already reached a master level.

One threw out a claw seal, which grew to dozens of meters in size, with countless lightning bolts converging upon it.

Another launched a palm attack, which caused even the clouds to be pressed down, with gusts of wind stirring in the world all around.

...

Facing four ninth-step Saint Kings, Shang Ziyan was as calm as ever as he plucked three red feathers from his headdress.

He swung his arm, and the three feathers flew out.

Instantly, three chirps could be heard thundering across the heavens. Each feather turned into a strange bird that was several dozens of feet across, and flew towards the nine Saint Kings. They actually blocked all the attacks.

Whoosh!

Shang Ziyan lifted off, and on his right hand a crimson sword appeared. With countless inscriptions, the sword released a heavy presence. He swept his sword towards the two nine-step Saint Kings who were preparing to use the Seven-Yao Saint Weapon.

Before the sword had reached them, a gust of flames had already been blown at them.

Shocked, the two Saint Kings spat a mouthful of blood at their respective Saint Weapons. With that, they were actually ready.

Smiling, they instantly retaliated towards Shang Ziyan, who was standing in mid-air.

Boom!

Two massive energies clashed, and the Saint Qi could be transmitted to hundreds of miles away. Even the illusion formation covering this area was almost shattered.

Urgh!

The two ninth-step Saint Kings vomited blood and flew back like ragdolls.

Their arms were bloodied and covered with wounds, with countless sword wounds all over their bodies. Their Saint Weapons were dull and no longer had their original majestic presence.

Shang Ziyang, holding the crimson sword, walked towards the lady, saying, "Now, it is your turn to make a choice. To live as my servant, or to die?"

The lady stood up and looked at Shang Ziyang in disbelief, but quickly she smiled. "No, not yet."

She swung her ancient mirror, and a blood mist flew out from within, surging into the two ninth-step Saint Kings who were previously controlling the Seven-Yao Saint Weapon.

Their bloodied arms were instantly healed, and they stood up again.

Boom!

Far away, the four ninth-step Saint Kings smashed apart the three flame birds. Turning back into three feathers, they fluttered onto the ground. The four of them then dashed back, blocking Shang Ziyang's retreat.

Shang Ziyang looked back and frowned lightly. "What a pain. However, even if you could stall me, it would be useless. Soon, all of Kunlun's Field's practitioners will die."

"How believable! This taoist would like to try and see if you are really correct!"

A massive purple cloud surged towards the fight from afar.

That voice came from this cloud.

Looking at the scene carefully, one could see that a fist-sized purple taoist was dragging a giant that was around a hundred and thirty meters in height, flying towards the palace at top speed.

It was clear that that giant was Kun.

Kun had been caught?

The Amazing Little Taoist threw Kun out, and he landed with a huge thump. He then arrogantly roared, "Kids from Heaven

Field, come out now! This taoist will kill you all. Your bones will be my steps to fame!”

Chapter 1751 - Nobody Can Fight

Chapter 1751: Nobody Can Fight

The Amazing Little Taoist's voice echoed in the space.

There were dozens of saint kings guarding the divine palace, and they all looked up.

A saint king from Heaven Field with six golden eyes saw the real body of the Amazing Little Taoist, and he said with surprise, "That's an ancient saint pill one hundred thousand years old."

Even some supreme saints were actively searching for an ancient saint pill that was one hundred thousand years old, as they were too scarce.

Who would've guessed that there would be a saint pill coming at them?

However, the saint kings from Heaven Field could all tell how powerful the Amazing Little Taoist was given its thrilling saint might, not to mention that it had knocked a great being like Kun unconscious.

Nobody dared rush out as they didn't want to end up like Kun.

And besides, it was very strange to see an ancient saint pill that was a hundred thousand years old rush out.

The Amazing Little Taoist got a bit impatient seeing no saint king from Heaven Field speak. It looked at them with disdain and said, "Anyone from Heaven Field that can fight?"

"You're nothing but a saint pill. How dare you challenge Heaven Field. I'll get rid of you today."

A tall and sturdy creature rushed out.

It was King Juexin, one of the top ten saint kings from Heaven Field.

King Juexin's Seven-Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon, 'Near Heaven Tower', had been seized by Corpse Emperor Tianming, which kept him annoyed the whole time, so he couldn't deal with a saint pill provoking him.

"Heaven Curse."

King Juexin mobilized his saint Qi, and a great many saintly way rules flew out of his forehead and gathered on his arms, forming a circular stamp with a diameter of hundreds of feet.

Sizzle!

The saint Qi rushed toward the circular stamp.

However, before King Juexin wielded the circular stamp, he was shocked.

A tumbling supreme power gushed out of that ancient saint pill that was one hundred thousand years old. Under that supreme power, King Juexin found it difficult to control that circular stamp in his hand.

Whoosh!

A trace of supreme power formed a trace of purple light, sweeping across the sky and clashing with the circular stamp.

King Juexin found it harder and harder to resist the power. He mobilized all the Rules of Truth he had and infused them in the circular stamp, quadrupling the power from the circular stamp.

Boom!

However, he still couldn't ward it off as his circular stamp was pierced through by the purple light.

Sizzle!

The purple light slew King Juexin at the waist, tearing his flesh apart and almost cutting him in half.

King Juexin felt a supreme power penetrating his wound, so he immediately drew back and yelled, "That hundred-thousand-year-old ancient saint pill has a supreme saint weapon. Let's attack it together."

All those saint kings outside the godly palace were horrified and their hearts skipped a beat.

A supreme saint weapon?

A ninth-step saint king who had a complete supreme saint weapon was able to rival a supreme saint, which meant supreme saint weapons could crush everything under supreme saints.

Only a saint king with another supreme saint weapon could rival that.

They quickly calmed themselves down because Shang Ziyang, Zuo Man, Gong Ziyang, Xun Ya, and the other great beings were present. They all took out their ten thousand pattern saint weapons to strike back at the Amazing Little Taoist.

Dozens of ten thousand pattern saint weapons released ten thousand pattern destructive forces, which looked imposing and thrilling. The whistling noise surged into the sky, echoing in the clouds.

The Amazing Little Taoist formed a Bagua print with his Purple Gold Bagua Mirror, clashing with those ten thousand patterns saint weapons, walking toward those saint kings.

Bang! Bang!

The ten thousand pattern saint weapons kept being crushed by the supreme power, turning into trash.

Shang Ziyang immediately tried to go suppress it when he noticed that the Amazing Little Taoist had a supreme saint weapon. However, he was attacked by six nine-step saint kings at the same time, so he couldn't get it out.

Inside the godly palace.

The monks from Kunlun's Field were attacked by a group of enemies with ten times more forces than they had.

Monks kept falling onto the ground, lifeless.

It wasn't a fair fight at all. Even though Nine Heavenly Maiden kept wielding the ancient inscriptions in the godly palace to perform all kinds of attack and defense techniques,

she still couldn't ward them off before the saint kings from Heaven Field encircled them completely.

If it weren't for Saint Book Ruzu and 'Light Myriad Scroll', they would've been annihilated already.

Gong Ziyang and Xun Ya walked out from the group of monks. They were so proud and looked at the monks from Kunlun's Field like they were inferior.

Everything was settled now.

The saint kings from Heaven Field all looked greedy. One of them said, "That saint book and the scroll are both true treasures from Kunlun's Field, probably having belonged to two ancient Gods. Either of them will be of tremendous use."

Saint Book Ruzu gleamed with dazzling light in Nine Heavenly Maiden's hands.

Lots of intricate characters flew out of the book, floating around the monks from Kunlun's Field and shielding them from the attacks.

However, it took a lot of mind power to utilize the original power in Saint Book Ruzu. Nine Heavenly Maiden's face was paling as she was barely supporting it.

Gong Ziyang looked at Nine Heavenly Maiden and said, "That woman is amazing. Her triggering the ancient inscriptions in the palace gave us a lot of trouble. If I didn't break all those inscriptions using my Way of Space, Heaven Field would've suffered from a lot of casualties."

Xun Ya smirked and said, "That woman is indeed impressive, but I called dibs on her already. Don't try to get her."

"Okay! That woman is yours, and that book is mine." Gong Ziyang didn't try to fight Xun Ya."

The monks from Kunlun's Field were all furious. Nine Heavenly Maiden was incomparably holy to them, yet they were talking about her like she was inventory.

Some of the monks from Kunlun's Field also felt desperate and mournful.

Their enemies were so powerful that they couldn't even fathom escaping them. They felt like a group of two-foot goats being encircled by wolves, and the only thing waiting for them was humiliation and death.

The saint kings from Heaven Field were all enjoying the desperation and hopelessness of the monks from Kunlun's Field as they loved the power to control people's lives.

Howl!

A half-step saint king from Kunlun's Field rushed out of Saint Book Ruzu and 'Light Myriad Scroll' and said, "If we're going down, you're going down with us."

"No! he's going to blow up his saint source!" a four-winged crimson angel yelled in shock.

The saint kings from Heaven Field all drew back and formed a defense formation in front of them using their best saint weapons.

Gong Ziyang still remained calm and smiled. "Trying to blow up your saint source in front of a space manipulator? How ignorant are you?"

Gong Ziyang pressed his hand forward, triggering the space power.

Bang!

The saint source of the monk from Kunlun's Field had cracked, and the destructive power tore his saint body apart. However, the space crumbled in front of him, devouring his entire body.

The destructive power wasn't released in the end.

The monks from Kunlun's Field were deeper in despair, as they couldn't even take the saint kings from Heaven Field down with them.

A saint king from Heaven Field spotted Chi Kongyue and Chi Kunlun who were standing among the monks, and he immediately transmitted his voice to Gong Ziyang. "Lord Yan, don't you think those two kids and Zhang Ruochen look very much alike?"

Gong Ziyang squinted his eyes and released cold forces.

They did look very similar, especially that young girl who looked seventy percent like Zhang Ruochen. There was no way that she wasn't related to Zhang Ruochen.

Gong Ziyang stopped waiting. He wielded a spatial crack, tearing the defense of Saint Book Ruzu and rushing toward Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

“Don't touch them.”

Qing Xiao was already seriously injured and healing on the ground.

He struggled to stand up and wielded a palm print against Gong Ziyang, trying to protect Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

Bang!

Gong Ziyang waved his arm, hitting Qing Xiao's body and knocking him away like he was a fly.

Qing Xiao couldn't handle the power from that strike at all.

Half of his body was mangled, with countless bones being crushed, and he fell onto the ground, bleeding from the inside out, twitching involuntarily.

“How dare you stop me, suicidal moron?”

Gong Ziyang stepped on Qing Xiao's face, which cracked under the immense pressure.

Gong Ziyang was a space manipulator, and he was a seventh-step saint king. He easily got into the group of monks from Kunlun's Field and captured Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

“Let go of my sister.”

Chi Kunlun wielded his saint sword toward Gong Ziyang's right hand.

“You're too weak to wield your sword in front of me.”

Gong Ziyang blew out an air sword, slaying Chi Kunlun's wrist and cutting off his hand, after which blood began spurting out. He'd never been injured like this before, and he almost passed out because of the pain.

“Tell me! What’s your relationship with Zhang Ruochen?”

Gong Ziyun released tremendous saint might, which fell on Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

Gong Ziyun frowned seeing that they did not cave, and then, he released a trace of mind power to attack their saint soul and willpower.

Chi Kunlun’s and Chi Kongyue’s faces paled worse and worse as their mouths and ears kept bleeding.

Luo Xu yelled, “Gong Ziyun, you’re the leader of Space Godly Palace. Stop messing with two kids.”

Gong Ziyun looked to Luo Xu and said, “Okay. How about you two tell me what they have to do with Zhang Ruochen?”

Suddenly, the Amazing Little Taoist’s voice was transmitted into the godly palace. “What do you want to know? I’ll tell you. Is there anybody from Heaven Field who can fight at all?”

Boom!

A fierce energy storm rushed into the godly palace.

More than ten corpses of the saint kings from Heaven Field flew in, falling onto the ground. One of them was King Juexin, one of the top ten most powerful saint kings.

Chapter 1752 - Anger

Chapter 1752: Anger

Thick purple clouds rushed into the godly palace.

The Amazing Little Taoist was glowing with purple-gold light and holding the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror. It trampled on the bloody corpses, walking into the godly palace with a strut.

Seeing the Amazing Little Taoist, Nine Heavenly Maiden finally smiled with her marvelous face.

Now that the ancient saint pill that was one hundred thousand years old was around, Zhang Ruochen should be close as well.

Nine Heavenly Maiden always thought that Zhang Ruochen was the best talent from Kunlun's Field of this generation. Even compared to the ancient Gods, he was still better, capable of what others weren't.

Zhang Ruochen was their only hope to survive today.

Him coming here meant Kunlun's Field might be able to make it out of today alive.

The other monks from Kunlun's Field didn't know who the Amazing Little Taoist was, so they all looked confused. They were all speculating why that little creature would help Kunlun's Field?

No matter who it was, they respected anyone who risked offending Heaven Field to help Kunlun's Field at its most dangerous time.

All the saint kings from Heaven Field were furious.

They had thought that they could annihilate the saints and saint kings from Kunlun's Field without efforts, yet one accident after another made them suffer a huge loss.

Even if they annihilated all the monks from Kunlun's Field, Heaven Field would have suffered more casualties.

Xun Ya couldn't look glummer seeing King Juexin's body. He said, "You're nothing but a saint pill, yet you dare kill so many saint kings from Heaven Field. Even burning you alive won't make you pay for what you did."

The Amazing Little Taoist didn't give a damn about Xun Ya. Instead, it looked to Gong Ziyan, dazed, then it clicked its tongue. "How dare you hurt those two little kids? When Zhang Ruochen finds out, he'll chase you to the end of the universe."

"Oh? It seems you know the relationship between them and Zhang Ruochen."

Gong Ziyan smiled and threw Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue to the two saint kings from the dwarf race and walked toward the Amazing Little Taoist.

Gong Ziyan was careful. After seeing King Juexin's body, he knew that this little Taoist wasn't weak. Instead, it was a force to be reckoned with.

He sneakily took out a Space Freeze Rune and pinched it with his index finger and middle finger.

"So what? Why would I tell anything? Seems like you have great cultivation. Do you have the guts to fight me?" The Amazing Little Taoist hooked his finger to beckon Gong Ziyan.

"Okay. Let's fight."

Gong Ziyan showed a gesture with his right hand.

However, the Space Freeze Rune disappeared from his left hand and showed up above the Amazing Little Taoist's head.

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, "Careful."

The Amazing Little Taoist also sensed something, and it looked up.

Whoosh!

The Space Freeze Rune released its power, condensing the space around the Amazing Little Taoist.

The Amazing Little Taoist couldn't move at all as if it had been turned to stone.

The monks from Kunlun's Field sighed, as a strong ally was easily suppressed by Gong Ziyan.

Gong Ziyan curled the corner of his lips and said disdainfully, "You deserve to die for underestimating a space manipulator."

Gong Ziyan could tell that the Amazing Little Taoist's Purple-gold Bagua Mirror was extraordinary. He sneered and tried to snatch it with spatial move.

The Purple-gold Bagua Mirror kept shaking in the Amazing Little Taoist's hands as it was about to be captured by Gong Ziyan.

Suddenly, a figure showed up at the door of the godly palace.

He waved his finger at the space, and a spatial crack cut off the connection between Gong Ziyan and the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.

Meanwhile, the Space Freeze Rune was also cracked.

Gong Ziyan said, "Who's there?"

All the monks looked to the gate of the godly palace.

Because of the light, there was a long shadow on the ground. At the end of the shadow was a young man holding a golden umbrella. It was no doubt Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing that human being, Nine Heavenly Maiden was immediately relieved, and she couldn't support Saint Book Ruzu anymore.

The ancient characters floating in the godly palace flew back to Saint Book Ruzu.

Nine Heavenly Maiden shivered before starting to collapse.

"Maiden."

Princess White Li supported Nine Heavenly Maiden by putting her hand on her back. Meanwhile, she wielded a trace of tumbling saint Qi and infused it in her meridians and saint meridians.

The space recovered, and the Amazing Little Taoist twitched its body. It immediately rushed to Zhang Ruochen, turned, and

yelled, “Fight me fair and square if you have the guts. Such a cheap shot using a rune to scheme me.”

The Amazing Little Taoist wasn't as confident as before when it said that.

After all, there were many powerful beings with special skills from Heaven Field. They had countless unfathomable techniques. If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen, it would've been suppressed by Gong Ziyang already.

Gong Ziyang squinted his eyes and said, “How dare you come here, Zhang Ruochen... Being alive really means nothing to you, does it? Well, you were lucky enough to be saved by Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang last time, but this time, you won't have that luck again!”

The Amazing Little Taoist pointed at Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue, who had been captured by the two saint kings from the Dwarf race, and whispered to Zhang Ruochen.

His intention to kill tumbled in his seemingly tranquil eyes.

Gong Ziyang noticed it and walked back to the two dwarf saint kings. “Seems like I was right. These two kids are indeed related to you in a special way. They aren't your kids, are they?”

“Did you cut off his hand?” Zhang Ruochen glared at him.

Even though Chi Kunlun viewed Zhang Ruochen as his mortal enemy and had tried to kill him, he had only barely taught him a lesson.

However, Gong Ziyang had crushed his saint soul and cut off his hand, which pained Zhang Ruochen like never before, and he'd rather have his own hands chopped off. He wanted nothing more than to cut Gong Ziyang into pieces, if not something bloodier.

“So what? You're only a fourth-step saint king. Do you really think you can fight me?” said Gong Ziyang.

Zhang Ruochen sneered and stepped forward with his right foot.

Boom!

The space in the godly palace shook like waves, which made it difficult for the saint kings from Heaven Field to stand firmly.

“How come? Is he more accomplished in the Way of Space than me?” Gong Ziyan was shocked.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen stop, Gong Ziyan was confident that he could take advantage of Zhang Ruochen’s weakness.

Gong Ziyan was so hostile against Zhang Ruochen mainly because a senior from his clan spoke too highly of Zhang Ruochen, and he thought Zhang Ruochen was a huge threat with far greater potential in the Way of Truth than Gong Ziyan.

Which was why the senior asked him to get rid of Zhang Ruochen, no matter what.

Gong Ziyan was upset by what he said, and he reckoned that he was just as good as Zhang Ruochen. After the resent piling up for a long time, he wanted to seize this chance to humiliate Zhang Ruochen.

“Do you want to save them?” asked Gong Ziyan. “If you kneel before me and beg, I might spare their lives.”

The hearts of monks from Kunlun’s Field sank, as those two kids were indeed Zhang Ruochen’s weakness. He might have to submit to them, as their lives were in the hands of Gong Ziyan.

The Amazing Little Taoist was a bit worried. It said, “Zhang Ruochen, that man is despicable. He’ll never let those two kids go, no matter who you do.”

Zhang Ruochen said without any facial expressions, “Bring them here.”

The Carnivorous Holy Flower and Xie Chengzi each picked one person, and they were Wang Xu and Yan Ni.

The saint kings from Heaven Field started to talk relentlessly.

Both Wang Xu and Yan Ni had incredible backgrounds, especially Wang Xu, who was one of Gong Ziyan’s best friends.

How did Zhang Ruochen have the two of them?

“Let our princess go, Zhang Ruochen. If you touch her, all of Guanghan Field will pay,” said a beautiful man from the fairy race, indignant.

Poof!

Zhang Ruochen didn't care at all about what he said. He cut off one of Yan Ni's arms with his palm. She groaned in anguish, her face twitching.

All the saint kings from Heaven Field were outraged. They encircled Zhang Ruochen, wanting to annihilate him.

“Let him go,” yelled Zhang Ruochen.

Gong Ziyang clenched his fist and asked, “What if I don't?”

Zhang Ruochen trampled on Wang Xu's back, and following cracking sounds, Wang Xu's godly inscriptions started to sink under Zhang Ruochen's foot.

In the end, the godly inscriptions were torn apart by the space power, and Zhang Ruochen stepped into Wang Xu's back with his foot. Saint blood spurted out of Wang Xu's body.

It was so brutal that all the saint kings were terrified.

“Release them or not?” said Zhang Ruochen.

Gong Ziyang was so mad that he was trembling, and his eyes were almost about to pop.

Xun Ya transmitted his voice to Gong Ziyang and said, “Wang Tian died already. If Wang Xu dies, the God from Ruiya Field will be infuriated, and she might do everything she can to retaliate. If she holds us accountable, things will end very badly for us.

The God from Ruiya Field had a senior status, and she only had two kids, Wang Tian and Wang Xu.

If someone rendered her childless, he would die.

Only Zhang Ruochen dared hit Wang Xu this mercilessly after Wang Tian died.

Gong Ziyang ground his teeth and said, "I can give these two kids back to you, but I can only release two of the monks from Kunlun's Field."

Chapter 1753 - Each Had Their Own Agenda

Chapter 1753: Each Had Their Own Agenda

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Heaven Field had already paid a huge price today, as dozens of saint kings who had the potential to become supreme saints had been killed. It was impossible for them to let go of the monks from Kunlun's Field because of Wang Xu and Yan Ni.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen agreed to only take two monks back.

“Give me the two children.”

Gong Ziyang took Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue from the two dwarf saint kings.

However, he immediately drew a space formation print on each of their backs.

Obviously, these two kids were Zhang Ruochen's weakness, so there was no way he would return them to Zhang Ruochen.

Gong Ziyang sniggered and walked toward Zhang Ruochen, holding one kid in each hand.

Zhang Ruochen also walked toward Gong Ziyang, holding Wang Xu and Yan Ni.

The saint kings from Heaven Field all released rumbling murderous Qi when they were hundreds of feet away from each other. Once the exchange was over, they would definitely make earth-shattering attacks to annihilate Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was enraged, but he was still grounded and shared eye contact with Nine Heavenly Maiden.

They didn't transmit their voices or use their mind power to communicate with each other, but they already knew what they were going to do from that eye contact. They knew each other well enough to do that.

Nine Heavenly Maiden nodded vaguely.

Xun Ya transmitted his voice to the four four-winged crimson angels: "Be careful. On the surface, they're exchanging the hostages, but they're actually fighting each other in the Way of Space."

"What do you mean?"

A sturdy crimson angel was confused.

Xun Ya said, "Neither Zhang Ruochen nor Gong Ziyuan wants to hand the hostages to the other, so they'll definitely try to keep the hostages and take away each other's hostages."

"I see."

Another four-winged crimson angel said, "Gong Ziyuan is a seventh-step saint king, but Zhang Ruochen is only a fourth-step saint king. Gong Ziyuan is at an absolute advantage this time, and he'll crush Zhang Ruochen."

"Even so, we need to be careful. If Zhang Ruochen gets the upper hand, we'll have to help Gong Ziyuan and make sure that Zhang Ruochen doesn't snatch our bargaining chips," said Xun Ya.

"Okay."

The four crimson angels started to change their locations secretly.

Gong Ziyuan walked forward while keeping track of the distance between him and Zhang Ruochen, because the space prints he carved on Chi Kunlun's and Chi Kongyue's backs were very simple, and they would only work within one hundred feet.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking when he was one hundred and sixty feet away from Gong Ziyuan and said, "This is it, and don't get any closer. I'm worried that you might use some despicable techniques if we get too close."

Gong Ziyuan scowled, stopped walking, and said, "I'm the leader of Space Godly Palace, and I'm a man of honor. There's no way I'd do anything sneaky. As for you, well... You killed many innocent monks in the Mountain-Sealing Palace under a false identity."

"You call them innocent?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to avoid that. He paused for a second and said, "Whatever. Stop talking about those irrelevant things and being so sanctimonious. Let's exchange our hostages first."

"Okay," said Gong Ziyuan.

Although Zhang Ruochen was more than one hundred feet away from Gong Ziyuan, he could snatch them back before Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue were closer than one hundred feet away from him. As for Wang Xu and Yan Ni, Xun Ya could grasp them at any time.

Zhang Ruochen and Gong Ziyuan both threw their hostages. Wang Xu, Yan Ni, Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue almost flew out at the same time.

They got closer and closer to each other.

Zhang Ruochen and Gong Ziyuan both stood still, gazing at each other.

The entire godly palace was breathing with tension, and the monks couldn't be more solemn. Some of them were trying to operate saint Qi in their bodies and gathered it in the saint weapons in their hands. They could make an attack at any time.

As those four were about to intertwine with each other, getting seventy to eighty feet away from Zhang Ruochen and Gong Ziyuan, Gong Ziyuan suddenly pointed his finger at Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

The space formation prints on Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue gleamed with blazing light, shaking the space around them and forming two space whirlpools.

Gong Ziyang couldn't help smiling smugly, as he thought he was about to get those two kids back.

Suddenly...

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue, who were floating in the air, disappeared.

Gong Ziyang then looked to Zhang Ruochen in the distance, and he found out with shock that Zhang Ruochen was able to perform spatial capture without space formation prints, which looked familiar to him.

“Not that easy to get them back.”

Gong Ziyang wielded a Space Freeze Rune, which froze the space dozens of square feet around Zhang Ruochen, which hindered Zhang Ruochen's spatial capture.

Whoosh!

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue showed up thirty feet away from Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and showed up right under those two kids and reached his arms upwards.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen tore apart the frozen space and triggered the power of time.

Time paused for a second in the space around Zhang Ruochen, Chi Kunlun, Chi Kongyue, and Gong Ziyang.

Seizing this moment, Zhang Ruochen approached Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue and shielded them like a mountain.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen tried to stab Gong Ziyang's forehead with his Eight-dragon Umbrella.

After the power of time vanished, Gong Ziyang recovered, and all he could see was eye-piercing golden light, which gave him a headache.

Gong Ziyan's body came out in a cold sweat as he realized he had underestimated Zhang Ruochen.

“Descendant of Time and Space, Descendant of Time and Space... He can use the power of time and the power of space.”

Gong Ziyan had spent most of his time and energy studying the Way of Space, and he'd almost never practiced the martial way or saint spells except those necessary to improve his cultivation.

Gong Ziyan knew that he wouldn't stand much of a chance against Zhang Ruochen in the martial way, even if he was a seventh-step saint king.

After all, as a space manipulator, Gong Ziyan was too proud to practice other techniques, like fist techniques, sword techniques, and palm techniques, which were practiced by savages in his opinion.

Which was why Gong Ziyan panicked when Zhang Ruochen was trying to stab him at that close distance. He had to move a couple feet away to the left to dodge it.

To Gong Ziyan's surprise, Zhang Ruochen didn't have a second strike. Instead, he rushed forward as if he'd toppled.

Gong Ziyan wouldn't let this perfect opportunity slip away. He tried to seize Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue. As long as he had them under his control, Zhang Ruochen would have to do whatever he wanted.

However, the Carnivorous Holy Flower wielded two vines, entangling Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue, and dragging them out of the godly palace.

On the other side, four crimson angels tried to seize Wang Xu and Yan Ni, but they were knocked away by the huge Bagua print formed by the Amazing Little Taoist's Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.

Xun Ya used his Blood Battle Wheel, but it was still warded off by the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.

Xie Chengzi flew out and grabbed Wang Xu and Yan Ni.

Everything happened in an instant, and none of them could've moved faster.

Gong Ziyang was incensed and ordered, "What're you still waiting for. Suppress and kill them now!"

They didn't have the capacity to care about Wang Xu and Yan Ni anymore. If Zhang Ruochen had them under control, the saint kings from Heaven Field would be restrained by Zhang Ruochen, which meant this assassination action would fail.

More than half of the saint kings from Heaven Field were gathered in the godly palace, and almost half of them were stronger than fourth-step saint kings. Hearing Gong Ziyang's order, they all made attacks against the Amazing Little Taoist, Xie Chengzi, and Zhang Ruochen.

Even the ten godly disciples needed to get away in front of those attacks, not to mention them.

"Go!"

The Amazing Little Taoist immediately retreated and mobilized supreme power, trying to use the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror to ward off the attacks.

Boom!

The power from the attack was too strong for the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror to withstand, and it knocked both the Amazing Little Taoist and Xie Chengzi out of the godly palace.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen had rushed to Nine Heavenly Maiden. Seeing the horrific power wielded by the saint kings from Heaven Field, Zhang Ruochen still remained calm. He shot a glance at Princess White Li and said, "Give me some power."

Princess White Li shook her body and showed up behind Zhang Ruochen, waving her palms.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide, and countless silver light screens showed up, forming a multidimensional space, enveloping all the monks from Kunlun's Field.

Gong Ziyang was dazed and yelled, "Oh no! Zhang Ruochen's true intent is to save all the monks from Kunlun's Field. Stop him!"

"Let's go!" Zhang Ruochen yelled.

After the silver light blinked, Zhang Ruochen and the monks from Kunlun's Field all vanished from the godly palace.

Boom!

The attacks all hit the godly palace, which released tremendous saint power ripples, overpowering the saint kings from Heaven Field.

Gong Ziyang was dumbfounded seeing the empty godly palace and mumbled, "Impossible... Impossible... Zhang Ruochen is only a fourth-step saint king. How did he perform a spatial move with so many monks at the same time? Could it be... Did you use that book? What is that valuable?"

Gong Ziyang recalled the silver book Zhang Ruochen had in his hands.

"Damn it..."

Gong Ziyang immediately realized what was going to happen. He was shocked and shouted at the saint kings in the godly palace, "Quick! Quick! Get out of the godly palace now!"

Zhang Ruochen had left the godly palace with the monks from Kunlun's Field, but those from Heaven Field were still inside.

The godly palace was nothing but a prison now.

They used to be the hunters of the monks from Kunlun's Field, but now, the situation did a one-eighty and they'd become the prey.

Chapter 1754 - Suppress The Godly Palace

Chapter 1754: Suppress The Godly Palace

Whoosh!

A flood of silver light showed up around five thousand feet away from the godly palace.

There was a large group of people in the silver light, and powerful saint Qi ripples surged to the sky, and they were the monks from Kunlun's Field. Most of them were seriously injured, and they'd lost their motivation, looking defeated.

However, when they realized that they'd been saved from the encirclement of the saint kings from Heaven Field, they all rejoiced like a bunch of drowning people being rescued onshore.

Everyone looked at Zhang Ruochen with veneration.

Even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had to admit that Zhang Ruochen was a hero, and was rendered silent.

Zhang Ruochen had managed to save all of them in an impasse like that, facing hundreds of powerful saint kings. If they were in Zhang Ruochen's shoes, they wouldn't have shown up at all, and the best they would have done was to call for help from Truth Godly Palace.

However, before the godly disciples from Truth Godly Palace could get there, the monks from Kunlun's Field would've been annihilated.

Everyone would admire someone like Zhang Ruochen who had such bravery and breadth of mind.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon finally got to understand why Princess White Li, an ancient remains creature, would choose to follow Zhang Ruochen over it.

Zhang Ruochen did have the potential to become a hero of his time, like Lord Jiwang, the lord of the dragon race in the ancient times.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had learned of the legends of Lord Dragon Jiwang from the secret guides from Ancestral Dragon Mountain, and it couldn't admire him more. He was a real hero of his time, a magnate of Kunlun's Field and the overlord of the dragon race who roamed the universe.

Each hero of their time had great luck with a large group of talents as their followers.

And those followers who grew with the heroes would all become top-tier talents awed by the world, like the eight heavenly dragons under Lord Jiwang, each of which had the power to fight Gods.

Princess White Li probably chose to follow Zhang Ruochen because she saw his potential, and she would want to become someone like the eight heavenly dragons with the help of Zhang Ruochen.

The monks from the imperial government all had some strong grudges against Zhang Ruochen, treating him as a dreg from the former dynasty.

However, the monks were all speechless, feeling complicated.

The imperial government was the most powerful organization in Kunlun's Field, and it ruled the whole field.

They thought that the imperial government had the best talents in the world, yet they couldn't even compare with the monks following Zhang Ruochen.

Where did Zhang Ruochen find those great beings?

"Let's get out of here."

"That's right. The saint kings from Heaven Field are all trapped in the godly palace, giving us a great chance to flee."

...

More than half of the saint kings from Heaven Field were trapped in the godly palace. Although there were still many

saint kings outside, they were all stationed in different directions, and it would take some time for them to gather.

This was indeed the best time for them to get away.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't have any intention of making a sortie with them. He looked to Nine Heavenly Maiden. "We can't just let them off so easily, can we?"

Nine Heavenly Maiden's temperament suddenly changes. Her eyes gleamed as she released blazing flames, and she said, "No need for you to remind me. I'll suppress them all today to avenge my elder brother."

Zhang Ruochen scowled as this wasn't the voice of Saint Lady. Instead, it was Martial Saint Canglan.

Wan Canglan, the sister of Wan Zhaoyi.

It was likely that Saint Lady consumed too much of her mind power, so she was temporarily hibernating, after which Martian Saint Canglan's consciousness showed up, becoming the lead for Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen had some mixed feelings toward Martial Saint Canglan.

He wasn't sure whether their minds could be as tacit as his and Saint Lady's.

"All the saints from Kunlun's Field, give me the power to take back the godly palace."

Nine Heavenly Maiden formed a fingerprint, and nine martial deity prints showed up on her forehead, forming a circle.

A light pillar flew out from the center of the circle and hit the top of the godly palace.

All the saints from Kunlun's Field wielded traces of saint Qi, which infused Nine Heavenly Maiden's back. Her slender body seemed to be able to hold as much saint Qi as she wanted.

With the help of all the saints, Nine Heavenly Maiden gave out more and more forces.

That godly palace belonged to one of the nine heavenly maidens, Siming Goddess.

Sensing the forces of Siming Goddess, the godly palace immediately started to shake, shrink, and fly toward her.

Zhang Ruochen retreated back to the Amazing Little Taoist, Carnivorous Holy Flower, and Xie Chengzi. He took out the blue lotus seed and infused immense life forces into Chi Kunlun's and Chi Kongyue's bodies.

Sizzle!

Chi Kunlun's hand slowly grew back, and his face became less pale.

Meanwhile, the blue light also shone upon the saints from Kunlun's Field, which quickly healed their wounds. They all looked to Zhang Ruochen, amazed.

“Um? It happened again!”

Zhang Ruochen sensed a feeble ripple coming from underground again, which was stronger than last time. He couldn't help smiling.

The blue seed lotus in his hand kept shining and dimming as if it was answering to the stuff underground.

“What is that?”

Zhang Ruochen released a trace of mind power to inspect it, but the ripple vanished instantly.

Boom!

The godly palace shrunk to half the size, but something happened.

Tremendous saintly way power gushed out of the godly palace. It didn't penetrate the palace, but it did shake the palace and make it bulge.

Boom!

Boom!

...

The monks from Heaven Field who were trapped in the godly palace made ferocious attacks, and the godly palace turned back to its original size, which knocked Nine Heavenly Maiden back.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Nine Heavenly Maiden, who was struggling to support it, and he said, “How about letting me take the godly palace under control if you’re having a hard time doing so.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden shot Zhang Ruochen a glare and said, “Nobody can get the godly palace but me.”

“There’re a great many saint kings from Heaven Field in the godly palace. Even you, the master of the godly palace, won’t be able to withstand all their attack power,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Nine Heavenly Maiden felt that Zhang Ruochen was underestimating her. She spit out red saint blood, which turned into rain, merging with the saint Qi and raining on the godly palace.

After which the godly palace stopped shaking so fiercely, starting to get smaller and smaller.

The Amazing Little Taoist said, “She fears that you’ll take away the godly palace and won’t give it back to her.”

“Ugh. I reckon she’s afraid that you’ll steal her thunder. I wouldn’t let a chance to make such a contribution slip away.” The Carnivorous Holy Flower smiled.

The Amazing Little Taoist didn’t seem to be scared of Blackie anymore. It asked, “Where’s that owl?”

“It went to the real Xumi Dojo!”

Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked to the northwest.

And then, he put his hand on the Eight-dragon Umbrella and infused his saint Qi into it.

The umbrella was opened, giving off shining golden light, shielding all the monks from Kunlun’s Field.

Bang!

Bang!

Six saint arrows were shot at the Eight-dragon Umbrella, making six rumbling noises.

Soon, six saint kings of the fairy race showed up at the northwestern side, drew their bows and shot again.

The saint kings from Heaven Field kept arriving and making attacks from the distance.

Zhang Ruochen and the others could still manage to ward them off at the beginning.

However, with more saint kings arriving, their attacks became more and more overwhelming.

The saints from Kunlun's Field standing in the sky were their targets.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower said, "Master, we can't hold them off for much longer. Tell that Nine Heavenly Maiden to stop trying to get the godly palace back and get out before Heaven Field completely encircles us."

"Try to ward them off for a bit longer."

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to argue with Nine Heavenly Maiden anymore. He rushed to her side and hit her with his hand.

Bang!

He hit Nine Heavenly Maiden's shoulder and knocked her away.

"What are you doing, Zhang Ruochen?"

Nine Heavenly Maiden wasn't injured seriously, but she was furious.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give a damn about her. He opened the Time and Space Secret Guide, which flew to above the godly palace.

And then, silver light kept gushing out of the book, enveloping the godly palace like water.

Nine Heavenly Maiden finally understood that Zhang Ruochen pushed her away because she was a burden to him.

Seeing the godly palace fly toward the Time and Space Secret Guide, Nine Heavenly Maiden got angrier and kept grinding her teeth at Zhang Ruochen. She found that guy irritating, and she was also disappointed in herself.

Suddenly, Nine Heavenly Maiden saw a human being walk out from another space and show up behind Zhang Ruochen.

It was the leader of Space Godly Palace, Gong Ziyan.

Gong Ziyan got out of the godly palace using spatial move, but he'd been waiting nearby for a chance.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to get the godly palace, Gong Ziyan moved to right behind him and said ferociously, "I'm the one who laughs last and loudest. Die!"

Gong Ziyan formed a spatial crack and was about to wield it.

Whoosh!

Nine Heavenly Maiden waved her arm, and a trace of silver light flew out.

It was a silver kitchen knife.

There was dimming godly power on the kitchen knife, and it was wielded against Gong Ziyan's neck.

Gong Ziyan was dazed and used a Space Freeze Rune, clashing with the kitchen knife and stopping it from moving.

Zhang Ruochen seized that moment and put the godly palace into the Time and Space Secret Guide, and then he turned around and wielded a spatial crack, almost at the same time as Gong Ziyan.

Bang!

Two spatial cracks clashed with each other, shaking the space around them.

Zhang Ruochen was less than one hundred feet away from Gong Ziyan. They gazed at each other coldly.

"Die."

Zhang Ruochen had been suppressing his anger for a long time, and he let it all out seeing Gong Ziyan so close to him. He formed a fiery fist print and struck toward him.

Even though his enemy's cultivation was three levels higher than his, he wasn't afraid at all.

Chapter 1755 - Space Exquisite Ball

Chapter 1755: Space Exquisite Ball

The power of the Flame God Gloves was completely utilized.

The fist way rules entwined with each other like a cobweb. It looked like an ordinary fist, but it wielded flame clouds larger than palaces.

Which led to cracking sounds in the space.

Gong Ziyan was nowhere near as fast as Zhang Ruochen when it came to close-distance battles. Even though he was a seventh-step saint king, he still couldn't dodge it.

However, the fist force became slower when it was only thirty feet away from Gong Ziyan, which gave him some time to form defense against that.

Gong Ziyan wielded a circular shield to clash with Zhang Ruochen's fist.

Boom!

The exploding fist force shook Gong Ziyan's body, knocking him more than ten miles away, wrecking the ground.

The shield he had in his hand was an ancient supreme saint weapon with tremendous defense power. It could deflect power and switch the power to the side.

Even so, Gong Ziyan's palms were still in extreme pain.

And his hand was slit, bleeding saint blood.

"He's only a fourth-step saint king. How did he get so strong?" Gong Ziyan was sure that Zhang Ruochen must've hidden his real cultivation.

Little did he know was that Zhang Ruochen had spent a lot of time practicing his fist way and body strength.

Gong Ziyan was only superior to Zhang Ruochen when it came to cultivation, yet Zhang Ruochen was way stronger than him in body strength and martial way.

Zhang Ruochen looked a bit upset and thought, Damn. Gong Ziyan has a Time and Space Agate which can slow down time within thirty feet away from him and form a mini chaotic space.

If it weren't for the Time and Space Agate, Zhang Ruochen might've seriously injured Gong Ziyan.

Gong Ziyan took out eight Space Exquisite Balls and threw them out. They floated in eight different locations, spinning and turning the space into whirlpools, chaotic.

Any monk who stepped into the whirlpool formed by the eight Space Exquisite Balls would be suppressed by the power.

After using the trump card, Gong Ziyan yelled, "What's your cultivation, Zhang Ruochen?"

"You don't deserve to know."

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and showed up across from Gong Ziyan. He opened his Eight-dragon Umbrella and wielded eight golden dragons, attacking him.

Howl!

The golden dragons emanated thick and overwhelming saint forces.

After entering the space whirlpool, the eight golden dragons started to spin around the whirlpool.

Gong Ziyan smiled and said, "With the power of the eight Space Exquisite Balls, none of your attacks will work here. I'd usually only use Space Exquisite Balls when I'm fighting a ninth-step saint king. You should be flattered that I'm using this to fight you!"

Suddenly, Gong Ziyan wielded the giant space whirlpool and ascended, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen.

It swept away the mud and stones on the ground, and he flew and spun quickly, making shrill noises.

The space became dark and glum.

The eight Space Exquisite Balls were a set of incredible space valuables. Zhang Ruochen felt a tremendous pressure, and he would be at a huge disadvantage if he was sucked into the space whirlpool even if he was a space manipulator.

The phantoms of a Luan and a phoenix showed up under Zhang Ruochen's feet, retreating.

“How dare you flee?”

Gong Ziyan manipulated the power of space, and the eight golden dragons flew out of the whirlpool, attacking Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Boom!

...

The eight forces hit the ground, making pits that looked like an abyss, dismantling the earth.

To others, Gong Ziyan had an absolute upper hand and had given Zhang Ruochen no place to escape. It seemed he could suppress Zhang Ruochen in no time.

Which was why all the saint kings from Heaven Field were encircling the monks from Kunlun's Field instead of helping Gong Ziyan.

Even Nine Heavenly Maiden reckoned that Zhang Ruochen was in grave danger.

After getting back her silver kitchen knife, she rushed toward the battlefield where Zhang Ruochen and Gong Ziyan were fighting, wielding a flood of Divine Fire Jingmie.

She had obtained Divine Fire Jingmie from the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, and the fire in her body was very close to official level as she kept absorbing the inheritance power.

“You've overestimated yourself.”

Gong Ziyang pointed his finger forward, and a Space Exquisite Ball flew out, penetrating the fiery cloud like a piece of paper.

A space shock ripple flew out of the Space Exquisite Balls and hit Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Nine Heavenly Maiden wielded Saint Book Ruzu, and the characters flew out of the book, clashing with the space ripples.

“She warded it off!” Gong Ziyang was shocked.

Nine Heavenly Maiden drew back hundreds of feet before she could balance herself. She then dissolved that power using the power of Saint Book Ruzu.

But then, two more Space Exquisite Balls flew out.

The three Space Exquisite Balls kept spinning, clashing with Saint Book Ruzu, and the power could rival that of three stars hitting each other.

Cough!

Nine Heavenly Maiden spit out blood and flew away like a kite being cut from its string, and her organs and meridians were injured.

She knelt on the ground with one knee and kept bleeding. “He’s too powerful. Gong Ziyang using Space Exquisite Balls can rival a ninth-step saint king. Even if I team up with Zhang Ruochen, we’re still way weaker...”

Gong Ziyang’s main target was Zhang Ruochen. After getting rid of Nine Heavenly Maiden, he dashed toward Zhang Ruochen again. “Don’t you have a space true treasure, Zhang Ruochen? Or is your space true treasure still in the Godly Palace and you can’t get it out?”

Zhang Ruochen kept retreating and dodged the space attacks from Gong Ziyang.

“Aren’t you the Time and Space Descendant? Why aren’t you using the space power to fight me? What’s the point of retreating?” Gong Ziyang had suppressed Zhang Ruochen completely and kept laughing.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking and took out a purple godly stone. “I don’t need space power to fight you.”

“What did you say?”

Gong Ziyang was dismayed.

“I said, that you’re not qualified to force me to use space power.”

Whoosh!

The purple godly stone gleamed with blazing light, turning into a towering godly mountain and looking transparent. It looked like it was made of divine crystal.

The space around the godly mountain was frozen.

Suddenly, the eight Space Exquisite Balls floating around Gong Ziyang fell to the ground.

The space whirlpool also dissipated.

“What did he...”

Gong Ziyang was dazed and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

He would’ve never thought that a space manipulator would freeze the space. It was like cutting off one of his arms.

As Gong Ziyang was about to pick up the Space Exquisite Balls, Zhang Ruochen dived, riding the Golden Dragon Carriage and striking him.

Gong Ziyang had to give up the Space Exquisite Balls, and he moved to the right and wielded his palms at the same time.

Sizzle!

The Abyss Ancient Sword with Sword Way Xuangang was invincible. It broke Gong Ziyang’s palm power and left a long scar on his chest.

Gong Ziyang was incensed seeing the saint blood gushing out of his body.

“What? Is this how weak you are as a seventh-step saint king without space power?” Zhang Ruochen rode the Golden Dragon Carriage back, holding the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Don’t you dare be smug. I’m a seventh-step saint king after all. I can crush you with my cultivation alone.”

Gong Ziyang could tell that Zhang Ruochen was indeed a fourth-step saint king, and that he wasn’t hiding his cultivation. Otherwise, he would’ve been killed by Zhang Ruochen instead of only suffering a flesh wound.

“Ocean and Cloud Palm.”

Thick saint Qi gushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s body, and more than ten thousand palm way rules flowed out of both of his arms. The tumbling palm power shook the space around them.

Only a seventh-step saint king could mobilize more than twenty thousand palm way rules at the same time.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he hadn’t refined two thousand palm way rules yet, and he would definitely be defeated. It was the fundamental gap between their cultivations.

“Didn’t expect you to have practiced a saint-spell-level palm technique,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Gong Ziyang smiled confidently, “I don’t think it’s difficult to suppress you with this palm technique.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t answer, but he still remained calm.

Just as Gong Ziyang had mobilized his saint Qi to the limit, he suddenly felt extremely weak as if he was a rubber ball losing all its air, feeling more and more feeble.

“How did that happen?”

Gong Ziyang’s face paled. His legs shook, and he couldn’t stand up straight.

Zhang Ruochen carved a time print on the Abyss Ancient Sword. Although he also sliced Gong Ziyang slightly with his sword, that time print took away one hundred years of his life.

Poof!

Zhang Ruochen then cut off Gong Ziyang’s right hand.

Gong Ziyang yelled in agony, and his wrist bled like hell.

Poof!

He then wielded his sword again, cutting off his other hand.

Gong Ziyang tried to run away from the godly palace while yelling, “What did you do to me, Zhang Ruochen?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t say anything. He kept chasing Gong Ziyang in the Golden Dragon Carriage with murderous Qi spreading. Gong Ziyang was terrified, struggling to survive.

The saint kings from Heaven Field were all terrified as the situation was turned upside down so quickly.

Gong Ziyang had been at an absolute advantage, but now, his hands were cut off and was being forced to run like a total loser.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t rush to kill him. Instead, he kept chasing him.

Gong Ziyang was in a state of desperation.

Nine Heavenly Maiden was dazed as well, as she thought she was hallucinating. “Zhang Ruochen is just a fourth-step saint king. How did he crush a space manipulator who’s a seventh-step saint king? Are all nine heavenly maidens combined still weaker than him?”

Chapter 1756 - Soul Refining

Chapter 1756: Soul Refining

“Stop Zhang Ruochen at all costs, saint kings from the Fairy Race. We can’t let him kill Gong Ziyun.” A mind power saint king from the fairy race pointed at Zhang Ruochen, holding a blue jade saint scepter in his hand.

All of a sudden, spiritual Qi gathered around him, forming thousands of black vines.

The vines moved like underground dragons, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen.

There were fourteen good-looking fairies behind the mind power saint king, and they all drew the white jade bows that were ten thousand pattern saint weapons. There were immense power ripples around each of the bows, forming a tornado of destruction Qi.

The Fairy Race was the greatest at archery.

Some of the saint-king fairies were able to perform some extraordinary archery techniques, which could shatter the earth.

Fourteen ten-thousand-pattern saint arrows were shot, and they had unrivaled destructive power even though they were a thousand miles away. They could definitely destroy a planet.

Whoosh!

A dark shadow showed up beside the fourteen fairy saint kings.

He was slender, carrying a rusty sword, and he could deceive the saint kings weaker than him like a ghost.

The mind power saint king standing in the front covered the area that was thousands of square feet. He was dazed to notice that black shadow as he showed up.

Who was able to approach him without the slightest indication?

“Be careful... Everyone...”

The black shadow got right behind him before the mind power saint king tried to notify everyone, and then, a trace of sharp sword Qi dashed toward his head.

He was a great being who had been through countless battles, so he was fast enough to trigger a protection rune, forming a thick shield shadow behind his back.

Bang!

The iron sword penetrated the shadow and penetrated the head of the mind power saint king, and the tip of the sword poked through his forehead.

“How is that possible...? The golden light shield rune didn’t stop it...”

Bang!

The mind power saint king fell to the ground.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The black shadow shook his body as if he was dividing himself into dozens of shapes, rushing at the fourteen fairy saint kings. He then wielded sword Gang, stabbing, picking, and slaying.

When the black shadow formed a sole body again, there was nothing but corpses on the ground.

Within less than three breaths of time, all fifteen saint kings had been killed.

The saint kings from Heaven Field who looked to this direction all held their breath, as they felt that the God of Death had arrived, terrifying them.

Zhang Ruochen, who was sitting in the Golden Dragon Carriage, looked toward that black shadow and mumbled, “Le’s sword way has been perfected. Even I can’t guarantee that I could ward it off without the power of space and time. It’s the sword way used for killing...”

Le took a look at Zhang Ruochen, then he vanished.

When he showed up again, another saint king who was several miles away was killed by his sword.

Meanwhile, a black oval with a diameter of almost ten thousand feet showed up above the island.

Han Qiu was standing at the center of the black oval. Her body was lithe and graceful, and her long hair was waving in the wind. She condensed the darkness power in her body into thin black threads, letting them all out.

The saint kings from Heaven Field who had been killed all stood up like puppets, trying to attack the saint kings from Heaven Field who were still alive.

The monks from Kunlun's Field were thrilled to find out that there were other great beings coming to help them. Their confidence was boosted.

“Controlling the ghosts... Is she a monk who practices the Way of Darkness?”

Shang Ziyan squinted his eyes and wielded a Five-color Merit Tablet.

The five-color light gushed out, covering the six ninth-step saint kings who were encircling Shang Ziyan. And then, an invisible force suppressed them, terrifying all of them.

“It's the power of merits. Retreat.”

“What a powerful youngster. He's just a seventh-step saint king, yet it's so difficult to fight him.”

Even the six ninth-step saint kings couldn't confront Shang Ziyan after he wielded the Five-color Merit Tablet.

They immediately drew back, trying to get as far away from the Five-color Merit Tablet as possible, yet Shang Ziyan intended to kill them. He threw the giant tablet toward two of the ninth-step saint kings.

Bang! Bang!

The two ninth-step saint kings both threw out dozens of saint weapons.

Unfortunately, those saint weapons were all shattered the second they touched the Five-color Merit Tablet, unable to withstand the tablet for even one second. In the end, the ninth-step saint kings exploded, turning into two clusters of flesh.

The other nine ninth-step saint kings kept stepping back, breaking into a cold sweat as they finally felt that death was approaching.

They were fighting a seventh-step saint king, yet they felt that they were fighting a supreme saint.

The woman in an ancient dress looked very glum, as she'd never expected Shang Ziyan to be so powerful that he could kill ninth-step saint kings so easily.

Shang Ziyan was even more impressive than Gods when they were young. Once he matured, he would definitely be one of the cornerstones of his era.

Shang Ziyan warned them, "I don't care who you are or why you're here. But I'm warning you for the last time; if you interfere again, you will die."

The voice was just as fierce and cold as Shang Ziyan looked, horrifying the woman in the palace dress.

But she was only horrified for an instant.

The color of Shang Ziyan's three-color armor formed a three-color cloud under his feet.

Shang Ziyan jumped and teleported himself to more than one hundred miles away with the three-color cloud, looking down at Zhang Ruochen while holding his crimson sword.

Zhang Ruochen had seriously injured Gong Ziyan and cut off both his hands and feet, trampling on him.

He pointed the Abyss Ancient Sword at Gong Ziyan's forehead, looked up at Shang Ziyan. "You've always been calm and tranquil. This is the first time you got emotional. I can tell that you're furious!"

Shang Ziyan tried to suppress his anger and said, "I have to admit that I always thought I overestimated you, but I realized

today that I still underestimated me. Let Gong Ziyang go, and I'll do anything you want."

"Let him go?" Zhang Ruochen said apathetically. "My senior brothers and sisters who were killed disagree. Bai Su disagrees, and my brothers from Sacred Central Empire disagree."

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

The Carnivorous Holy Flower, the Amazing Little Taoist, and Xie Chengzi all flew toward him, showing up behind Zhang Ruochen.

Meanwhile, the saint kings from Heaven Field all gathered toward Shang Ziyang, and soon, there were over one hundred of them. They not only formed attack formations, but also froze the space using their godly bones.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't intimidated at all.

Shang Ziyang was silent for a while, and he said, "You can't bring up those who are dead, and besides, you've killed many monks from Heaven Field yourself. You're smart enough to know that it's only a lose-lose."

"How about you let Gong Ziyang, Wang Xu, Yan Ni, and the saint kings from Heaven Field go? Then I'll let you and the monks from Kunlun's Field off the hook. What do you think?"

Zhang Ruochen looked around at the saint kings from Heaven Field and said, "I don't think they can stop me. Don't you know that I have all the bargaining chips? And you have to listen to me..."

Zhang Ruochen took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff and stuck it into Gong Ziyang's head.

"Ah!"

Gong Ziyang's body twitched and he yelled in agony.

Meanwhile, the evil spirit inside the bone staff cheered, absorbing the saint soul power of Gong Ziyang through the inscriptions on the staff.

The evil spirit could rival an eighth-step saint king after refining the second part of Amber Ash's soul mist.

As it absorbed the soul power of Gong Ziyan, the evil spirit became stronger and stronger. It became a pinnacle eighth-step saint king, sprinting toward ninth-step saint king.

"Damn it! You'll pay for this with your lives!" a saint king from Heaven Field yelled in anger.

Showing his white teeth, another dwarf saint king waved his axes and said, "You'll pay for this. How dare you kill the leader of Space Godly Palace?"

From forever ago, it was always the monks from Heaven Field bullying other monks. This was the first time that someone had killed one of their own in front of them, not to mention that Zhang Ruochen was refining his soul.

Only Shang Ziyan could still keep relatively calm, but he looked increasingly cold and ferocious.

Both Wang Xu and Yan Ni were being stepped on by the Carnivorous Holy Flower and Xie Chengzi, which intimidated Shnag Ziyan.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Now you know how it feels to see someone you love die."

After a while, Gong Ziyan's voice became dimmer and dimmer, until it was no more.

After absorbing Gong Ziyan's saint soul, the evil spirit had officially become a ninth-step saint king, and its forces became more vigorous. The evil Qi spread and covered more than half of the island, turning it into gloomy land.

Shang Ziyan is such an unfathomable and wicked person. He seemed to be Gong Ziyan's best friend and to talk about everything with him, but chances are, he's never treated Gong Ziyan as his friend. Zhang Ruochen found Shang Ziyan to be terrifying, as nobody could figure out what he was thinking.

Shang Ziyan spoke with a deep voice. "You've let it all out, haven't you? Don't you think it's a good time to talk about it with me? Do you really think you have all the bargaining

chips? The traps set up on this island are much more advanced than you think. If we really get into a full-blown fight, you and all the monks from Kunlun's Field will die.”

Boom!

After he'd finished speaking, a rumbling noise came from the sky above the island.

“What happened now?”

The saint kings from Heaven Field were all dazed, and they looked up at the sky.

The illusion formation covering the island had been cracked.

Dozens of cracks immediately spread, and gradually, the illusion disappeared, after which the real island showed.

Who had broken the illusion?

Chapter 1757 - Two Shang Ziyans

Chapter 1757: Two Shang Ziyans

Boom!

The illusion formation platform, which was a few dozen meters tall, went up in flames, and black smoke billowed from it as it fell down from the clouds.

Xiao Qianji and Yun Bing, the disciples of Phantom Princess[1], plunged from the platform into the endless lake below, creating a giant splash. Immediately after, two patches of blood began to spread in all directions on the lake's surface.

“The illusion formation has been defeated?”

“How could Phantom Princess not even protect the platform and her own disciples? Don't forget how powerful her spiritual power and sorcery are!”

“Could something have happened to Phantom Princess ?”

The Saint Kings[2] from the Heavenly Realm[3] became nervous.

Phantom Princess was one of the ten most powerful figures from the Heavenly Realm in the Celestial Domain of Truth[4]. Even the Saint Kings at the scene had to salute her when they saw her.

If even Phantom Princess was defeated, one could imagine how powerful the attacker was.

Today's battle turned out far more tragic than they had imagined.

It was nothing like Shang Ziyang's description—they supposedly could wipe out the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm and still incur no casualty. Instead, the continuous accidents that happened got many of them killed.

Even the sons of the deity and emperor who had died on the Battlefield of Merits were not that high in number.

Above the island, Maiden of a Thousand Stars and Red Wish Emissary stood against the wind on a black-gold battleship. They looked heroic and captivatingly beautiful like two goddesses from heaven.

“Phantom Princess’ escape spells trouble. What a shame!”
Maiden of a Thousand Stars sighed.

She had been too confident when she fought Phantom Princess, revealing her true form.

However, Phantom Princess was more powerful than she had imagined. Even though she deployed a talisman that was powerful enough to exterminate the Eight-step Saint King[5], she only managed to destroy the illusion formation platform but not kill Phantom Princess.

Phantom Princess might not have known Maiden of a Thousand Stars, but someone from the Heavenly Realm had seen Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ face.

Now, with Phantom Princess getting away, great troubles awaited Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Looking at Maiden of Thousand Stars standing farther ahead, Red Wish Emissary could not be more amazed by her spiritual power, which was at Level 58 right then. Her achievements in sorcery had far surpassed that of Red Wish Emissary.

Even her master, the Phantom Saint, might not be more powerful than her.

What surprised Red Wish Emissary further was how the woman seemed to possess an endless number of precious articles, each of them beyond her reach.

Eight Pearls of Vanity, an illusory Death rune, and the talisman that she finally used, were valued over 100 million saint stones.

Not to mention, there was the out-of-this-world, black-gold battleship under their feet.

Who was she?

Much to Red Wish Emissary's surprise, Zhang Ruochen had invited the powerful woman with a possible mysterious background. She needed to reexamine her understanding of Zhang Ruochen—she could not offend her at the very least.

If she could befriend Zhang Ruochen, she would have something to fall back on in case the Kunlun Realm was destroyed.

Shang Ziyang could not see Maiden of a Thousand Stars and Red Wish Emissary, but her expression turned grave when she noticed the floating black-gold battleship. It had numerous inscriptions of the Supreme Saints[6] on it, and the battleship looked like a living thing—it breathed and exhaled the Saint Qi of heaven and earth.

A battleship of that nature was uncommon. Its combat strength probably reached the level of a Supreme Saint. Of course, the probability was low because everything of the Supreme-Saint level would be sealed off upon entering the Celestial Domain of Truth.

“Zhang Ruochen, I have helped you defeat the illusion formation. As for saving yourself from Shang Ziyang, you are on your own now!”

After she communicated through telepathy, Maiden of a Thousand Stars flew the black-gold battleship and disappeared into the horizon faster than a Nine-step Saint King.

Since Phantom Princess had fled, Maiden of a Thousand Stars needed to return to make up an alibi. The last thing she wanted was to get in trouble with the behemoth forces from the Heavenly Realm and drag the Thousand-Star Civilization along.

The cultivators all wondered who had defeated the illusion formation. Why would the person leave just like that?

Red Wish Emissary descended behind Zhang Ruochen in a stream of red light. Her sexy lips parted as she wanted to know who Maiden of a Thousand Stars was, but she choked back her words because it was not the right time to ask.

With the illusion formation gone, the actual Xumi Dojo finally revealed itself.

It was very close. Just over twenty miles ahead, there were plenty of temples and towering Buddha towers. The Buddha statue, which stood at one-thousand-feet-tall, was especially impressive.

Soothing singing in Sanskrit was coming from the hall even though there were no monks chanting in there.

“Go to Xumi Dojo,” Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu ordered almost in unison.

In response, the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm[7] instantly leaped toward Xumi Dojo.

As long as they entered the dojo and activated equality for all beings, they might be able to match the kings of the Heavenly Realm.

The key, however, was to find the previous article that Saint Monk Xumi had left behind.

A fleeting sense of disdain flashed across Shang Ziyang's eyes. With a wave of his hand, a large group of the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings advanced to pursue the cultivators from the Kunlun Realm.

Another brutal battle broke out.

A large swarm of dead souls intercepted those Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm, and all they could do was watch as the Kunlun Realm's cultivators approached Xumi Dojo.

“Few cultivators in the Heavenly Realm can attain the same achievement in the Path of Darkness[8] as you do.”

As Shang Ziyang drew his crimson sword and swung it toward the sky, a waterfall-like Sword Way Xuangang descended on Han Qiu, who was standing inside a dark sphere.

Han Qiu sensed the danger and summoned all the available dark forces.

Two intertwining dark air pillars shot out, increasing in intensity as they collided with the Sword Way Xuangang.

Yet, the moment both energies collided, the Sword Way Xuangang tore apart the two dark air columns and broke the dark sphere around Han Qiu as well.

“WTF?”

Han Qiu’s heart skipped a beat. As she tried to summon her dark escape technique, she discovered that her enemy’s power had locked and immobilized her.

Crash!

A purple beam shot up into the air from the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror in Awesome’s[9] hand, shattering Shang Ziyang’s sword energy.

Han Qiu was stunned. She bounced back and disappeared into the center of the dark sphere. She realized that she was no match for Shang Ziyang and the others at the moment.

After the dark force disappeared, all those dead souls dropped to the ground lifelessly.

The kings from the Heavenly Realm managed to free up their hands at last, and they shot out projectiles to attack the Kunlun Realm’s cultivators in the distance. But, with the help of a few Saint Kings from the Kunlun Realm, Luo Xu blocked the first wave of attacks using his Light Myriad Scroll.

Shang Ziyang’s gaze appeared resolute as if he had made a crucial decision. “Let’s do this!”

Taking the lead, he shot out a Five-colored Merits Stele toward the top of Awesome’s head before he struck it down.

Shang Ziyang could see that Awesome, the Little Taoist was the top fighter on Zhang Ruochen’s side. He held a badass weapon that made him almost invincible against the Supreme Saint.

As long as that thing was suppressed, dealing with Zhang Ruochen and the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm would be like a walk in the park.

Boom!

Awesome held up the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and summoned his most powerful energy. Unfortunately, that was

barely enough to withstand the Five-colored Merits Stele. “Not bad for a junior from a realm that’s one level below mine. He is able to bog me down,” he said to himself.

However, what happened subsequently shocked Awesome, the Little Taoist even more.

While Shang Ziyang stood on the Five-colored Merits Stele, a second “Shang Ziyang” came out of him, striking a crimson sword at Zhang Ruochen down below.

No, it was not the Shadow Clone technique because the level of energy released from both Shang Ziyangs was not reduced but equally powerful. It was extremely incredible.

Everyone at the scene was struck dumb.

Zhang Ruochen sucked through his teeth; he had previously seen the skill that Shang Ziyang was using.

In the past, Di Yi from the Black Market Excellence Hall had cultivated the Picture of Utmost Omen on the Demonstone Engraving. One of the secret cultivation techniques was to find a being that had the same talent as him and turn it into his own shadow.

That way, the shadow would have the same combat strength as the principal.

It was obvious that Shang Ziyang’s cultivation technique was just as bizarre as the Demonstone Engraving. It surely involved the integration of another being into his own body to turn it into a ghostly counterpart that had the level of strength as him.

The attack from Shang Ziyang came quickly and locked on to Zhang Ruochen.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current level of cultivation, he was definitely no match for Shang Ziyang. Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen had come prepared. He looked cool, calm, and collected.

“Rise!”

As Zhang Ruochen lifted his hands, a Violet Peak[10] rose into the air.

At the same time, the Yi Huang Bone Scepter turned into a giant black skeleton, which exhaled a black evil breath into the Violet Peak. With an endless supply of energy from the Bodhi Emperor's sarira[11], the evil spirit's strength could almost match that of a Nine-step Saint King.

Together with Zhang Ruochen, it raised the Violet Peak. Big changes occurred as dense purple patterns appeared on the mountain and a thick layer of purple fog emanated from its surface.

Boom!

The collision of the Violet Peak with the crimson sword produced a powerful shock wave that shook the entire island, sweeping up giant waves from the lake while the potent cultivation energy penetrated down to its depths.

The shock wave blew Shang Ziyang away, and he crash-landed several miles from his original position. He stared gravely at the Violet Peak above Zhang Ruochen.

Something seemed to strike Shang Ziyang because his eyes were filled with a scorching light. "This is it. This must be it. Zhang Ruochen has gotten his hands on the insanely precious thing that can make a Supreme Saint go insane. He is such a lucky bugger."

Boom!

The sound of a loud explosion came from the direction of Xumi Dojo.

A dozen of the Kunlun Realm's cultivators, who were approaching the dojo, were flung back and away. Two saints were blown to pieces while the other cultivators were badly wounded.

It turned out that Shang Ziyang already had a watertight plan in mind by rigging Xumi Dojo with explosives beforehand.

[1] Formerly translated as Illusion Princess, was a powerful illusion cultivation practitioner who had reached spiritual power level of 58.

[2] Rank of cultivator

- [3] Formerly translated as Heavenly Field. One of the realms of Celestial Court.
- [4] Formerly translated as Heavenly Domain of Truth. The region in which was under the influence of Fane of Truth (formerly translated as Truth Godly Palace).
- [5] Rank of cultivator; eight-step refers to the level within the rank.
- [6] Rank of cultivator
- [7] Formerly translated as Kunlun's Field. One of the realms of Celestial Court (formerly translated as Heaven World).
- [8] Formerly translated as Way of Darkness. A cultivation path.
- [9] Awesome, the Little Taoist, formerly translated as Amazing Little Taoist
- [10] Formerly translated as Purple Mountain. It was a weapon transformed from Violet Godly Stone (Purple Godly Stone).
- [11] Sarira of Bodhi Emperor (formerly translated as Buddha Emperor). MC was able to defeat others from rank higher than him with it.

Chapter 1758 - The Elites Fight Against Ziyan

Chapter 1758: The Elites Fight Against Ziyan

“That’s... a Dimensional Trap!”

Even though he was more than twenty miles away, Zhang Ruochen could still feel the powerful dimensional fluctuations.

Before he attacked Xumi Dojo, Zhang Ruochen had learned that cultivators who practiced the Path of Time and Path of Dimensions had studied the Dimensional Inscriptions, as well as the Mark of Time, which Saint Monk Xumi left behind.

They were either from the Heavenly Realm or were friendly with the Heavenly Realm, so they would naturally come to the Heavenly Realm’s aid.

Zhang Ruochen manipulated the Violet Peak and blasted it in a certain direction. Thick purple mist gushed out and collided with the sixteenth Divine Bone that held the dimension in place.

The Saint King who controlled the sixteenth Divine Bone was immediately sent flying as his saint garment was ripped apart, and he fell awkwardly on the ground.

A gaping hole appeared in the dimension that was formed by ninety-nine Divine Bones, and Zhang Ruochen, as well as the others, immediately rushed over.

While the Violet Peak’s power was overwhelming, it was particularly cumbersome. Even with help from Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit, Zhang Ruochen’s speed remained slow, and Shang Ziyan immediately caught up to him.

“If you want to rescue the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm, you will have to get past me first.”

Shang Ziyan held the hilt of his sword with both hands, and instantly, the crimson blade ignited with blinding flames.

Above the sword, even the clouds turned red and started to swirl.

It was a power that frightened the Saint Kings below.

Crashh!

The crimson blade came crashing in a downward arc, colliding once again with the Violet Peak and causing a powerful blast wave to ripple out.

The Saint Kings who were maintaining the Divine Bones were all blasted away.

The Violet Peak shook before it fell down in the direction of Zhang Ruochen and Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit.

“Is this Shang Ziyan's true power?”

Xie Chengzi and the Saint Devourer each radiated a blast of Saint Qi toward the Violet Peak, and the combined strength of four finally managed to resist Shang Ziyan's attack.

However, Shang Ziyan had stuck his crimson blade to the top of the Violet Peak, immobilizing Zhang Ruochen and the rest.

The next moment, a third “Shang Ziyan” walked out of his body.

The third Shang Ziyan was still in peak form and just as strong as the other two.

“How... are we supposed to fight?”

The Saint Devourer was taken aback before she smiled bitterly.

She had initially thought that Zhang Ruochen was overpowered enough. Besides, it was very difficult to meet a foe from the same realm who could take someone out with a single hit.

Yet, this Shang Ziyan was even more overpowered.

If the three Shang Ziyans struck at the same time in the same realm, Zhang Ruochen might not be able to win even with the power of Time and Space.

The third Shang Ziyan flew down and appeared opposite Zhang Ruochen. “I told you earlier that the trap here is much deeper than you think. Why didn’t you cherish the opportunity to negotiate when you were given it?”

“You are really strong, much stronger than I expected.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to remain as calm as possible, but in his heart, he cursed his lack of strength.

Shang Ziyan’s strength was something that Zhang Ruochen had only seen once among the trainees of his generation. But of course, the former’s training was just at a much higher level than his.

If only Zhang Ruochen’s training had reached the level of the Seven-step Saint King, then three Shang Ziyans might not be able to beat him.

“Sadly, there is no remedy for regret in this world.”

With a roar, Shang Ziyan stomped on the surface of the ground.

At once, frigid air gushed out and condensed into a Blizzard Dragon that charged straight at Zhang Ruochen and the others.

Before the Blizzard Dragon even got close, Zhang Ruochen, Saint Devourer, Xie Chengzi, and Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit were wrapped in a thick layer of frost.

“Where the hell has that a**hole Blackie disappeared to?” Zhang Ruochen was speechless in his heart.

That show-off, to think that he actually went missing at such a critical juncture.

Whoosh!

Just then, a figure appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen and the rest, blocking the attack. With a slash, an earth-shattering sword aura surged out and smashed the Blizzard Dragon into pieces.

The person was actually an elder Nine-step Saint King with an impressive sword technique, and he was now next to a lady in a court dress.

Shang Ziyan's gaze turned sullen before he looked back and saw the lady in the court dress, sitting on a palanquin. "How dare you ignore my warning?" he hissed.

The lady in the court dress smiled gently. "I had no choice. Someone wants me to protect Zhang Ruochen's life at all costs."

Six Nine-step Saint Kings stood at six points around the palanquin, and each formed a torrent of Saint Qi. Following that, an ancient mirror rose and slammed itself against Shang Ziyan.

The mirror hung up in the air like a blood sun.

Blood sprayed out from the mirror and soon turned the entire island into a sea of red mist.

The ancient mirror radiated energies so powerful that caused the cultivators from both the Heavenly Realm and the Kunlun Realm to temporarily stop and look over in shock.

"Is that the legendary Supreme Artifact, the Blood Mirror?" A Kunlun brother exclaimed.

There were many tales about the Blood Mirror. Eight hundred years ago, the Blood Empress, who was one of the Nine Emperors in the Kunlun Realm, swept across the world with the Blood Mirror in hand, and no one was a match for her.

Even when Emperor Qing and Emperor Ming worked together, they fell short.

After the fall of the Blood Empress, the Blood Mirror was lost within the Kunlun Realm.

The Nine-heavens Maiden gazed at the ancient mirror and shook her head. "That is not the real Blood Mirror. It is just an imitation but still quite powerful. There is no supreme power within the mirror, but it contains the great power of a Supreme Saint."

The ancient mirror, which was created by the six Nine-step Saint Kings, was very powerful. It caused an unprecedented gloominess to appear in Shang Ziyan's eyes as he materialized a silver tower.

The nearby kings from the Heavenly Realm unleashed their Saint Qi and infused the qi into the silver tower.

The exquisite small tower, which was originally just a couple of inches tall, suddenly transformed into a massive tower. It became several hundred feet tall and released a supreme force to ward off the ancient mirror.

The silver tower was called the Tower of a Thousand Temperings.

There were seven such towers, and when combined together, they would form a Supreme Artifact.

Obviously, Shang Ziyang only possessed one of the towers, and the power it unleashed was nowhere close to a true Supreme Artifact.

Despite that, with Shang Ziyang and nearly a hundred Saint Kings controlling the tower to deal with the Blood Mirror, they gained the upper hand easily.

All of a sudden, the battle turned into a standoff.

Shang Ziyang, who was still standing atop the Violet Peak, said, “Zhang Ruochen, is there any meaning to continue resisting? The cultivators from the Kunlun Realm are all useless and can never unravel the Dimensional Trap outside Xumi Dojo.”

“There are more than a hundred and eighty Saint Kings in the Heavenly Realm. Kill them, and they will fall apart, but once you are done with them, it will be your doom.”

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that Shang Ziyang was trying to provoke him, and he laughed. “You are underestimating the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm. The Kunlun Realm has talented folks, and the only thing holding them back is their insufficient cultivation. Once they grow, they will surely shine brightly!”

“In that case, keep your eyes wide open and watch how they are killed one by one. After all, the Kunlun Realm has already fallen and will never return to its former glory,” Shang Ziyang said.

...

“Shang Ziyang’s strength is quite something for him to take on three factions at the same time. If he had cultivated himself to the rank of a Nine-step Saint King, by the Supreme Saint, would anyone have been able to fight him?”

Many of the Kunlun Realm’s cultivators felt fear in their hearts because they had never seen such a terrifying foe before.

Luo Xu, The Nine-heavens Maiden, Li Qian were not thinking of the battle. Instead, they were trying to come up with countermeasures.

There was a Dimensional Trap before them and a large number of Saint King elites chasing after them. Now, they were caught in between.

“Use the Realm Seal to stabilize the dimension.”

One of the nine great Realm Bearers, Beigong Lan took out a Realm Seal and held it in his palm.

The Realm Seals were artifacts that had been tempered from many heavenly and earthly treasures collected by Empress Chi Yao. Within each seal was a rudimentary world.

The Realm Seals would then continue to grow alongside the Realm Bearers and absorb the paths, as well as precepts they cultivated, becoming stronger and stronger before eventually turning into Supreme Artifacts. There was a slight possibility that they would become divine artifacts too.

Empress Chi Yao had created the nine Realm Seals as nine ways of escape for the Kunlun Realm.

For such a mysterious and unpredictable piece of treasure, it naturally had the power to stabilize a dimension.

Friar Lidi stopped Beigong Lan and stared ahead as his eyes turned golden. “Wait, there are not only Dimensional Inscriptions here but also the Mark of Time. This is probably a formation set up by the Fane of Time’s disciples.”

Friar Lidi had cultivated the Bodhi Emperor’s golden body of the Buddha and had a divine body the level of a Supreme

Saint. Hence, his eyes were also, naturally, the eyes of a Supreme Saint.

All he needed to do was call upon his dharmic energies and infuse them into his eyes. Through the stimulation of the Supreme Saint precept ley lines in his eyes, he was able to see the Marks of Time.

“Zhang Ruochen and the rest are fighting desperately with Shang Ziyang. We must not hold them back. Even if there is a Mark of Time ahead of us, we can only advance and not retreat,” Luo Xu said solemnly.

“Perhaps, I could give it a try.”

Xue Wuyue stepped forth as he spread his hands apart, and the Brand of Time appeared on one hand while the Brand of Dimension appeared on the other.

Those two brands were given to him by Saint Monk Xumi.

Since Xue Wuyue had cultivated to the point of the Saint King rank, the power that exploded out from the two brands increased in strength.

A moment later, a series of explosions rang out from Xumi Dojo’s direction as all of the Dimensional Traps and the Mark of Time outside the dojo were destroyed. Xue Wuyue had completely exhausted his Saint Qi, and he fell to the ground.

Seeing the cultivators from the Kunlun Realm rush into Xumi Dojo, the expressions of the three Shang Ziyangs changed a little.

Taking advantage of Shang Ziyang’s momentary distraction, Zhang Ruochen pulled the Violet Peak back and turned it into a violet stone in his hand.

Before Shang Ziyang could swing his crimson blade, Zhang Ruochen ran across the place with the Saint Devourer, Xie Chengzi, and Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit. They moved to the top of the Five-colored Merits Stele while he launched an attack at one of the other Shang Ziyangs.

Boom!

That Shang Ziyang let out a cold snort as he extended his arms, and all of a sudden, a ring of scorching flames blasted out. Zhang Ruochen, Xie Chengzi, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit, and the Saint Devourer were all blown away as a result.

Taking advantage of the opportunity, Awesome, the Little Taoist used the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and blasted the Five-colored Merits Stele away. Escaping the trap, he joined Zhang Ruochen and the rest.

“Go.”

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen deployed the Great Dimensional Shift and took them away.

When they reappeared, they were already standing outside Xumi Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and saw the lady in the court dress. She snatched the ancient mirror and flew into the sky alone before she disappeared into the night.

The six Nine-step Saint Kings stayed behind to hold Shang Ziyang back.

“Who is she? Why is she helping me? And why did those Nine-Step Saint King elites obey her?”

Chapter 1759 - A Lotus

Chapter 1759: A Lotus

Not only had Xumi Dojo been breached, but Zhang Ruochen had managed to escape too. Shang Ziyang's anger exploded as he wiped out the six Nine-step Saint Kings.

Immediately after, the three figures reunited into one again.

It was just too shocking!

The island was dead silent because the cultivators from the Kunlun Realm and even the Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm all held their breath. They gaped at Shang Ziyang as if they had laid eyes on a god.

The Nine-Step Saint Kings were beings at the pinnacle, just right below the Supreme Saints. Yet, even with six of them joining forces, they barely lasted over a dozen bouts with Shang Ziyang.

“Shang Ziyang's cultivation should be the Way of the Three Corpses, which is on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank. The Way of the Three Corpses is one of the most difficult techniques to learn, and there are only a few who have managed to cultivate it. Shang Ziyang's comprehension and abilities are really extraordinary,” Zhang Ruochen whispered.

Shang Ziyang held his bloody crimson blade and rode on his Tri-colored Cloud, instantly crossing a distance of more than 20 miles before appearing outside Xumi Dojo and facing Zhang Ruochen.

The speed of his cloud was not much slower than Zhang Ruochen's Great Dimensional Shift.

Not long after, the Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm converged. Some were standing on the ground while some were flying, but all of them were oozing a murderous intent. On top of that, there were still three to four hundred of them.

Zhang Ruochen said. “In the Celestial Domain of Truth, most of the cultivators only know that Wang Xu cultivated the Path of Flowing Light. Few know that your cultivation of the Path of Flowing Light far surpasses Wang Xu’s. Amazing, simply amazing.”

The Path of Flowing Light was the fastest speed-type Saint Path. If cultivated to its apex, the cultivator could reach the speed of light, or even exceed it.

It was a Saint Path that was not much weaker than the Path of the Ancients.

Shang Ziyan replied, “The Path of the Flowing Light is just one of the three Saint Paths I have focused on.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and could already tell that Shang Ziyan did not just cultivate a single Saint Path. He had also cultivated a Saint Path of flames and another Saint Path of ice, with both being Supreme Saint Paths.

It could be said that he was the first multi-path cultivator Zhang Ruochen had met.

However, the three Saint Paths that Zhang Ruochen majored in were the Path of Time, the Path of Dimension, and the Path of Swordsmanship. Taking into consideration his future growth or the power of the Saint Paths, they were all above Shang Ziyan’s level.

“Xumi Dojo has been breached, and soon, Equality will be activated. Even if you still have an absolute advantage, the coming battle will only make your losses even more severe. Shang Ziyan, stop now and retreat!” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Stop now?”

Shang Ziyan shook his head.

The losses of the Heavenly Realm today were so severe that it was more than ten times the losses of the Kunlun Realm. Plus, more than half of the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings were still trapped in the temple. How could Shang Ziyan stop now?

Shang Ziyan could not afford to suffer this indignity, much less the Heavenly Realm.

“Do you think that Xumi Dojo only has Dimensional Traps and Time Arrays? Within the Dojo, there are more than twenty cultivators of time and dimensions. You are a heritor of time and space; you should understand how strong the powers of time and space are? With these powers, even if the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm were to rush in, they would only find death,” Shang Ziyan said.

“Are you that confident?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and added, “I will admit that you never underestimate your opponents when you do anything. You will use twice, three times, or even ten times the strength needed to crush your foes. Nevertheless, your foes are not as weak as you imagine them to be.”

Earlier on, Blackie had whispered to him that the cultivators of time and space in Xumi Dojo had become food in the abdomen of the Three-legged Corpse Eater.

That unreliable owl had finally done something reliable for once.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen so calm, Shang Ziyan’s gaze turned grim as he thought to himself. P

Perhaps he still has more tricks up his sleeve?

Whoosh!

The huge Buddha statue in the middle of Xumi Dojo suddenly bloomed in brilliant golden light.

Echoing Sanskrit chants came from beyond the Nine Heavens and purified the murderous aura on the island. As if afflicted by a mysterious force, the fighting spirit of all of the cultivators present became weaker and weaker.

“Cultivators of the Kunlun Realm, Equality has been activated.”

“How is this possible? We have set up so many killers, but it was still a failure in the end?”

...

There was no Saint King from the Heavenly Realm who was not angry.

All of their hatred was directed at Zhang Ruochen. If it had not been for him, the cultivators from the Kunlun Realm would have been wiped out long ago, and they would have been able to obtain a lot of precious cultivation techniques as well as high-level saint abilities.

No matter how refined Shang Ziyan's upbringing was, the gaze in his eyes was still extremely cold.

Although the situation had deteriorated to such a point, Shang Ziyan was still unwilling to pull back. He wanted to step into Xumi Dojo, take Zhang Ruochen's head, and destroy the Kunlun Realm.

Yet, the Saint Kings behind him were lacking the fighting spirit.

The Heavenly Realm had suffered unprecedented setbacks today, and although they still had an absolute advantage, their morale was at rock bottom. On the other hand, the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm appeared as though they welcomed death, and they were obviously prepared to fight to the death to protect Xumi Dojo.

Shang Ziyan was now caught in a dilemma.

He could not attack or retreat.

Zhang Ruochen retreated to the center of Xumi Dojo and stood beneath a quaint shrine as he felt an overwhelming pressure engulf him. It suppressed his cultivation level to that of a Saint.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen found the green lotus seed in his arms emitting heat and shaking violently.

At the same time, the calm water in the lake rose higher and higher as it gradually turned milky white like the essence of liquid jade.

Whoosh!

The green lotus seed flew out of Zhang Ruochen's arms.

“Come back.”

Zhang Ruochen activated Spatial Grab to try to grab it from afar.

However, the green lotus seed exploded with a powerful force, shrugging off his attempt. It then flew straight toward the huge Buddha statue at the center of the dojo before it fell in between the Buddha’s brows.

A Six-step Saint King stood behind Shang Ziyan and whispered, “Master Ziyan, something major seems to be happening in Xumi Dojo. Should we take this opportunity to attack?”

“Do not act rashly. Zhang Ruochen is not that easy to deal with. Keep in mind that this could all be part of his trap. Stay behind. I will go and see what Zhang Ruochen is up to.”

“Master, are you going in alone?”

“Do not worry. If I want to leave, no one can keep me from leaving.”

Shang Ziyan sped off, seemingly turning into a ray of tri-colored light as he rushed into Xumi Dojo.

Inside the dojo, the expression on the faces of the Kunlun Realm’s cultivators changed as they activated their holy artifacts one after another.

The earlier scene where Shang Ziyan crossed two realms and his record of killing eight Nine-step Saint Kings were still vivid in their minds.

Even so, everyone was in the same state now, so how scary could Shang Ziyan be?

Chi Kunlun’s wounds healed up, and he was full of energy. As he grabbed his sacred blade, he loudly said, “I will fight him.”

“Brother, count me in.”

Chi Kongyue knew how terrifying Shang Ziyan was, so she was prepared to join forces with Chi Kunlun.

Luo Xu, the Nine-heavens Maiden, Friar Lidi, and Princess Bai Li were even more aware of Shang Ziyan’s power than the

Chi Siblings. In that dojo, anyone who faced Shang Ziyan head-on would undoubtedly perish.

In spite of that, none of them were weak, and if they attacked together, no matter how strong Shang Ziyan was, he would probably need to retreat.

At that moment, they saw a figure covered in smoldering flames intercept Shang Ziyan.

“It’s Zhang Ruochen.”

“Sh*t, Zhang Ruochen is definitely not a match for Shang Ziyan. Everyone, hurry up and help Zhang Ruochen.”

...

Just as the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm were about to rush forward, Luo Xu stopped them and said, “Do not act rashly. The elites of the Heavenly Realm are still eyeing us outside the dojo, and they could strike at any time. Zhang Ruochen is not that weak. Now that they are of equal rank, it is not impossible for him to fight Shang Ziyan.”

“Everyone, stay and defend the dojo, and obey Luo Xu’s command. I will go and help Zhang Ruochen.” The Nine-heavens Maiden grabbed the Heaven’s Sear Blade and rushed forward.

“I am coming too.”

Qing Xiao’s wounds had healed, so he followed The Nine-heavens Maiden.

Before both of them could even reach the battlefield, they saw blinding flames surge out and sweep over them in a terrifying energy storm.

The Nine-heavens Maiden quickly took out the Sacred Confucian Tome and protected herself, as well as Qing Xiao. She simultaneously looked ahead with her phoenix eyes.

At the heart of the flames, Zhang Ruochen stood in a lunging stance as he ignited the power of the Fire God’s Gauntlet and collided with Shang Ziyan’s crimson blade.

The two of them stood in a stalemate for a moment before they flew back at the same time.

Shang Ziyang was pushed all the way out of the dojo before he finally managed to neutralize the powerful force and get a hold of his footing.

Zhang Ruochen was pushed back till he was in front of The Nine-heavens Maiden and Qing Xiao. With the help of the Sacred Confucian Tome, he slowly came to a stop, and there were massive crater-like footprints ahead of him.

Their blows had been evenly matched, but neither Shang Ziyang nor Zhang Ruochen split into three or activate the power of time and space respectively.

The cultivators of both the Heavenly and Kunlun Realms were all stunned. None of them expected that Shang Ziyang, who had been smashing boundaries in his fighting, would be repelled by Zhang Ruochen when they actually fought on the same plane.

“It looks like Master Ziyang has met his match.”

“Zhang Ruochen is so powerful, and it seems impossible to retake Xumi Dojo today.”

Out of nowhere, the green lotus inlaid between the brows of the Buddha statue released a green light that illuminated Heaven and Earth. A significant amount of life energy poured into the Buddha statue and traveled through the statue into the ground.

Green lotus leaves began to grow on the white lake surface.

Following that, green grass and vibrant flowers grew all across the island, which had been reduced to scorched earth by the fighting.

Dense silver roots grew from the soil under the Buddha statue and spread upwards, converging at the top of the Buddha's head. Immediately, a large number of emerald-like lotus leaves grew from the tip of the roots, and they were radiantly green.

Rustle...

In the middle of the lotus leaves, a white lotus slowly bloomed.

The lotus flower radiated light akin to a magic lamp and illuminated night into day. The light extended even farther, and it did not take long for the entire land to be filled with light.

All of the present cultivators were astonished.

Zhang Ruochen was the first to react as he used the Great Dimensional Shift and reappeared at the top of the Buddha statue, grabbing the lotus. If he was not wrong, the lotus should be the treasure left behind by Saint Monk Xumi.

Just as he grabbed the lotus, though, his expression changed.

Chapter 1760 - A Blessing in Disguise

Chapter 1760: A Blessing in Disguise

The lotus was comparable to a powerful vortex.

The Saint Qi in Zhang Ruochen's body rushed uncontrollably out of his pores and were consumed by the lotus flower.

"How is this possible?"

Zhang Ruochen unleashed his full strength, trying to break free from the vortex. Yet, the lotus' devouring force grew even stronger and basically held him down. He was unable to pull his fingers away.

A moment later, all of Zhang Ruochen's Saint Qi had been absorbed.

He thought that the lotus would stop there, but to Zhang Ruochen's despair, it did not. Instead, it began to absorb his blood, spiritual strength, Saint Soul, and Saint Precepts.

"I have survived so many life-and-death battles, I will not end up being nutrients... for a lotus flower, will I?"

Zhang Ruochen only felt a bone-chilling pain strike him, and even his iron will did not make the pain easier to bear. His body trembled, and a terrible scream was about to come out of his mouth.

The Nine-heavens Maiden, Luo Xu, and the rest noticed that something was not right and immediately rushed to the statue's head.

However, when they were about a dozen feet away from Zhang Ruochen's position, the lotus shook slightly, and a white circle of light blasted out, sweeping all of them away like mosquitoes.

"Is this another trap set by the Heavenly Realm?"

“Look, Zhang Ruochen...”

Both the cultivators from the Kunlun Realm and Heavenly Realm looked up at the top of the Buddha’s head. Some were elated, some were saddened, while some were confused.

Above the Buddha’s head, next to the lotus.

Zhang Ruochen’s body became desiccated as if his body was just a layer of skin over his bones. Even his hair became white, and his body showed no signs of life.

The heir of Saint Monk Xumi had actually fallen inside Xumi Dojo, and such a ridiculous thing just had to happen in front of everyone.

The Saints Kings of the Heavenly Realm were ecstatic. They never expected such a thing to happen; it was as if the heavens were helping them.

“Zhang Ruochen died just like that?” Shang Ziyan found it unbelievable.

In the past, he had used, god knows, how many methods and lost how many elites but still failed to get rid of Zhang Ruochen. Yet, Zhang Ruochen was ultimately killed by a lotus.

A Six-step Saint King said, “Master Ziyan, since Zhang Ruochen is dead, we should use this opportunity to break into Xumi Dojo and rescue the Saint Kings who are being held captive in the temple. Then, we can destroy the Kunlun Realm.”

Shang Ziyan’s eyes were still fixed on the top of the Buddha statue, and he nodded gently. “Since the heavens are standing with us, naturally, this battle must play out.”

Soon after, the sound of battle roared to life.

The Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm rushed into Xumi Dojo continuously.

As sorrowful as the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm were, in the face of the menacing Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings, they had to leave the Buddha statue to join the battle.

Zhang Ruochen had a great influence over the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm.

Aside from a handful of cultivators, most of them admired Zhang Ruochen from the bottom of their hearts and felt that he was the Kunlun Realm's premier hero. Even after he left Kunlun, he still fought for them.

As long he was there, everyone was confident.

The moment he died in Xumi Dojo, the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm felt demoralized as if something had gone missing. It was like they had lost their pillar.

Within Xumi Dojo, the number of Kunlun cultivators were less than a hundred, and there were at least three to four hundred foes from the Heavenly Realm, with most of them in the Saint King rank. Even under Equality, their personal combat abilities were more than enough to overwhelm Kunlun.

The battle had just begun, but it already heralded a one-sided slaughter.

...

Zhang Ruochen's consciousness slowly came back to him.

A white world before him. He had no body and took the form of shapeless sentience that floated in the void.

"Even though I'm dead, my consciousness is still around. Have I turned into a ghost? No... a ghost should consist of a soul. Where is my soul?"

In fact, a ghost was the soul of a dead ordinary creature, the "battle soul" of a dead martial cultivator, or the "Saint Soul" of a dead Sainthood cultivator.

"Am I just a blob of consciousness?"

Zhang Ruochen was plagued with new doubts. His Saint Soul had already been absorbed by the lotus, so how had his consciousness been preserved?

One needs to know that only the gods could preserve fragments of their consciousness after they lost their corporeal

form, and their consciousness would wander between the heavens and Earth for eternity. Living beings could then communicate with the fragments of the gods' consciousness through rituals.

A god's fragments of consciousness could only have the power to affect the material world by absorbing blood, incense, and faith from the rituals.

Zhang Ruochen's consciousness constantly changed direction as he looked for an exit to return to Xumi Dojo. However, he noticed that the white world seemed to be endless, and no matter which direction he flew in, he could never reach the end.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt a fluctuation in his soul power.

The soul power was very familiar to him, and it was undoubtedly his own.

“Could a shred of my Saint Soul have been preserved and not been absorbed by the lotus?” Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed.

As long as a shred of his Saint Soul was preserved, no matter how weak it was, he could switch to ghost cultivation or take the body of another living being to return to the material world.

Zhang Ruochen's consciousness chased after that little shred of Saint Soul.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen was surprised to find more and more Saint Souls appear around him, and all of them were his.

Thousands of Saint Soul fragments converged together and formed a soul shadow.

Immediately after, a second soul shadow formed.

Then, a third...

A fourth...

A fifth...

A sixth...

Six of Zhang Ruochen's Saint Souls stood in a circle and looked exactly the same as him.

"This..."

Zhang Ruochen found the whole thing incomprehensible, so he slowly flew over as his consciousness gradually merged with the six Saint Souls. A while later, the two sides were perfectly aligned.

"Retract."

Just like that, the six Saint Souls were reunited.

Zhang Ruochen opened up his hands and felt a huge surge of Saint Soul power. It was over ten times stronger than his previous Saint Soul.

Moreover, in the vast white world, there were still shreds of Saint Souls flying in and merging into his soul form, strengthening his own Saint Soul.

"Once the six Saint Souls merge into one, it is probably no weaker than a Nine-step Saint King's Saint Soul. Even when divided into six, the strength of a single Saint Soul is comparable to an Eight-step Saint King. Is this perhaps a blessing in disguise?"

By the time the Saint Soul fully condensed, rays of spirit power flew over to him.

The strength of his spirit power soon reached Level 57, and it was still increasing. It only stopped after it reached the peak of Level 57.

It is important to note that Zhang Ruochen's previous spiritual power was only at the base of Level 57.

The spiritual power of a cultivator at the beginning of Level 57 could only enable him or her to confront weaker beings in the Five-step Saint King realm.

Conversely, a cultivator who was at the peak of Level 57 would be able to fight against the stronger creatures in the Six-step Saint King realm.

The difference in spiritual power between one and the other was not as simple as a mere multiplicative force. It was like between Heaven and Earth.

Following the integration of his Saint Soul and spiritual power, Zhang Ruochen finally understood something.

It turned out that he was now inside the lotus, and after his Saint Soul and spiritual power poured into the lotus, they merged with it as well as left their imprints in it.

There was a mysterious and unknown power within the lotus. When Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul and spiritual power wandered around inside the flower, they were strengthened by more than ten times.

The eyes of Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul saw through the white mist and noticed lotus petals at the edge of the world.

Each petal was like a gorgeous starry sky, and there were a large number of Saint Path Precepts on the petals.

Whoosh...

The densely packed Saint Path Precepts rushed out from the petals toward Zhang Ruochen and revolved around his Saint Soul as they increased in number.

Previously, Zhang Ruochen had cultivated a total of 190,000 precepts of the Saint Path.

At that moment, the number of precepts around him exceeded 250,000 and continued to increase.

"I need about three hundred thousand precepts to have a chance to reach the Five-step Saint King rank. Maybe, I'm going to break through within the lotus itself?" Zhang Ruochen looked forward to it.

There was no doubt that the lotus was an incredible treasure.

If someone were to closely observe the green lotus seed between the Buddha statue's brows, they would notice it changing. It slowly turned dark while all of the light converged on the lotus above the Buddha statue's head.

The plants around the huge island gradually withered while every ounce of life force was gathered in the root of the lotus.

The lotus leaves on the lake's surface began to lose their luster and turned yellow.

It was just that the cultivators from both the Heavenly and Kunlun Realms were fighting desperately, so no one noticed anything.

Chi Wansui, Heaven-devourer Dragon, Gai Tianjiao, as well as the rest, led the Kunlun Realm cultivators, who had withdrawn from the illusion formation, and they fought their way into the dojo. They could only hold back the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings when the two forces from the Kunlun Realm assembled.

However, the Heavenly Realm still had the absolute upper hand, so much so that the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm were being steadily pushed back.

Bam! Bam!!

Chi Wansui used a Realm Seal to confront Yutian, a powerful dragonkin of the Six-step Saint King realm. Now that their cultivation ranks had been suppressed to the same level, their flurry of exchanges was fierce and violent.

After dozens of blows, Chi Wansui's body was torn all over and bloodied. He then retreated to the bottom of the Buddha statue.

Opposite him, Yutian was even more severely wounded and vomiting blood.

However, Yutian immediately swallowed a sacred pill and escaped to the back to heal his wounds as two other Heavenly Realm Saint Kings charged toward Chi Wansui.

The same situation would constantly repeat within Xumi Dojo.

Once a Heavenly Realm Saint King was seriously injured, he or she would retreat to the rear to heal, but the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm had to fight on even when they were wounded. As such, they eventually perished on the battlefield.

A Kunlun Realm Saint's arms were cut off, and he pulled back to The Nine-heavens Maiden's side. "Your Highness, let us

withdraw from the dojo. If we fight on like this, everyone will die here,” he said in an imploring tone.

The Nine-heavens Maiden used her silver chef’s knife to directly split a Heavenly Realm Saint King in half. Droplets of blood sprayed onto her face as she said with a cold gaze, “We have not found the treasure that Saint Monk Xumi left behind. How can we leave just like that?”

“But...”

“No buts. Even if we withdraw from the dojo, we will eventually need to face them in the Kunlun Realm. When that time comes, where can we run to? We will only have some right to speak once we find Saint Monk Xumi’s treasure and bring it back to the Kunlun Realm. Otherwise, when the fighting starts, the Kunlun Realm’s fate will be determined by either the Infernal Court[1] or the Celestial Court. By then, would we still have the right to call ourselves the masters of the Kunlun Realm?”

Suddenly, The Nine-heavens Maiden noticed a powerful aura approaching.

Bam! Bam!!

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue both flew back in the distance. There was a neat sword mark on their abdomens, which almost cut them in two.

“Those two brats sure are strong. Their combined sword formation actually managed to block twenty-three of my strikes. Are you all truly Zhang Ruochen’s progenies?”

Shang Ziyuan carried his crimson blade and leisurely walked out.

[1] Previously translated as Hell

Chapter 1761 - Unleashing Great Power

Chapter 1761: Unleashing Great Power

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue's combat abilities could be described as outstanding. Each of them could take on a group within the same realm.

If they had not been so young and their understanding of Saint Arts, as well as Saint Paths, had not been far below that of Shang Ziyan, they would have been able to do more than just block twenty-three of his blows.

The crimson blade in Shang Ziyan's hand was called Bloodbairn. It was a special artifact of the gods.

The materials used to make the sword had been dug out from an ancient mine. It was a type of xeno-demonic iron that had its own intelligence and loved to drink blood.

The more blood the xeno-demonic iron absorbed, the stronger it got.

In that regard, it was quite similar to Empress Chi Yao's Blood Dropper sword, which was refined from a divine host.

The only difference was that the xeno-demonic iron loved the blood of newborn babies, hence, it was called Bloodbairn.

Bloodbairn meant the blood of a child.

The former wielder of Bloodbairn was a fallen demon god from the Heavenly Realm who used the blood of 88,888,000 newborn babies to bring the Bloodbairn to its current level.

Allegedly, the blood of 888,888,000 newborn babies was needed to refine Bloodbairn into a Supreme Saint artifact.

It was precisely due to Bloodbairn's special nature that it possessed pretty unique powers.

The sword's qi had seeped into Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue's bodies through their wounds, destroying their physical constitution.

Divine light radiated out of Chi Kunlun's body while five-colored light escaped from Chi Kongyue's body. Their respective True God's Body and Five-element Chaotic Body seemed close to being destroyed.

"If Zhang Ruochen were still alive, you two would probably still be useful. Since he is dead, I will send both of you to him as well!"

Shang Ziyan shook his head slightly and raised Bloodbairn...

"What?!"

Detecting a life force fluctuation, Shang Ziyan looked up at Zhang Ruochen and the lotus above the Buddha statue. Revealing a doubtful look, he muttered to himself, "Was I just seeing things?"

Swish!

Right then, The Nine-heavens Maiden shot out two red diamonds that flowed with countless inscriptions. She wrapped them around Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue, rescuing them.

Immediately after, she raised the Sacred Confucian Tome and summoned words the size of a dustpan before she flung them toward Shang Ziyan.

Shang Ziyan was very intrigued by The Nine-heavens Maiden and did not plan to kill her. He held Bloodbairn horizontally, then put his finger on the sword and flicked it gently.

Clang!

A sonorous reverberation echoed out.

Various mysterious and arcane ley lines appeared on the blade as it emitted crimson skyfire and faint divine power. The two then combined and transformed into thousands of phantom babies that clashed with the words from the Sacred Confucian Tome.

The cries of the babies and the din of the battle erupted across Xumi Dojo.

Whoosh!!

Shang Ziyan did not bother going into a stalemate with The Nine-heavens Maiden. Instead, his figure flickered and flew toward the head of the Buddha statue.

Numerous Heavenly Realm Saint Kings were being suppressed under Zhang Ruochen's silver tome, and they had to be rescued in any case.

Additionally, Shang Ziyan possessed acute, natural spiritual sense, and he could instinctively tell that the lotus was quite the treasure. Perhaps Zhang Ruochen had not been good enough, and as a result, he had failed to get the lotus' recognition and ended up desiccated.

Being the leader of the Fane of Merits, Shang Ziyan felt that his luck and aptitude would definitely make any treasure take the initiative to recognize him as the master.

After she shattered those baby phantoms, The Nine-heavens Maiden raised her snow-white head and looked up in disbelief. "Why did the lotus not reject Shang Ziyan? Could it be that... it was born just for Shang Ziyan to pick it up? How could Shang Ziyan's luck be so great?"

Whoosh...

As Shang Ziyan approached the lotus, the silver roots around the Buddha statue glowed even brighter, and the silver light flowed into the flower.

Seeing that, the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings became excited.

"The lotus' radiance is glorious. It must recognize Master Ziyan as its master."

“The divine treasure of Heaven and Earth can only be taken by a true Prince of Heaven. Zhang Ruochen did not know his own limits and foolishly tried to take it just like that, dooming himself in the end.”

“For the lotus to illuminate across thousands of miles, it must be a treasure of Heaven and Earth.”

...

All of a sudden, there was a change.

The blinding brilliance of the lotus rushed into Zhang Ruochen’s body abruptly.

His originally shriveled body, which looked like a withered tree in spring, quickly glowed with vitality as his skin swelled and his white hair became black again.

Radiance was restored to Zhang Ruochen’s body, and it burst with powerful qi, illuminating Xumi Dojo entirely.

Shang Ziyan was obviously taken aback. He immediately gave up on the lotus as he shifted his target and focused his Saint Qi into Bloodbairn. Releasing a dazzling crimson flash from his sword, he slashed it toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes regained life as he raised his arm to perform a palm strike.

While he moved his palm, the power of the Fire God’s Bracers, as well as the Fire God’s Gauntlet, overflowed and collided with Bloodbairn.

Clang!

Sparks flew, and powerful energies blasted outward.

Shang Ziyan was sent flying back, and he crashed into the ground, forming a massive crater in his wake.

On top of the Buddha statue, Zhang Ruochen’s body just shook a little before he stabilized himself.

Zhang Ruochen looked at his palm and muttered to himself, “My blood has also circulated in the lotus. Now that it has returned to my body, it seems like my physical strength has increased by a huge margin.”

The Saint Path Precepts had already flowed back into his sea of qi, turning it into a heavenly stream. Meanwhile, his number of precepts had increased to 430,000, which more than doubled.

The growth in figures was secondary. The most important thing was that the Precepts of Time and Dimensions were now close to five thousand in number.

One needed to remember that the Path of Time and the Path of Dimensions were extremely difficult to master. In the past, Zhang Ruochen had spent who knows how much time and effort to only master about two hundred paths.

It was precisely because the number of Time and Space Precepts had just been too small that Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had not been progressing quickly.

With the help of the lotus, the situation had been greatly improved.

“My cultivation should have reached the realm of the Five-step Saint King and should not be too far from the Six-step Saint King.” The corners of Zhang Ruochen's mouth curled up slightly.

The number of Saint Path Precepts needed for a Four-step Saint King was about a hundred thousand.

The number of Saint Path Precepts needed for a Five-step Saint King was about three-hundred thousand.

The number of Saint Path Precepts needed for a Six-step Saint King was about five-hundred thousand.

As for a Seven-step Saint King, the requirement was even higher. At least a million Saint Path Precepts were needed to even have a possibility to reach that rank.

All of the cultivators in Xumi Dojo had their eyes on the figure above the Buddha statue, and everyone was shocked.

A dead person came to life again?

Shang Ziyan stood at the bottom of the dust-strewn crater and frowned. His sword hand was trembling lightly, and all five of his fingers were extremely hurt.

In the exchange earlier, he had fallen into an absolute disadvantage.

Zhang Ruochen, who had returned from the dead, was far more powerful than before.

“Perhaps, I will only have the chance to defeat him if I use all Three Corpses,” Shang Ziyang said to himself.

Shang Ziyang’s Way of the Three Corpses had been cultivated into three separate bodies. The Cardinal Corpse was in charge of the Five-colored Merits Stele, the Flame Corpse was in charge of wielding Bloodbairn, and the Frost Corpse was in charge of the Tower of a Thousand Temperings respectively.

“That lotus flower must really be a world treasure.”

Both the Cardinal Corpse and the Frost Corpse rushed to the Flame Corpse’s side.

Three Shang Ziyangs attacked Zhang Ruochen as he concurrently tried to seize the lotus atop the Buddha statue.

Blackie and Awesome had been fighting with the Cardinal Corpse, while Xue Wuyue and Friar Lidi had been clashing with the Frost Corpse. They were still far away and could not help Zhang Ruochen in time.

Beneath the Buddha statue, The Nine-heavens Maiden raised the Sacred Confucian Tome, and millions of words flew out of its pages.

However, those words were instantly destroyed by the Five-colored Merits Stele, Tower of a Thousand Temperings, and Bloodbairn.

Seeing that the three powerful attacks were about to hit him, Zhang Ruochen calmly leaned forward and took the lotus flower as he concentrated his Saint Qi and Precepts of Dimensions into the lotus.

Then, a brilliant light blasted out from the twelve lotus petals while Precepts of Dimensions flew out alongside the light and onto the ground.

Within Xumi Dojo, the Inscription of Dimensions left behind by Saint Monk Xumi all emerged, both on the ground and in

the air like an interwoven spiderweb.

Through the lotus, Zhang Ruochen could control the Inscription of Dimensions.

“Stop,” Zhang Ruochen spat.

At that instant, the space inside Xumi Dojo froze. The Five-colored Merits Stele, the Tower of a Thousand Temperings, and Bloodbairn lost their momentum and stopped in midair, barely a few feet away from Zhang Ruochen.

“Return.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his palm and formed a Dimensional Storm that turned into a circular Qi wave. It blasted the Five-colored Merits Stele, the Tower of a Thousand Temperings, and Bloodbairn back.

Boom!!!

Shang Ziyang's Cardinal, Flame, and Frost Corpses flared out in a flash of light, avoiding the counterattack.

Unfortunately, the Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm did not have such luck, and more than a dozen were instantly killed by the attack, while many more were wounded.

“Your reaction sure is fast, but let us see if you are fast enough for this,” Zhang Ruochen quipped.

A dazzling light once again came from the lotus.

The dimension within Xumi Dojo shuddered as Dimensional Vortexes appeared one after another.

Shang Ziyang's expression changed greatly as he roared, “Saint Kings, retreat from Xumi Dojo immediately!”

The Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings were not fools. All of them could see that Zhang Ruochen had mastered the lotus and could manipulate the Inscription of Dimensions in the dojo. He was literally invincible now.

Just as they were making their way out of the dojo, dimensional rifts begin blasting out from the vortex.

Swish!

Each dimensional rift was only the size of a palm, but there were legions of them.

The sound of tearing and screams rang across the whole dojo.

In the span of just one breath, hundreds of the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings fell dead, turning the sacred Buddhist dojo into a bloody slaughterhouse.

Shang Ziyan's Flame Corpse was hit by one of the rifts, and a bowl-sized hole appeared as his chest was ripped through.

The Frost Corpse was hit by three of the rifts, and his head was cut in half, spraying brain matter all over the place.

Only Shang Ziyan's Cardinal Corpse was intact.

The Tri-colored Brigandine on his body and the Five-colored Merits Stele in his hand could resist the power of dimensions. Plus, the palm-sized rifts automatically closed long before they even reached him.

Shang Ziyan managed to shelter a group of Heavenly Realm Saint Kings and escape from Xumi Dojo because of the Five-colored Merits Stele's power.

Looking at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing atop the Buddha statue in the distance, even a Saint King would tremble in fear. They would not dare to step into Xumi Dojo again even if their lives were on the line.

Chapter 1762 - The Gift of the Jade Swallow Pendant

Chapter 1762: The Gift of the Jade Swallow Pendant

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Inside Xumi Dojo, the Saints of the Kunlun Realm looked at the almost divine-like Zhang Ruochen, and they had a compulsion to kneel and bow before him.

Such a thought only ever came to mind when they met Empress Chi Yao.

At that moment, the name “Zhang Ruochen” was synonymous with invincibility.

By mastering the lotus, he could sweep every foe with just the flick of his fingers.

Shang Ziyang's Three Corpses merged into one and looked at the bodies of the dead Saint Kings that littered the ground. His gaze extended to Zhang Ruochen, and suddenly, flames appeared in one eye while frost appeared in the other.

Ever since he was born, he had been the proud son of Heaven. Everything he did was perfect in comparison to any of his peers, and no one was better than him. How could he suffer such a massive defeat?

Resentment, hatred, shame... all kinds of emotions were intertwined in his heart.

In the end, Shang Ziyang's reason overcame his emotions, and he yelled, “Let's go.”

The remnants of the Heavenly Realm withdrew like the receding tide.

Soon after, Zhang Ruochen flew down from the top of the Buddha statue.

The Nine-heavens Maiden raised her Heaven's Sear Blade and shouted, "Now is the time to chase them down. Follow me and slay them all!"

"Wait," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Kunlun Realm cultivators did not rush out of Xumi Dojo but looked at Zhang Ruochen.

It was clear that Zhang Ruochen's influence on them had climbed above The Nine-heavens Maiden's.

"The Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings may have escaped, but they are still a lot stronger than all of you. With Equality, all of you were still no match for them. That is point number one," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Number two, the Kunlun Realm has suffered grievous casualties from this battle, and everyone is injured, so just stay behind and heal up. Do not get anyone else killed!"

"Number three, hundreds of the Heavenly Realm's proud scions have died in battle, and each and every one of them has a considerable background. All of them had the potential of a Saint, so this would undoubtedly cause another terrible upheaval.

"Although this has yet to cause a breaking gap in the Heavenly Realm's cultivation ranks, after such a major defeat, Shang Ziyang's days will not be pleasant once he is back there.

"Everyone should know that our main priority is to immediately lay out defensive formations around Xumi Dojo. The Heavenly Realm is extremely powerful in the Celestial Domain of Truth, and they can make a comeback at any time."

After they listened to Zhang Ruochen's words, the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm stared at the bodies on the ground and fell silent.

There were not only bodies of the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings but also bodies of the Kunlun Realm's cultivators.

At least half of the Kunlun Realm's Saints and Saint Kings died in the aftermath of the battle, and they should really be licking their wounds.

If the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings had not wanted to interrogate the Kunlun Realm's cultivators about their skills and Saint techniques, they would have long been wiped out.

The green lotus seed that Saint Monk Xumi left behind had allowed the cultivators to quickly heal their wounds, and without it, the Kunlun cultivators would have suffered far greater casualties.

Seeing that everyone had lost their will to fight, The Nine-heavens Maiden slowly put down her sword.

In actuality, she also found Zhang Ruochen's words reasonable. The Kunlun Realm had suffered a big blow, and if they were to fight on, they would simply drive themselves into the ground.

However, after seeing Wan Zhaoyi burn his own life force and perish before her, as well as seeing another Kunlun Realm cultivator lay in a pool of blood, the flames of hatred and fury in her heart could not be quelled.

Yet, in the end, the Kunlun Realm was not in any condition to clash head-on with the Heavenly Realm. Even if every other factor were to fall into place, it would still be impossible.

The gulf between their powers was just too great!

Zhang Ruochen walked to Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue's side and looked at the wound on their abdomen. Frowning, he turned his eyes to the Buddha statue's brows and reached out to pull the lotus back.

The lotus had completely lost its luster and withered.

With some force and a snap later, the lotus seed broke open and turned into pieces of lifeless fragments, falling to the ground.

“The life essence of the lotus seed has been transferred to the lotus. Does this flower have the power to heal injuries?”

As he thought of that, Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and pressed his palm against the lotus, mobilizing what little that remained of his Saint Qi and infusing the lotus with it. Immediately, a burst of life essence rose from the lotus and entered Chi Kunlun as well as Chi Kongyue's body.

A moment later, the slash wound on both Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue's abdomens were healed, and the dark energies left behind by Bloodbairn were also dispelled.

Luo Xu came to Zhang Ruochen's side with a solemn expression and said, "Zhang Ruochen, over a dozen Kunlun Saints have been seriously injured, and they are not getting better even after they have swallowed the healing sacred pills. Will you save them... What is happening?"

Out of the blue, Zhang Ruochen's body fell straight forward.

Right then, Chi Kongyue had just awoken and gotten to her feet. She was facing Zhang Ruochen, so she immediately stepped forward and held him up. "Zhang... Zhang... What's the matter?" she asked rather anxiously.

All of the Kunlun cultivators were taken aback.

They only noticed that Zhang Ruochen's brows were furrowed, and his face was quite pale. It also appeared that he had no strength left to even stand.

How could Zhang Ruochen—who had been killing left, right, and center to the point that he scared off the Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm—suddenly become so weak?

There was no such thing as power without a source in this world.

In fact, it was not an easy task, trying to control and manipulate the Inscription of Dimensions left behind by Saint Monk Xumi. It was particularly draining on one's Saint Qi.

But, it consumed even more spiritual power.

It was impossible to control an inscription left behind by a god so easily.

Even though he had only activated the Inscription of Dimensions for the length of a breath, it had drained Zhang

Ruochen's entire spiritual strength. Nevertheless, he held on fiercely and managed to scare the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings away.

Now, in order to save Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue, Zhang Ruochen had once again activated the lotus.

As a result, he could no longer hold on.

Saint Devourer, Blackie, Xie Chengzi, and Awesome rushed over immediately, fearing that Chi Kongyue would kill Zhang Ruochen. They snatched him from her hands before they took him into the ancient temple.

Saint Devourer stood outside the ancient temple and glanced down at the Kunlun cultivators as she said, "From now on, this temple is forbidden ground. Anyone who dares to set foot here will be killed, no questions asked."

Inside the temple, Blackie stretched out a paw and pressed it against Zhang Ruochen's wrist. "He merely overused his spiritual powers. Thank goodness," he said after he checked.

Whoosh...

Blackie's spiritual powers were extremely powerful, and he focused part of them into Zhang Ruochen's heart, infusing them into his Saint heart.

Awesome's gaze was fixed on the lotus in Zhang Ruochen's hands as he constantly licked his lips. After a moment of hesitation, he quietly stretched out his tiny hand, wanting to steal it.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen curled up his fingers tightly as he raised his arm and stared at Awesome. "What are you trying to do?"

Awesome's hand stopped in midair, and he was a little startled as he said, "Nothing. I just wanted to take a closer look at this wonderful treasure. I have no other thoughts. No, no, how can a cultivator have avaricious thoughts about such worldly items? Indeed not, indeed not."

While Awesome spoke, he turned around in a hurry and muttered in a whisper, "Why did he wake up so soon? My

movements are just too slow.”

Zhang Ruochen’s brain was still hurting a lot. His vision was dim, and his body was extremely weak, but he needed to force himself to stay conscious through sheer willpower. There were also some orders that he needed to give.

“A large number of Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm have fallen in this battle, and they must have left many precious treasures behind. Xie Chengzi, try to collect them immediately with Moyin. Remember, while collecting, try not to come into conflict with the Kunlun cultivators.”

Right after that, Zhang Ruochen pulled out a black soul sphere and handed it to Blackie. “Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit has absorbed Gong Ziyang’s Saint Soul, and his strength has greatly increased. He can challenge a Nine-step Saint King now. With the soul sphere I currently possess, I am afraid that I have only accounted for one-fifth of his soul power. I can just contain him at most, and it will no longer be possible to kill him.”

“Blackie, you and Awesome take this soul sphere and suppress it. If he dares to attempt an escape, kill him. You can take him back only if he voluntarily gives up half of his soul power.”

Blackie then asked, “If we all leave, who will tend to you? Your current state...”

“Do not worry. While a few of the Kunlun cultivators covet the lotus in my hand or even want to take my life, my senior and Princess Bai Li are here. They will ensure my safety,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie, Awesome, Xie Chengzi, and Saint Devourer all rushed out of the ancient temple, one after the other before they disappeared into the night.

Zhang Ruochen, who was now alone in the temple, lowered his head. It was not after a long while that he spoke. “Are you here to kill me?”

A petite figure leaped down from the top of the ancient temple and appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen, seemingly quite surprised. “How did you notice me? Are your spiritual powers not... spent?”

The petite figure was Chi Kongyue who shared at least a seventy-percent similarity to him.

Her figure cast a long shadow under the copper lamp, and her pretty face exuded a fair layer of brilliance. She held a Saint sword in her hand, which looked like a short sword made out of carved jade.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “You were probably wearing Buddhist beads refined by the Bodhi Emperor. The Buddhist beads can conceal the aura from your body, hence you can even hide from Blackie and the rest. However, the Bodhi Emperor’s Buddhist beads respond to each other.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his arm, revealing a string of ten Buddhist beads.

Chi Kongyue’s neck was covered with silver silk. When she lifted it, five round and immaculate Buddhist beads appeared in her hands. They had been hidden under her Saint robe.

Zhang Ruochen continued, “The Saint Qi within my body is almost gone, and even my spirit powers are almost spent. I am very weak now. You just need to deliver a single slash... to kill me...”

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen’s gaze zoned in on the five Buddhist beads around Chi Kongyue’s neck.

To be precise, he had zoned in on the jade pendant between the five Buddhist beads. It was a swallow-shaped pendant.

“The Jade Swallow Pendant!”

That jade pendant attracted Zhang Ruochen’s eyes like a magnet, and the look in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes became extremely complicated as he got to his feet in his weakened state.

Chi Kongyue was taken aback for a moment, and she asked, “How do you know that it is called the Jade Swallow Pendant?”

“Not only do I know that it is the Jade Swallow Pendant, but I also know that it comes in a pair.”

Zhang Ruochen walked to Chi Kongyue's side and clasped the pendant with his fingers as he smiled bitterly. His eyes were a little wet as if he was reminiscing about something.

In his mind, a playful teenage voice from eight hundred years ago rang out. "I gift you this Jade Swallow Pendant, and we shall never be separated until death takes us. Yaoyao, do not lose it. This pair of jade pendants have extraordinary origins. A pair for a pair, this is a token of our love!"

Immediately after, a young girl's voice echoed, "I shall give thee the Sword of Creation, and we shall be together forever, in life and death. Brother Chen, catch! The sword in your hand and mine were forged out of the Iron of Creation and made as a pair. Let us continue training. Perhaps by using these two swords, we may be able to enhance the power of the Yinyang Sword Formation."

Chapter 1763 - Father

Chapter 1763: Father

The memories were beautiful, but reality was cruel.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen snapped back from reminiscing and slowly let go of the Jade Swallow Pendant.

“Chi Yao, Chi Yao, it has been eight hundred years. Why would a cold-blooded and cruel woman like you still keep this by your side?” Zhang Ruochen clenched both of his hands tightly.

Within the pendant, Zhang Ruochen could perceive a large amount of Supreme Saint power, and on its surface, a touch of divine power.

It was Chi Yao’s power.

That meant, Chi Yao had the Jade Swallow Pendant on her for the past eight hundred years.

It was exactly due to her Supreme Saint power and divine power that the jade pendant could undergo such a change.

Chi Kongyue noticed that Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cloudy and uncertain. They were at times gentle, at times cold, and at times furious... Right then, Zhang Ruochen did not have the calmness he had when he faced the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings, and his emotional fluctuations were huge.

She stretched out her petite, fair hand and waved it in front of Zhang Ruochen as she softly asked, “What’s wrong with you?”

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes sharpened again. “Did Chi Yao give you this jade pendant?”

“The Empress is a god; how can you just call her by name?”

Chi Kongyue seemed to have a lot of respect for Empress Chi Yao and was a little dissatisfied with Zhang Ruochen’s attitude.

Zhang Ruochen snorted and turned around to sit back on the thin mattress. “If you want to kill me, better do it now. Once half of my Saint Qi is restored, you will never have another shot again,” he said.

Zhang Ruochen started to fiddle with his Ring of Dimensions and pulled out a small bottle that was carved out of sacred jade. He sniffed its contents as he opened it and drank the liquid in one go.

It was marrow that had been refined out of an Eight-order beast’s bone marrow, and it could quickly replenish a cultivator’s spiritual power.

It was one of the spoils he had found in an Elven Spirit Saint’s satchel.

Chi Kongyue did not pull out her sword as she carefully looked at Zhang Ruochen’s handsome with her pearl-like eyes. “Is this your true appearance, where you are not using the Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification?” She grinned.

“That’s right,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Why...”

Chi Kongyue blurted something out but immediately stopped.

Zhang Ruochen could hear her heartbeat speed up by a lot, so he asked, “You want to ask me why we look so alike?”

“Yes.” Chi Kongyue nodded.

“You would be better off asking the Empress that question, not me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Chi Kongyue took a few steps forward and approached Zhang Ruochen as she said, “In that case, why have you saved me and my brother so many times? If I am not mistaken, when you first activated the power of the lotus to kill the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings, you had already seriously depleted your spiritual power. Why did you save two enemies even under such circumstances?”

Zhang Ruochen did not expect Chi Kongyue to be such an observant person at such a young age.

“You really want to know the answer?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chi Kongyue hesitated, as though she was worried and afraid of something. A moment later, her gaze became firm. “Please tell me.”

“Come over.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gradually softened a lot.

For some reason, Chi Kongyue actually approached him slowly, but she still held her Saint sword and stopped when she was three steps away from Zhang Ruochen.

“Sit.”

Zhang Ruochen took a seat cushion and handed it to her.

Chi Kongyue sat across from Zhang Ruochen. Her face appeared respectful, her figure was petite, and her eyes were brilliant, but the sword in her hand was stained with blood.

She was just an eleven- or twelve-year-old girl, yet she had already taken up a sword to kill long ago.

Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh as he said, “Chi Yao gave you the Jade Swallow Pendant, yes?”

“Yes.”

“There is another one with Brother as well,” Chi Kongyue responded softly.

“Do you know how to use the power of the Jade Swallow Pendant?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chi Kongyue nodded before she shook her head. “I only know that as long as I wear it, the Saint Qi from both the heavens and the earth will converge in my body. It can then help me to concentrate and calm my mind when I practice my cultivation. On top of that, it can nourish me and strengthen my Saint Soul. In short, its wondrous uses are endless.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “It looks like Chi Yao has not told you how to use the Jade Swallow Pendant’s true power.”

Whoosh!!

With a flick of his finger, a complex inscription landed on the Jade Swallow Pendant.

The inscription was like a key, and it opened an invisible door.

Suddenly, dazzling light burst out from the Jade Swallow Pendant, and the ancient, as well as powerful aura, enveloped Chi Kongyue.

“This power is sublime... Is this the power of a god?” Chi Kongyue was quite surprised.

The Jade Swallow Pendant was a treasure that had been handed down from the Zhang Clan’s ancestors. In the past, Zhang Ruochen only knew that the jade pendant contained great power, but he did not understand what kind of power it was.

Now that Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level had reached the realm of a Saint King, and he had drawn out that power, he finally understood what it was.

The mysterious power within the jade pendant was indeed the power of a god.

Could... the Jade Swallow Pendant be something left behind by the Zhang Clan’s ancestor, “The Immovable Wisdom King”?

“Your spiritual powers are already imprinted on the Jade Swallow Pendant, right?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Yes, how did you know?” Chi Kongyue asked.

Zhang Ruochen did not answer her and continued instead, “By drawing out the power of the jade pendant, you can form a very potent defensive power, and that is the orb of light around you. The more power you draw out, the stronger your defenses. Of course, if you use your spiritual powers to control it, you can borrow the Jade Swallow Pendant’s power to create a burst of speed.”

“Really?”

Chi Kongyue closed her eyes and released her spiritual power.

Whoosh.

Her body then disappeared from the ancient temple in a white flash.

Such speed was beyond reach even for the average Saint King.

Chi Kongyue tried it out for a good half an hour before she returned to the temple. Yet, she was still doubtful and somewhat in disbelief.

Bear in mind that she was only a Saint from the Xuanhuang Realm, and with that burst of speed earlier, even a One-step Saint King might not be able to catch up to her.

Zhang Ruochen threw out a sacred jade vial and said, "Catch."

Chi Kongyue took the vial and curiously asked, "What... is this?"

Out of nowhere, everything before her spun as she felt dizzy. Her chest pounded, and she appeared very shaky.

"Using the power of the Jade Swallow Pendant consumes a lot of spiritual power. Within the vial is the marrow of the Eight-order beast. It can quickly restore your spiritual power," Zhang Ruochen said.

Chi Kongyue drank a drop and quickly sat on the ground to readjust her breathing.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. Although Chi Kongyue was still young, she did not panic at all when she ran into trouble. With her current mental strength, she could indeed just bear the power that was contained in a single drop of Eight-order beast marrow.

Her judgment was extremely on point.

When Chi Kongyue opened her eyes again, Zhang Ruochen's spiritual powers had recovered somewhat, and he looked much better now.

"Do you want to learn the inscription that unlocks the power of the Jade Swallow Pendant?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chi Kongyue looked at Zhang Ruochen's eyes and noticed that they were somewhat different. She then curled her lips up and asked, "Will you teach me?"

“As long as you want to learn...”

“I want to learn.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at her deeply and took out two inscription pens, handing one of them to her.

Chi Kongyue put her sacred sword away and grabbed the pen as she squatted down next to Zhang Ruochen like a docile kitten.

Under the light, whenever Zhang Ruochen drew a stroke, she followed.

The scene was extremely heartwarming. It was like a little girl learning how to write from her father. She was very attentive, and from time to time, she would look up and secretly stare at Zhang Ruochen’s serious eyes.

It was a very complicated inscription pattern, and an average cultivator might not even be able to comprehend it even after three months of learning.

However, Chi Kongyue’s learning ability was amazing, and she only took half an hour to fully grasp it.

Looking at the inscription that Chi Kongyue drew on the Jade Swallow Pendant, Zhang Ruochen broke into a satisfied smile. He could not help but stretch his hand out and pat her on the head. “Very good.”

Chi Kongyue did not avoid it, and after she hesitated for a long time, she finally said, “The Empress said that the Jade Swallow Pendant is a relic my father left behind.”

Zhang Ruochen’s hand abruptly froze as he said, “She is not wrong in saying that.”

“Are you... my father?”

Chi Kongyue’s lips trembled as she waited for Zhang Ruochen’s answer.

She was both in anticipation and somewhat fearful.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen would rather have Chi Kongyue treat him as an enemy than let her know the truth.

It was because the truth was far crueler and would only make her suffer even more.

Such suffering should only be borne by him alone.

However, since Chi Kongyue was so clever and had guessed the truth, Zhang Ruochen did not intend to hide the matter from her anymore. “Kongyue is the name of a mountain outside Shengming City. Just by standing on top of the mountain, you can see all of the lights in the city. The view is endless, and you can see every mountain and river.” He smiled bitterly.

Zhang Ruochen did not deny it, so Chi Kongyue knew the answer.

After all, she was still a little girl. How could she control her emotions the same way as Zhang Ruochen? A layer of mist covered her big, bright eyes as teardrops fell to the ground nonstop, and her slender, petite body twitched gently.

She spread her arms open and hugged Zhang Ruochen’s waist tightly, crying, “I... I want to go... Sniff... I want to go to Mount Kongyue. Bring... Bring me...there, please... I want to see the lights on the many houses... I want to see the mountains and rivers...”

Zhang Ruochen strained to keep his emotions in check as a tinge of red appeared in his eyes. He reached out and gently stroked Chi Kongyue’s head.

“I will take you there. Once we are back in the Kunlun Realm, I will take you there,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Do not... lie, okay?”

Chi Kongyue raised her head and sobbed as she asked, “Why did the Empress lie to me? Why did she say that you were my enemy? Why did she say that you killed my parents? Why... Why?”

“Because she dared not tell you the truth,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“What truth? Who is my mother?” Chi Kongyue asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Now is not the time for you to learn such things. Of course, you can go and ask Chi Yao. Since she has the heart to lie to you, she would probably go even further.”

“I do not want to ask anyone else but you. You wouldn’t have the heart to lie to me... right, Father?!” The look in Chi Kongyue’s eyes was rather pitiful. It was as if she had suffered a huge grievance.

Seeing such a pitiful gaze and hearing her call him “father”, Zhang Ruochen’s emotions, which he had been holding back, completely gave way. “All right, I will tell you. But, not now. Just wait a little while longer... a little while longer...” he said as he smiled with teary eyes.

Chapter 1764 - Let Chi Yao Come and Get It Herself

Chapter 1764: Let Chi Yao Come and Get It Herself

Chi Kongyue wiped her tears away and said, "I'll go and get Big Brother."

"Don't."

Zhang Ruochen stopped her and said, "Do not let him know about this yet."

"Why?"

Chi Kongyue was puzzled but seemingly able to guess something as she immediately said, "Actually, he hates you so much only because he regards you as the enemy. If he knows the truth, his attitude toward you will definitely change."

"Then, what?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chi Kongyue said, "Then..."

Zhang Ruochen folded his hands and added, "Then, will both of you follow me, or will you stay with Chi Yao?"

Chi Kongyue hesitated.

She and Chi Kunlun had been brought up by Empress Chi Yao ever since she could remember. Although the empress was extremely strict with them, she cared for them in every possible way.

From a young age, they trained in the best techniques, as well as the most exquisite martial arts and Saint techniques. They also consumed the purest sacred pills and elixirs. Not to mention, she would often personally guide and instruct them on their cultivation.

Even the empress' direct disciples never got one-tenth of the treatment that the two of them received.

Chi Kongyue could truly feel the love, and it was definitely not fake.

It could be said that the empress was the person Chi Kongyue respected and trusted the most.

While the empress had lied to her, Chi Kongyue believed that there had to be something hidden within the lie. The fact that it was a huge secret was highly possible. The secret was probably the reason for Zhang Ruochen's unwillingness to tell her the truth now.

If it meant leaving the empress and leaving the Kunlun Realm with Zhang Ruochen, Chi Kongyue was not yet mentally prepared to do it.

Zhang Ruochen continued, "Since you are unwilling to leave with me, then what is the point of telling your brother about it? With his personality, if he continues to stay in the Kunlun Realm after he finds out that I am his father, who knows what will happen."

"No, it's not like that... It's not that I am unwilling to leave with you. It's just.. Father, can you give me some time?" Chi Kongyue said.

Zhang Ruochen could understand Chi Kongyue's feelings. She was just a child after all. It was difficult for her to suddenly leave with a stranger of a father. Furthermore, her father was the person she had hated as a nemesis for many years.

"Your brother's character is just too frank and direct. Besides, he is rather impulsive as well. It will be difficult to change things once he makes up his mind. Even if I tell him that I am his father, he will never believe it," Zhang Ruochen said.

Obviously, Chi Kongyue knew Chi Kunlun's personality the best. He was much more impulsive, naive, and rebellious than the person Zhang Ruochen had described—totally immature.

"Do you intend to keep hiding this from him?" Chi Kongyue asked.

"The truth always comes to light; it will never be hidden for too long."

“Both of you want to know the truth, so why would I not want to know as well?” Zhang Ruochen then said thoughtfully.

The ancient temple became quiet as Chi Kongyue and Zhang Ruochen began to contemplate.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen asked, “Do you have the Shenwu Mark of Time?”

“Yes.”

“How is your cultivation in the Path of Time?”

Chi Kongyue said. “The Empress once gave me a tome to cultivate the Path of Time, but since the Path of Time is just too arcane and full of countless variables, its requirements for spiritual power are rather high. With the current strength of my spiritual power and cultivation, I have only managed to learn a little.”

“Let me see that tome,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Without any hesitation, Chi Kongyue took out the tome and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

He flipped through the tome for a bit before he shook his head and returned the tome to her. “Well, for the Path of Time, aside from you, even I have only managed to scratch its surface. But I have mastered a set of swordsmanship techniques that will allow you to comprehend time through it. When the two are combined, their power is limitless. Do you want to learn it?”

Chi Kongyue’s eyes lit up, and she quickly nodded.

“For the next few days, I will stay in Xumi Dojo. I will teach you the Swordsmanship of Time in the evening,” Zhang Ruochen said.

After Chi Kongyue left, Zhang Ruochen finally let out a long sigh as a smile appeared on his face. It was gratifying with a touch of sadness.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen took out the lusterless lotus and held it in his hand as he mobilized his spiritual powers to inspect it.

The lotus was just too mysterious. It could, in just mere moments, strengthen Zhang Ruochen's cultivation, spiritual power, physical body, and Saint Soul by over ten times. He felt like he had been reborn.

If it could also strengthen other cultivators, Zhang Ruochen would be able to train a large number of powerful cultivators in a short period of time.

“What?!”

An unexpected look of surprise appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. “It really is a treasure of time and space! Incredible!”

After some investigation, Zhang Ruochen found out that the flow of time inside the lotus was twelve times slower than the flow of time outside.

Hence, a single year of cultivation within the lotus would only be one month outside.

It was much stronger than the Sacred Qiankun Wooden Picture Scroll.

Zhang Ruochen counted and noticed that there were twelve petals on the lotus in total. He wondered if there was a connection between the two.

If more petals grew on the lotus, would the ratio of time flow be greater?

Zhang Ruochen did not, however, find the reason why the lotus had greatly helped in improving his cultivation.

At the moment, the lotus was no different from any ordinary lotus. His spiritual power that had been infused into it had yet to show any growth.

Many Inscriptions of Dimensions were interwoven with the lotus petals, and there were numerous light spots that looked similar to the Mark of Time.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen had an idea, and he walked straight out of the dojo.

“Saint Monk Xumi left a lot of Inscriptions of Dimensions and Marks of Time in the dojo. Even the disciples of the Fane of

Time and the Fane of Dimension would come here to study and enlighten themselves. I should do so as well.”

In the battle with Gong Ziyang, Zhang Ruochen had understood the terrible power of time and space. With the mastery of just one of them, he had managed to easily kill enemies across the boundaries like it was child’s play.

Take Gong Ziyang for instance; his strength had become comparable to that of Nine-step Saint Kings after he had mastered the power of space.

Yet, with the ability to control time, even a Four-Step Saint King like Zhang Ruochen had been able to kill him.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen did not use the Mark of Time to cut off Gong Ziyang’s hundred-year lifeforce. It was no easy task, after all, to cross three realms to kill him.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen had mastered the power of time, so in the end, Gong Ziyang ended up dead instead of him.

In the night, some of the Kunlun cultivators were arranging defensive matrixes, some were cleaning the battlefield, while some were healing their wounds.

Zhang Ruochen walked around the dojo, squatting down at times to press the ground with his palm and study the Inscription of Dimensions on the ground. Other times, he would lift his finger and make a Mark of Time appear as he studied it carefully.

Whenever the Kunlun cultivators saw Zhang Ruochen, they would do the fist and palm salute with respectful and reverential expressions.

Obviously, the battle tonight had changed the attitude that a majority of the Kunlun cultivators had toward Zhang Ruochen, and they admired him from the bottom of their hearts.

As he walked, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the edge of Xumi Dojo, and a woman’s cry traveled into his ears from afar.

Looking over, Zhang Ruochen saw Wan Huayu and The Nine-heavens Maiden. They were stunning ladies with absolute

grace, and their beauty was well-known across the Kunlun Realm.

They had come from afar, and Wan Huayu was holding a wooden box with tears in her eyes.

Wan Zhaoyi had fallen in battle, and his godly form had been destroyed, so his body had been reduced to blood-colored sand mixed with soil. Wan Huayu used the wooden box and filled it with dirt as she prepared to bring it back to the Kunlun Realm, allowing Wan Zhaoyi to “return home”.

When they saw Zhang Ruochen, Wan Huayu and The Nine-heavens Maiden walked over.

Klop.

Wan Huayu knelt directly before Zhang Ruochen as she kowtowed to him and said in a cold voice, “I beg you to kill all of the Saint Kings held within the dojo... Kill them all... and leave none alive...”

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly stepped forward and helped her up. “My hatred is no less than yours, but this group has an influential background. If everyone behind them were to unite, even the Celestial Court would be shaken. I cannot kill them.”

“Are... you afraid?”

Wan Huayu was extremely disappointed, and her heart wailed in sorrow.

A look of contempt appeared in the eyes of The Nine-heavens Maiden as she said, “If you are afraid of death, hand them to me, and I will kill every one myself. I will bear all of the consequences.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “The number of Heavenly Realm Saint Kings who have died by my hand is already too many to count. Why would I be afraid of killing another group? I plan to hand them over to someone else to deal with them. After such a massive event, I cannot bear all of the consequences myself. Plus, how can she stay out of it?”

“Who are you planning to hand them to?” The Nine-heavens Maiden had a rough idea of what he was doing to do.

“That does not concern you!”

The Nine-heavens Maiden snorted and spat, “That temple belongs to me. Return it to me at once.”

“I will give it back to you if you can defeat me, but unfortunately for you, you are not my match even if I just use one hand,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual power and Saint Qi had mostly been restored, and he did not fear The Nine-heavens Maiden.

She ground her teeth with hatred because she really had the urge to fight Zhang Ruochen.

However, she recalled the terrifying sight of Zhang Ruochen using the lotus and killing more than a hundred Heavenly Realm Saint Kings in an instant. When that came to mind, she realized that she was definitely no match for Zhang Ruochen in Xumi Dojo, so she endured it.

“Zhang Ruochen, hand over the lotus!” The Nine-heavens Maiden widened her eyes and hissed angrily.

“Why?” he asked.

The Nine-heavens Maiden continued, “That lotus is a treasure left behind by Saint Monk Xumi for the Kunlun Realm. The Kunlun Realm has paid a huge price to take Xumi Dojo. You are not a cultivator of the Kunlun Realm, so what right do you have to take it? You need to understand one thing: you are just an outside help that the Kunlun Realm invited. Since the war is over now, you should hand it to me.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his hand slightly. Turning around, he spoke with a bitter smile as he shook his head and walked toward the dojo, appearing a little lonely. “If you want the lotus, ask Chi Yao to come and get it herself. If she really comes in person, I will give it to her.”

The Nine-heavens Maiden frowned as she realized that she had been overly aggressive earlier and had probably hurt Zhang Ruochen. She felt deep feelings of guilt in her heart, but to immediately catch up to him and apologize was not something she could do.

“That bastard sure is haughty. He actually asked the Empress to come and meet him.” The Nine-heavens Maiden bit her lip as she stomped the ground in a fit of anger.

Chapter 1765 - : The Wondrous Use of the Lotus

Chapter 1765: The Wondrous Use of the Lotus

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

As he walked into the dojo, Zhang Ruochen finally noticed that something was off.

He immediately stopped.

“This is...”

All of the plants in the dojo had withered, and the ground was full of dead branches as well as yellow leaves.

Even the huge island, where Xumi Dojo was located, was bereft of vitality. Everything had wilted as if something had sucked all of their life force away.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the huge Buddha statue and observed the withered vines around it. A look of realization suddenly took over his face as he smiled. “So, that’s why.”

In an instant, he used the Great Dimensional Shift and disappeared.

A moment later, he reappeared in a place that was hundreds of miles away.

There was a lush mountain forest before him, and both the air and the ground were rich in Saint Qi. Medicinal plants that were hundreds of years old could be seen all over. Of course, such medicinal plants were no different from weeds to a Saint or a Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen took out the lotus and inserted it into the ground.

Whoosh!!

The lotus trembled a little as dense white roots quickly grew and penetrated the ground, spreading far and wide.

The roots were actually gaseous, and soon, something amazing happened.

All of the life force that surrounded the vegetation, the essence within the ground's minerals, as well as the Saint Qi in the air and earth, flowed into the lotus.

A gentle light then emanated from the lotus petals, and it grew increasingly brighter.

Zhang Ruochen released a spiritual avatar and entered the lotus to start cultivating.

Fifteen minutes later, all the vegetation within a twenty-mile radius withered, the essence within the minerals vanished, and all of the Saint Qi in the air, as well as the earth, was absorbed.

The entire area had been reduced to a wasteland!

By the time Zhang Ruochen's spiritual avatar came out of the lotus and landed beside him, its spiritual strength had increased to the upper end of Level 50.

One needs to know that before the avatar entered the lotus, its spiritual power was only at the lower end of Level 50.

Such growth might not have seemed all too extraordinary with Zhang Ruochen's current Level 57 spiritual power. However, for a Level 50 spiritual Saint, or a spiritual Demi-Saint, it would have been extremely astounding.

Zhang Ruochen pulled the avatar back into his heart and jumped into the lotus with his true body. He exercised his cultivation techniques and absorbed the remaining power within the lotus.

An hour later, Zhang Ruochen flew out of the lotus, and his cultivation, physical body, as well as Saint Soul, had advanced by a small amount.

While an hour had passed in the outside world, Zhang Ruochen had, in fact, trained for a day and a night within the lotus.

“With this lotus, the speed of my cultivation will increase tenfold, and I should reach the realm of a Six-step Saint King soon.” Zhang Ruochen broke into a satisfied smile.

After that test, Zhang Ruochen noticed a problem. There was a big limitation on the radius that the lotus could cover. It was restricted to the absorption of vital energies and mineral essences within twenty miles.

Zhang Ruochen guessed that earlier in Xumi Dojo, the lotus had been able to absorb vital energies and mineral essences hundreds of miles away mostly because of the green lotus seed’s stimulation.

Now, the green lotus seed had been reduced to dust. Coupled with Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, absorbing vital energies and mineral essences within a radius of twenty miles was his limit.

Zhang Ruochen was particularly excited about the substantial growth of his cultivation and spiritual powers.

As a result, he used the Great Dimensional Shift again and reappeared over a dozen miles away, planting the lotus in the ground once more.

But this time, the lotus did not respond.

Following that, Zhang Ruochen switched over a dozen spots.

Twirling the lotus in his hand, he put on a wry smile. “It seems that no matter how good a treasure is, it cannot be used unlimitedly. It probably has a cooldown period. I will try again tomorrow.”

...

Shengyu Dojo.

The Heavenly Realm Saint Kings in the Celestial Domain of Truth all gathered together as they stood beneath the statue of a god. Some had white wings, some had bodies the size of

hills, while some had silver hair and sharp ears... Their numbers were plenty and in the thousands.

A series of Saint auras blasted out, seemingly able to breach the sky.

It was not until a divine light emerged from the statue that they restrained their Saint auras. They bowed and said in unison, "In audience of the Great Yanshen."

The divine light that radiated from the statue grew stronger and stronger as tri-colored light appeared in its eyes. In an instant, a terrifying aura fell on all of the Saint Kings present, pressing them so hard that they could not straighten their backs as sweat kept rolling off their faces.

A majestic and divine voice traveled from the statue. "Shang Ziyang, step forth."

Shang Ziyang reacted calmly as he walked to the fore under the golden pressure. "Your disciple is here," he said.

Clang!

Two fireballs shot out of the statue and slammed into Shang Ziyang's body, blasting him more than a dozen miles away. He crashed through a mountain and landed hard.

Shang Ziyang's body was torn apart as flesh separated from blood, leaving only white bones to connect his body together. He looked unspeakably miserable.

Yet, his eyes were unusually firm, and his brows did not even wrinkle. He did not cry out in pain either. Shang Ziyang only held his broken body as he slowly stood up, and while he coughed out blood, he said, "I... I... deserved this..."

"Even a dozen deaths will not be enough to make up for your mistake."

Yanshen's voice was like thunder, and it shook the eardrums of all the Saint Kings there. Those who had participated in the battle of Xumi Dojo were all in a state of panic.

In the face of a god, no one dared to speak up for Shang Ziyang.

After all, this time around, Shang Ziyan had committed a terrible mistake and cost the lives of several hundred Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm. Each of them had unlimited potential and a small possibility of becoming a Supreme Saint in the future.

The damage had been far too great and too far-reaching.

“I... I am... willing to accept... every punishment... but Xun Ya, Wang Xu, and the rest... are still in Zhang Ruochen’s hands. I beg you, Master... please rescue them...” Shang Ziyan said.

“Rescue them? Do you think it’s that simple? This is the Celestial Domain of Truth; even a god cannot intervene in the matters of the Celestial Domain.” Yanshen sounded furious.

Shang Ziyan knelt down on one knee as he raised his head and said, “Please give me another chance. Next time, I will definitely take Xumi Dojo, kill Zhang Ruochen, and rescue all of the captive Saint Kings.”

“The Fane of Truth has already found out about this. Do you still think there is a second chance?” Yanshen said.

“This matter is no longer your concern. My true body has already reached the Celestial Domain of Truth, and I must do my best to deal with the Fane of Truth. Wang Xu’s mother god, the lord of the Fane of the Bloody War, will put pressure on the Fane of Truth.

“If this had been another time, they might have ended up trapped there. However, both the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court will soon have a large-scale war in the Kunlun Realm. It is precisely the time when manpower is needed, and the Fane of Truth should deal with them appropriately.”

Shang Ziyan heaved a sigh of relief. “If that is the case, I am relieved!”

Yanshen snorted. “You have disappointed me greatly this time around. You do not know how much effort I have expended to protect you. Of course, a mistake begets a punishment. Return to the Heavenly Realm now and accept the Trial of Purgation. If you can survive the nine-days of hellfire-tempering and

nine-days of rime-quenching in the Purgatory Furnace of Life and Death, I will naturally be able to give you a chance to redeem yourself when the war in the Kunlun Realm begins.”

The moment the Saint Kings heard of the Trial of Purgation, they shuddered and feared for Shang Ziyan’s end.

There were countless rumors about the Trial of Purgation, as well as the Purgatory Furnace of Life and Death, which revolved around it being an inhumane form of punishment. It was said that the number of Saint King beings who could survive a day within the furnace was little to none.

Even a Supreme Saint might perish within the furnace if they had to spend nine days inside it.

Besides, the punishment that Shang Ziyan had gotten was a “nine-day hellfire-tempering and nine-day rime-quenching”. For someone of the Saint King realm, that was the death penalty.

Shang Ziyan’s face turned pale by a couple of notches, but the determination in his eyes did not waver as he said, “I will accept the Trial of Purgation.”

Yanshen’s voice then spread across Shengyu Dojo. “All Saints of the Heavenly Realm, hear me. The cultivation within the Celestial Domain of Truth is temporarily over. All shall return to the Heavenly Realm to prepare for battle. The battle of the Kunlun Realm is of great significance, and we cannot afford any further missteps.”

...

The night was quiet, and the moon was bright.

On the shore of a lake not far from Xumi Dojo, a little girl in white martial robes held her saint sword and lunged forward with a stab.

Her speed was shockingly fast akin to a darting swan.

Clang!

Zhang Ruochen blocked the sword with a horizontal parry, and the crisp sound of colliding metal reverberated as a large amount of Sword Qi blasted out.

“Not bad. In just a few days, you have mastered the Sword of Time’s first technique, Without a Trace. Your comprehension skills exceeded my initial estimations. You can try to use the Jade Swallow Pendant’s power for a burst of extreme speed and use the Sword of Time at the same time. Your speed should be on a whole other level.”

“Let me try.”

Bam! Bam!!

Chi Kongyue attacked while Zhang Ruochen defended.

One was learning; the other was teaching.

No one knew how much time had passed, and Chi Kongyue had almost exhausted her Saint Qi. Her spiritual powers had also been greatly consumed as she tried to capture the Mark of Time. Yet, she still drew her sword quickly while she learned and trained hard, apparently not knowing exhaustion.

The eleven-year-old girl owned such powerful cultivation all because she had been training desperately since young. Chi Kongyue almost did not have a childhood.

That kind of hard work was something no other child possessed.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen put his Abyssal Blade away and said, “That is all for tonight. Come with me.”

Whoosh!

After Zhang Ruochen grabbed Chi Kongyue’s petite hand, they flew away like condors as he used his technique and transformed into a stream of light, taking off into the distance.

Chi Kongyue secretly glanced at Zhang Ruochen and gently pursed her lips.

She had discovered that cultivation was such a wonderful and pleasant thing by training in the art of swordsmanship with her father.

When she was by the empress’ side, she would cultivate to the point of suffering as she pushed her will and physical strength to the limits without relenting.

Zhang Ruochen looked at her delicate little face and smiled.
“What are you looking at?”

“Nothing!”

Chi Kongyue shook her head and said nothing, only putting on a happy smile.

After they flew for who-knows how long, Zhang Ruochen held on to Chi Kongyue as they landed. He then pulled the lotus out and stuck it into the ground.

Whoosh!!

In an instant, the vital energies and essences around them converged upon it.

“Go!” Zhang Ruochen said.

It was not the first time that Chi Kongyue had entered the lotus for cultivation. She leaped up and became the size of a mosquito before she descended into the lotus.

With a few days of testing and research, Zhang Ruochen had discovered that the lotus could only be used twice a day.

One of those times was naturally given to Chi Kongyue, and that enabled her cultivation, spiritual power, and Saint Soul to rise to new heights in a short time. There was now a significant gap between her prowess and Chi Kunlun’s.

Chi Kongyue flew out of the lotus, and as she saw Zhang Ruochen’s back, a mischievous smile formed on her lips. She carefully walked over, wanting to give him a scare.

“I will be leaving tomorrow!” Zhang Ruochen looked at the moon above and said in a melancholic manner.

Startled, Chi Kongyue was stuck in place as if she had been petrified, and the smile on her face disappeared.

Chapter 1766 - Great Success with the Eleventh Palm Technique

Chapter 1766: Great Success with the Eleventh Palm
Technique

After he spent a few days with Chi Kongyue, an unknown feeling welled up within Zhang Ruochen's heart, and the loneliness within became much lighter.

In fact, he was a little reluctant to leave her. Sadly, he had no choice.

Zhang Ruochen inscribed the Sword of Time's second technique, organized it into a volume, and handed it to Chi Kongyue.

Chi Kongyue held the volume, and her eyes flickered with crystal-clear luster as she said, "I heard that the dark gods of the Infernal Court are about to infiltrate the Kunlun Realm's Altar of Heaven and Earth. I am afraid that a war may break out soon. Would you go back and fight beside us against our foe?"

"For many cultivators of the Kunlun Realm, I am more like an internal enemy who deserves nothing but death," Zhang Ruochen said.

It seemed like Chi Kongyue could feel the pain and helplessness in Zhang Ruochen's heart because she abruptly became silent.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind him as he stepped into the void and formed circular ripples as he traversed ten miles in a single step, quickly disappearing before Chi Kongyue.

...

The Holy City of Tiandu, the Palace of Flowers.

Zhang Ruochen saw the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers, Ji Fanxin, and immediately after, he opened some boxes on a bronze table and inspected the items he had previously ordered.

“The Royal Sacred Chalcedony.

“The Rootless Cranebloom.

“The Heavenly Bloodstone. Not bad, not bad. You truly are a person of many means, so much so that even a Heavenly Bloodstone is not beyond your reach.”

As Zhang Ruochen opened the fourth box, he found a black vial inside. Upon checking the liquid in the vial, he frowned slightly and said, “There are only fifty drops? But I wanted a hundred.”

Ji Fanxin was sitting behind a screen. The pretty fairy, who was as beautiful as a creature in a painting, rolled her eyes at Zhang Ruochen. “A single Tear of the Void is already difficult to find. I have pulled every single one of my connections for these fifty drops.”

Zhang Ruochen closed the box and smiled. “Well, fifty will do then! All of this, plus twelve Saint-King elephant souls, how many saint stones does everything add up to?”

“Eight hundred million saint stones,” Ji Fanxin said.

While Zhang Ruochen was mentally prepared for the price, it still came as a big shock to him.

That price was astronomical for the vast majority of Saint Kings, and even with a thousand years of savings, it would be impossible to accumulate such wealth.

“I am an old customer. Can’t you give me a discount? Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin’s expression was impassive, and she said, “You know, just that Heavenly Bloodstone alone is worth three hundred million saint stones. Besides, with your current status, it is impossible for you to get one.

“On the market, the Tears of the Void cost close to ten million saint stones for a single drop, and fifty drops is worth 500

million saint stones. As for the other items, which one of them would be less than 100 million saint stones?

“Since we are friends, I have naturally given you a big discount, and 800 million saint stones is the discounted price.

“Of course, if you think these are too expensive, you can instead go for items that are a tier lower, something a little worse to temper the soul of your sword.”

Zhang Ruochen realized for the first time that the usually austere Fairy of a Hundred Flowers would be incredibly shrewd when it came to business. It was very difficult to gain any favors from her.

“No need. I will take all of them.”

Without further delay, Zhang Ruochen pulled out one treasure after another from his Ring of Dimensions. There were sacred artifacts of many marks, sacred pills, talismans, and some bizarre objects.

They were all spoils that he had collected from the battle at Xumi Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen’s Ring of Dimensions was like a treasure trove with countless valuables inside it, and Ji Fanxin’s eyes lit up as she looked at everything. “It appears that the Heavenly Realm has really suffered a great loss and earned you a fortune. No wonder the gods in the Heavenly Realm were all startled and rushed over to the Celestial Domain of Truth in their true bodies.”

“There are gods from the Heavenly Realm in the Celestial Domain of Truth?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Ji Fanxin motioned Qian Liwen to appraise the treasures before she slowly spoke. “I did hear some rumors, but if you want to know more, let us exchange news?”

“What information do you want?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin then asked, “What actually happened in the battle of Xumi Dojo?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little taken aback. “You couldn’t find any news even with your status?”

Ji Fanxin shook her head and said, “The Fane of Truth has locked down all news, and aside from those within the Kunlun or Heavenly Realm, no one else knows much. The outside world only knows that many died in the battle of Xumi Dojo, and the Heavenly Realm suffered great losses. As for what happened, the extent of casualties, and which important people died, there has not been any information.”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly astonished, and he realized that the Xumi Dojo incident had a more serious and far-reaching impact than he had anticipated.

He could understand why the Fane of Truth blocked news of the battle. After all, a serious incident with so many casualties had never happened since the Fane of Truth’s establishment, until now.

What intrigued Zhang Ruochen was how the Fane of Truth was going to handle the matter.

Would they ask him to release all of the Saint Kings who were being held captive in the dojo?

Zhang Ruochen directly gave her a rough recollection of what happened in Xumi Dojo, and Ji Fanxin’s expression constantly changed as she heard it. In the end, there was a look of horror in her eyes.

Next to her, Qian Liwen blinked in fright as he wanted to immediately step away and keep a distance from Zhang Ruochen for fear of being involved.

Ji Fanxin’s state of mind far surpassed Qian Liwen’s, and she quickly recovered. “Why, though? This was originally a matter that concerned the Kunlun Realm, so why did you need to get involved? With the Heavenly Realm suffering such a heavy loss, they will surely retaliate against you next time, brutally. When they do, they will not give you any chance of survival, and the cultivators around you will be affected as well.”

Zhang Ruochen seemed indifferent as he said, “Even if I hadn’t gotten myself involved, the Heavenly Realm would not have let me go, anyway. Which of the Heavenly Realm’s gods have gone to the Celestial Domain of Truth?”

“Yanshen,” Ji Fanxin said.

Disdain filled Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. “He is just an old dog. What is he doing in the Celestial Domain of Truth?”

Shang Ziyan had tried so many times to kill Zhang Ruochen, and Yanshen must have been the one instructing him from behind. So naturally, Zhang Ruochen hated him.

Qian Liwen’s legs trembled from fear, and he found that Zhang Ruochen was too brazen to insult a god. Moreover, that god was now in the Celestial Domain of Truth, and being a god, he could have very well heard Zhang Ruochen’s insults.

Qian Liwen’s back was soaked in cold sweat, and he looked up fearfully, afraid that Yanshen would call upon divine retribution and kill off every living being there.

Ji Fanxin remained calm and glanced at Qian Liwen. “Elder Qian, you do not need to be so nervous. This is the dojo of the Mandala Goddess, and Yanshen cannot hear us.”

She immediately continued, “Yanshen has probably come to the Celestial Domain of Truth to protect the Saint Kings whom you’ve held captive. But now that such a thing has happened, even if Yanshen wants to rescue them, he would definitely have to pay a huge price.”

“Master Ruochen, if the Heavenly Realm and Celestial Domain of Truth come to an agreement, and they ask you to release those captives, will you?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled without a word and did not answer Ji Fanxin’s question. Instead, he said, “Elder Qian, based on your evaluation, how much are these treasures worth?”

Qian Liwen walked over cautiously, and when he looked at Zhang Ruochen, there was a tinge of awe in his eyes. He no longer dared to treat the latter as a younger junior. “Master Ruochen, the value of all of these treasures is about 570 million saint stones.”

“So in other words, I am still short of 30 million saint stones?”

Zhang Ruochen was about to take more treasures out of his Ring of Dimensions as Ji Fanxin’s voice rang out. “Forget

about the 30 million saint stones! Master Ruochen, do not forget about your promise to me. Once you are in the Kunlun Realm, I will come and look for you.”

After Zhang Ruochen returned to Yueshen Dojo, he went to see Su Jing again.

Leading up to that, Su Jing had used a large number of saint stones and connections but only managed to collect five drops of Tears of the Void and a small amount of Royal Sacred Chalcedony. As for the Heavenly Bloodstone or the Rootless Cranebloom, he came up empty.

Zhang Ruochen was a little disappointed and had to temporarily postpone the matter of condensing the Abyssal Blade’s spirit form.

“In that case, let us first cultivate the eleventh palm technique of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike.”

Zhang Ruochen took twelve Saint-King dragon souls and elephant souls into Yueshen Dojo’s underground chamber and walked to the edge of Yin-Yang Lake.

Yin-Yang Hall had occupied Yueshen Dojo for quite some time now, and both the Yin and Yang Lake established beneath it had gathered a large amount of Yin and Yang Qi, making it a treasured place for cultivation.

The eleventh palm of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike required a place where the Yang Qi was at its hottest for the cultivation to succeed, and Yang Lake was undoubtedly such a place.

Yang Lake was thirteen feet in diameter, and its water was hotter than magma, radiating a crimson light from within.

“My arms already each have a dragon soul and an elephant soul. If I were to infuse these twelve dragon and elephant souls into my arms, the strength and explosive power in my arms would definitely increase exponentially. It would be much easier to break through the Dacheng Realm of the technique then.”

Soon after, Zhang Ruochen sat by Yang Lake and began to temper both the dragon and elephant souls.

It took Zhang Ruochen two hours to temper eight dragon and eight elephant souls. However, when he started to temper the ninth dragon and elephant souls, he found it rather difficult.

After all, the human body had its limits, and if he exceeded the limit, it was very likely that he would suffer a backlash.

In the past, Zhan Yu, a supreme genius in the Blackdemon Realm had tempered twelve dragon souls into his entire body. Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen was tempering all of the dragon souls into his left arm, and that made the difficulty a lot higher.

While Zhang Ruochen tempered the tenth dragon and elephant souls, a piercing pain surged across his arm as his skin started to rupture, and plenty of blood flowed out.

Both of his arms felt like they were about to explode.

Zhang Ruochen gritted his teeth as he activated the Emyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture and his Saint Qi to suppress both the dragon and elephant souls. He forced them into his arms, blending them with his skin, flesh, bones, and meridians.

“Two more dragon and elephant souls each. Let's continue.”

Zhang Ruochen leaped forward and jumped into Yang Lake with a loud splash.

Due to the extreme heat, his Saint robe was instantly reduced to ashes.

Enduring Yang Lake's high temperature, Zhang Ruochen quickly grabbed a dragon soul and started to temper it. At the same time, the thick Yang Qi in the lake penetrated his pores and entered his body.

Every particle of Yang Qi was like a ball of inferno.

Bam! Bam!!

As Zhang Ruochen tempered the souls, he performed the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strikes, using the technique to temper his flesh and bones, as well as promote the fusion of the souls with his arms.

The process of refining and tempering the eleventh dragon and elephant souls took Zhang Ruochen six hours. During that

period, his arms were shattered more than ten times, and each instance was extremely painful. Even with his willpower, he still almost fainted.

Nevertheless, he persevered and did not give up.

In actuality, infusing a single Saint-King dragon soul and elephant soul into his arms was enough to cultivate the eleventh palm technique of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike to the Dacheng Realm.

However, after his battle with Shang Ziyan, Zhang Ruochen realized that there were still many elites in the world who could compete with him and even be stronger than him.

So, he had to do better and could not rest on his laurels.

“One final dragon and elephant soul each.”

Zhang Ruochen persisted as the Yang Qi in his body became denser and denser. His body soon turned crimson gold, and his eyes were two blazing fireballs.

No one knew how many times his arms had shattered, and the blood in Zhang Ruochen’s body was mixed with the lake’s water.

Half a day later, an earth-splitting explosion rang out from Yang Lake.

“Rawrrrrr!!”

Not long after that, the sound of a dragon’s roar echoed.

A scarlet-golden dragon along with a dazzling heat wave rushed out of Yang Lake, and its two claws scraped the underground chamber’s roof. Instantly, the dense array of inscriptions within the underground chamber were all activated.

Boom!!

On the surface, the entire Yueshen Dojo shook violently.

Chapter 1767 - Return to Mount Yueshen

Chapter 1767: Return to Mount Yueshen

The scarlet-golden dragon turned into a human figure and flew back down to the edge of Yang Lake.

The surface of his skin still had dragon scales while powerful energies flowed around his body, emitting a sharp slashing sound.

His body was like a furnace as it released terrifying heat.

“I have finally managed to cultivate the eleventh palm technique of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike to Dacheng Realm! This feels good, too good!”

Zhang Ruochen laughed out loud as he slowly raised his arms. The shadows of thirteen dragons and thirteen elephants appeared on either side of him, presenting an extremely imposing image.

The Yang Qi within his body was now a hundred thousand times that of an ordinary person.

If Zhang Ruochen swallowed a Saint King into his belly, he could directly refine and temper it within him.

Moreover, with the completion of the eleventh palm technique, Zhang Ruochen’s physical body had undergone an astonishing transformation. In addition, his physical limits had also increased exponentially. Every tendon in his body was akin to an azure dragon, and every bone in his body, a sacred elephant.

It was literally having dragons for muscles and elephants for bones.

Most importantly, the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike had officially been raised to an Intermediate Saint rank. Among the

Intermediate Saint techniques, it was the most powerful Tongxuan-level technique.

The more precepts he infused into his palm strikes, the greater their burst of power.

If he were to integrate more than several hundred thousand precepts into his palm technique, the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike's power would be sufficient to counter high-level Saint techniques.

High-level Saint techniques were colossal techniques that only a Supreme Saint could cultivate. Each technique had the potential to turn the heavens and the earth upside down, destroying stars with just the flick of a finger.

Of course, the palm technique precepts that Zhang Ruochen had cultivated so far were only in the thousands, and he needed to work hard to raise it to a higher realm.

“With my current physical strength, as well as the thirteen dragon and elephant souls respectively, I can probably slap a Seven-step Saint King to death without drawing upon my Saint Qi.” Zhang Ruochen inspected his arms and nodded in satisfaction.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen sat down and invoked his inner techniques to balance out the raging Yang Qi within his body. In the meantime, the dragon scale membranes and heat on his body slowly receded.

As he stood up, Zhang Ruochen looked at both the Yang and Yin Lake before him.

The Yang and Yin Qi within the two lakes were still potent and could be used for a long time.

Zhang Ruochen took out a Mercury Gourd and prepared to take both the Yin and Yang Lake away. But just as he opened the gourd's cover, a powerful divine power rushed out.

If it had been any other Saint, their saintly body would have already been destroyed by the divine power's fluctuations.

“It is Wang Xu's Divine Planet.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately covered the Mercury Gourd to prevent the Divine Planet from rushing out.

It is important to note that the Divine Planet still contained a Star Soul left behind by the gods, and its will was powerful. For Wang Xu to refine the Divine Planet into his own sea of qi, he had basically received the Divine Star Soul's recognition, and that equaled receiving a legacy from the gods.

If one were to refine the Divine Star Soul into their own sea of qi without first getting its recognition, it would mean certain death.

“It seems like I am not able to use the Mercury Gourd as well as the Secret Tome of Time and Space for now. I will just wait until I return to the Shatuo Domain and get Yueshen to intervene. Then I can wipe out the Star Soul's will and give the Divine Planet to Ling Xi!”

There was a Qiankun Realm within Zhang Ruochen's sea of qi, and he would naturally not waste a load of time to refine a Divine Planet. Hence, presenting it to Ling Xi as a gift seemed more suitable.

Following that, Zhang Ruochen opened up his left and right hand, and dazzling light shone out of his palms.

Whoosh!!

Eight Exquisite Dimensional Orbs flew out.

The Exquisite Dimensional Orbs were spoils of war he had gotten from Gong Ziyang. After Zhang Ruochen refined Gong Ziyang's will and studied it, he had realized that within each orb was a small spherical world, which spanned tens of thousands of miles.

Eight different stars floated within the Exquisite Dimensional Orbs.

The more he studied them, the more he had sensed the strength and arcane nature of the orbs. Since they had been placed within the Fane of Dimensions, they were probably one of the top-tier dimensional treasures.

During the battle with Gong Ziyan, it was through sheer luck that Zhang Ruochen's Violet Godstones turned out to be more arcane and powerful, managing to suppress the eight Exquisite Dimensional Orbs.

Zhang Ruochen took out one of the orbs, and within it was a Yin-yang star with a diameter of six thousand miles.

Half of that star was like a living furnace with volcanoes erupting everywhere; the other half was a frozen wasteland all year round and was extremely frigid.

Zhang Ruochen absorbed both the Yin and Yang Lake into the orb and placed it on the surface of the Yin-yang star.

Once he was done, Zhang Ruochen sensed something and pulled out his Staff of the Divine Envoy.

Whoosh!!

A stream of light rushed out of the staff and suspended itself in midair before it took the form of Yueshen's avatar.

"Zhang Ruochen, return to Mount Yueshen immediately. I have ordered Supreme Saint Manjian to pick you up."

After she spoke, her avatar dissipated and became specks of light.

Yueshen had mentioned that she would tell him what to do right before the start of the War of the Kunlun Realm. By the looks of things, either the Altar of Heaven and Earth in the Kunlun Realm had already been breached or was closed to being breached.

Zhang Ruochen had wanted to go back to the Kunlun Realm immediately, but with the flames of approaching war, all life would be affected. The great catastrophe as foretold by Sword Saint Xuanji when he was resurrected was probably near.

He had to rescue his mother, fourth elder brother, and ninth elder sister who were staying in Yunwu Commandery as soon as possible. He could no longer allow them to stay in the Kunlun Realm.

Even a god could not stop such an inexorable turn of events.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea what the future of the Kunlun Realm would be, but he had to protect his family and friends from the coming catastrophe.

He then telepathically sent a message to Blackie and Awesome, the Little Taoist, telling them to leave the Celestial Domain of Truth.

After that, Zhang Ruochen set off to see Su Jing again and made some arrangements with him.

On that same day, Supreme Saint Manjian carried Yueshen's divine orders as he drove the Saint Vessel unimpededly into the Celestial Domain of Truth and arrived at Mount Tiandu.

Zhang Ruochen brought over a hundred beautiful Saints with him and boarded the Saint Vessel. He looked into the distance and noticed that there were as many as seventeen Saint Vessels docked near Mount Tiandu.

Many young talents from various great worlds had gathered in the Holy City of Tiandu and boarded different Saint Vessels.

It was something that had never happened before. Clearly, something was brewing.

“Greetings, Supreme Saint.”

With Zhang Ruochen at the head, nearly a hundred beautiful Saints simultaneously bowed with respect before Supreme Saint Manjian.

A Supreme Saint was an emperor among Saints, and he or she had a lofty status in any realm.

Bowing to a Supreme Saint was the most basic of etiquette.

Even the scions of the gods or even the young leaders of the world had to show respect when they met a Supreme Saint.

Supreme Saint Manjian laughed out loud as he actually stepped forward and patted Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder. “Good lad, you did not disappoint me. You actually managed to earn quite the name in the Celestial Domain of Truth. When you return to the Shatuo Domain, the cultivators from the Hellblade Realm, Greater Demonic Realm, and Zifu Realm

will probably wet themselves upon hearing your name.” He grinned.

“I heard that you took the Jingxiang Gorge Dojo in the Red Dragon Domain and breached Yueshen Dojo, crossing the sixth level of the Sea of Truth and so forth. What a blood-pumping adventure! How I wish that I was two thousand years younger, then I could go and wreak havoc across the entire Celestial Domain of Truth.

“But, you are Yueshen’s envoy, and you also have a high status. Anyway, you only need to salute and bow to Yueshen. Skip the formalities with me, hahaha!”

Zhang Ruochen was no mediocre person and was not nervous at all before a Supreme Saint. He smiled and said, “This has nothing to do with status. In the path of cultivation, those who achieve advancement first are seniors. As a person who has managed to break into the realm of a Supreme Saint, you deserve my respect and reverence. Please accept my bows and salutations.”

Supreme Saint Manjian nodded gently, and an expression of approval appeared in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen had garnered a huge reputation for his actions in the Celestial Domain of Truth, with blood and iron, as well as the slaying of many elites. He had racked up a list of brilliant achievements, and in less than two years, he had become a rookie who shook entire worlds.

Even so, he did not give off any trace of arrogance or flippancy. Instead, he was still extremely humble.

“His future achievements will definitely be greater than mine.”

Supreme Saint Manjian thought so in his heart, and he smiled. “What respect and reverence? Forget about those unnecessary matters. If you do not mind, you can call me Big Brother Manjian.”

“Big Brother?”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly taken aback, thinking that he must have misheard it.

One must know that it was extremely difficult for most Saint Kings to be a disciple of a Supreme Saint.

Could a Saint King and a Supreme Saint be called brothers?"

Noticing that Zhang Ruochen was not responding, Supreme Saint Manjian said, "Brother Ruochen, is it because I am too old?"

Zhang Ruochen immediately shook his head. "Of course not, but... Well, since you have proposed it, Big Brother Manjian, we shall be considered brothers from now on."

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was not a hypocrite, Supreme Saint Manjian liked him much more and even had the thought of being his sworn brother.

However, he did not suggest it for the time being. Instead, he piloted the Saint Vessel and flew out the Celestial Domain of Truth. His official business consisted of taking Zhang Ruochen back to Mount Yueshen and meeting Yueshen.

The female Saints who had followed Zhang Ruochen aboard the Saint Vessel all looked at each other in amazement and felt that leaving with Zhang Ruochen had been a wise decision.

There were dark cultivators from the Yin-yang Realm, Blackdemon Realm, and Thousand Evils Realm being held captive in Yueshen Dojo. All of them were beauties with extraordinary talents and physiques; some of them were even princesses of kingdoms or holy maidens in a certain sect.

Plus, most of them had chaste bodies and were precious commodities that the Yin-yang Temple was prepared to sell at high prices.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to rebuild the reputation of the Central Shengming Empire's emperor. What he currently lacked the most was manpower, and it was not easy to cultivate scions of heaven like them who were in the Saint realm.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen would not keep them in Yueshen Dojo, and he planned to use them for himself.

The speed of Supreme Saint Manjian's Saint Vessel was extremely fast, and even if Zhang Ruochen were to use the

Great Dimensional Shift, he could only overtake it for a short while. Over a long distance, Zhang Ruochen could use up all of his Saint Qi and still never be able to catch up to the vessel.

There was a Saint Vessel to quicken his journey and also teleportation matrixes that connected the various domains for interdimensional travel.

As such, by sunset on the second day, Zhang Ruochen had returned to Mount Yueshen and met Yueshen's true form in Guanghan Temple.

Chapter 1768 - The Arrival of the Empress

Chapter 1768: The Arrival of the Empress

Yueshen had been known as the most beautiful goddess in the Celestial Court for ten thousand years. Many deities had been courting her and setting her as their next target after achieving divinity.

But, they all failed.

That was how aloof Yueshen was.

After she refined the Moonleaf of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi, Yueshen had recovered half of her strength. Not only had her spiritual energy become more powerful, but her out-of-this-world vibe had also become more apparent. She was otherworldly, elusive, and nimble.

Endowed with a stunning appearance, perfect figure, and an ethereal aura, even real gods would fall for her, let alone Zhang Ruochen and Supreme Saint Manjian.

Zhang Ruochen and Supreme Saint Manjian were self-abased in front of her. They did not know why they felt that way; it just came out of nowhere.

As if their achievement of Saint Kingship and Supreme Sainthood was meaningless, Yueshen regarded them just as the mortals.

Fortunately for Zhang Ruochen and Supreme Saint Manjian, they could still hold themselves together. Other cultivators would have bowed before the goddess in the same situation.

However, Yueshen was not consciously releasing her spiritual energy or using other powers. She just stood there quietly like a sculpture.

“This is what a god is. Even though she does nothing but stand there, every being goes down on their knees.” Zhang Ruochen

quickly collected himself and turned his self-abasement into motivation.

He wanted to achieve divinity and be on equal terms with Yueshen one day.

“Yueshen,” Zhang Ruochen and Supreme Saint Manjian greeted.

“Manjian, leave me for now!” said the tall and graceful Yueshen, who was standing in the highest position.

Supreme Saint Manjian left Guanghan Temple, and the insanely intimidating power finally felt somewhat reduced.

He let out a long sigh. “It seems Yueshen has recovered over half of her divine strength. Even with my current level of cultivation, I felt nervous in front of her. Zhang Ruochen is much stronger; he could still withstand that pressure with his Saint King rank!”

Inside Guanghan Temple, Yueshen walked down the stairs toward Zhang Ruochen. “Do you know why I have summoned you back to Mount Yueshen?”

“Something to do with the Kunlun Realm?”

Zhang Ruochen looked up in puzzlement.

Yueshen did not directly answer Zhang Ruochen. “What happened during the battle at Xumi Dojo?” she asked after some hesitation.

“Deities are all-knowing. How could you, Yueshen, not know what happened during the battle at Xumi Dojo?”

“The Fane of Truth is keeping things under wraps. Even the deities are not able to uncover what happened that day. However, judging from Yanshen’s urgency in going to the Celestial Domain of Truth, the battle at Xumi Dojo must have been earthshaking and profoundly impactful,” said Yueshen.

Enlightenment spread across Zhang Ruochen’s face, and he told Yueshen about the conflict that broke out at Xumi Dojo.

Yueshen listened attentively. When she heard about the defeat of the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings and the death of Gong

Ziyan, there was fleeting emotion in her eyes.

“Mobilizing over a thousand talented Saint Kings to ambush a few dozen cultivators from the Kunlun Realm and failing miserably at it... The Heavenly Realm must have been terrified. They probably thought that the Kunlun Realm had not declined but set a trap to kill them,” Yueshen said.

“They might have very well thought so.”

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “I am curious, though. Why did the Heavenly Realm not intercept Supreme Saint Manjian and the others when they left the Celestial Domain of Truth? Have they abandoned the kings who are confined in the fane?”

“Abandon? How could this be?”

“It looks like you do not understand how great the impact of this battle is.

“Had they been ordinary Saint Kings, the gods would not have batted an eyelid even if ten or even twenty thousand of them had died. But for those who could cultivate in the Celestial Domain of Truth, achieving the rank of Saint King and staying there meant that every one of them was on their way to achieving the Supreme Saint rank. A couple of them might have even become gods, so they represented the future of the Heavenly Realm.

“As such, even with its profound background, suffering such a casualty has really put a dent in the Heavenly Realm’s strength.”

Yueshen stared at Zhang Ruochen. “What are you going to do with those Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm?”

Zhang Ruochen’s face turned grave. “The Heavenly Realm has always been our archenemy. Since we have captured their Saint Kings, there is no way we are going to let them go.”

There was a cold look in Yueshen’s eyes; apparently, she shared the same opinion as Zhang Ruochen. “You are not suited to deal with them at your current level. Leave them to me!”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “You cannot take life on a whim in the Celestial Court even though you are a god. Those Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm have indeed committed serious crimes by killing the cultivators of the Kunlun Realm, but Yueshen, your intervention would break the rules. Even if you want to put them on trial, it would be better to leave the job to the Kunlun Realm or Celestial Domain of Truth.”

A dazzling, colorful divine light appeared overhead, turning the sky above Mount Yueshen into a rainbow-colored sea as powerful divine energy approached Mount Yueshen from afar.

The divine energy, unlike Yueshen’s restrained version, carried a terrifyingly oppressive power. Its presence instantly made every living being on Mount Yueshen fall down on their knees.

Even Supreme Saint Manjian had to bend his body forward. His neck stiffened and his head hung low in a bow as if Heaven was on his back.

“Empress Chi Yao calls on Yueshen.”

A loud, deafening female voice rang in the air.

Inside Guanghan Temple, a soft glow emanated from Yueshen’s glittering body and engulfed Zhang Ruochen. He instantly felt lighter as Chi Yao’s divine energy dissipated.

“She’s quick!” said Zhang Ruochen.

A moment later, blinding multicolored divine light rushed into Guanghan Temple.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were wide open as he stared into the light and finally made out Chi Yao’s appearance.

Surrounded by the divine glow, Chi Yao was clad in a golden silk robe, and her hair was tied up in a bun. The overpowering energy she radiated was brutal.

When Chi Yao walked past Manjian, the Supreme Saint with extremely advanced cultivation and powerful will, felt weak in the knees and knelt on the ground.

In terms of beauty, Chi Yao and Yueshen were equally pretty, but their vibes separated them.

One was otherworldly while the other was domineering.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly spotted another beautiful figure beside Chi Yao.

She had fair skin, and elusive eyes that held the powerful energy of a Supreme Saint. However, her hair was gray, and there was a melancholiac quality about her.

She was Kong Lanyou.

With a deep hatred toward Chi Yao, Kong Lanyou had been at loggerheads with Chi Yao for the past eight hundred years. Why did she appear together with Chi Yao today?

Zhang Ruochen could not have felt more shocked. He did not know what to make of it.

“Did you not want to see me, Zhang Ruochen? I am here now, yet you are hiding behind a woman.” Chi Yao’s voice was beautiful, but it sounded bossy, reeking of ridicule and disdain.

Zhang Ruochen’s pupils contracted, and he stepped forward.

Yueshen wanted to stop him, but Zhang Ruochen just shook his head. The moment he left the protection of Yueshen’s divine light, powerful divine energy pressed down on him.

His bones started to crack as if his body was being crushed.

He did nothing but stood there, staring Chi Yao in the eye. He allowed the blood to flow down his body to the ground as his skin split open. “I have never hidden. I have been waiting for you.”

Kong Lanyou could not bear to see what was happening to Zhang Ruochen. She looked over to Chi Yao, who did not bother to look at her.

“A Saint King who refuses to bow before me really has guts.”

Right after that, the divine energy and colorful divine light returned into Chi Yao’s body like a receding tide.

Feeling a sense of relief, Zhang Ruochen quickly summoned the circulating Saint energy in his body and quickly healed his cracked skin.

Chi Yao put her hands behind her, and her posture accentuated her beautiful curves. “Did you not say that if I were to come and see you in person, you would hand over the Chaotic Space-time Lotus? Here I am. Hand it over now!”

Yueshen stepped forward and moved next to Zhang Ruochen. “This is Mount Yueshen, not your Golden Hall of Yaochi. Zhang Ruochen is my divine envoy now, not a being in your Kunlun Realm. How dare you bluster about in my place!”

Chi Yao’s expression turned sullen as a piercing glow appeared in her eyes, making them look like a pair of divine swords.

“Zhang Ruochen, the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus is a precious article, which Saint Monk Xumi obtained from the depths of the universe’s place of origin, Haishi Star Bastion. You are his successor, so the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus is yours. You do not have to hand it over to Chi Yao.”

Yueshen continued after a pause, “Chi Yao, you might have achieved divinity not long ago, hence your inexperience, but you need to have some decency. Had Zhang Ruochen not come to the rescue, all of the Kunlun Realm’s elites would have died in the Xumi Dojo battle, let alone capture the dojo and take the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus. Therefore, the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus rightly belongs to Zhang Ruochen.”

Chi Yao chuckled. “I might have just achieved divinity recently, but I have killed a god from the Infernal Court. I guess you, Yueshen, do not have this track record even after your return to the Celestial Court?”

“I call a spade a spade and will reward Zhang Ruochen for the help he has provided to the Kunlun Realm. But bear in mind that the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus is a precious article given by Saint Monk Xumi to the Kunlun Realm. No cultivator outside of the Kunlun Realm shall be in possession of it.”

“I, too, can claim that the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus is a precious article given by Saint Monk Xumi to Zhang Ruochen,” Yueshen said.

With a flick of the slender fingers on Chi Yao's right hand, a jade seal shot out and hovered above the air in Guanghan Temple.

A paragraph of Sanskrit text appeared on the jade seal's surface.

The Chaotic Space-Time Lotus is stored in Xumi Dojo, and bringing the Lotus Seed of Life there will revitalize it. I hereby gift it to the Kunlun Realm, hoping that it will help stop the incoming onslaught from the Infernal Court and enable the Kunlun Realm to seize any opportunity during disasters, fight your way out of the rattrap, bring down the wall, as well as become great again.

Chi Yao looked at Yueshen and Zhang Ruochen with her beautiful eyes. "This is a divine decree that Saint Monk Xumi sent through space and time from a hundred thousand years ago. What do you have to say about it now?"

Chapter 1769 - Your Biological Mother Is the Blood Empress

Chapter 1769: Your Biological Mother Is the Blood Empress

While Saint Monk Xumi's Oracle was suspended in the air, Zhang Ruochen's Ring of Dimensions vibrated for a second.

"What is happening?"

Zhang Ruochen focused his mind into the Ring of Dimensions and found that the sundial he had obtained from the Phoenix Nest had sensed something and was glowing.

He was delighted. "Has the tiny trace of Saint Monk Xumi's divine power in the Oracle excited the sundial?"

Rakshasa Princess once said that Saint Monk Xumi used to be the owner of the sundial.

The sundial possessed the secrets of Lieshen[1]'s Divine Star Soul. It could lead to the discovery of Saint Monk Xumi's grave, and the interest behind it was immense.

Since the day Zhang Ruochen got his hands on the sundial, it had shown no reaction although he had studied it many times.

He was, of course, overjoyed at seeing the sundial come to life.

If he could find Lieshen's Divine Star Soul and control the Orion Eight Stars, he would not fear the Supreme Saints.

That is not right. Saint Monk Xumi's long beard also possesses divine power. Why did the sundial not react to it? Could there be some deeper connection between the Oracle and the sundial?

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself, trying to figure out a way to snatch the Oracle from Chi Yao.

Saint Monk Xumi had passed down the Oracle to Chi Yao one hundred years ago. It had to be of the rarest material for it to withstand the weathering of space and time.

Not only that, the Oracle possessed Saint Monk Xumi's divine power, which was branded with divine writings. All of that had created a mighty divine will with an incredible amount of power and turned it into a priceless article.

Hence, it was impossible for Chi Yao to hand the Oracle over to Zhang Ruochen.

Should he ask Yueshen to take it by force?

He shook his head. He still had those Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm in his hands right then.

So, the gods of the Heavenly Realm must be watching me and could come at any time.

If Yueshen and Chi Yao got into a fight, the Heavenly Realm would surely take advantage of it.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was deep in thought, he sensed a glare being aimed at him.

It was from Chi Yao.

She studied Zhang Ruochen and nodded her head. "Zhang Ruochen, you used to be one of them. You have an intricate connection with the Kunlun Realm.

"Now, the Kunlun Realm is facing its biggest crisis. Why don't we bury the hatchet and work together to fight off the Infernal Court's invasion?"

"If you are willing to return to the Kunlun Realm, I will appoint you as emperor and bestow the land that used to belong to the Central Shengming Empire on you. You will rule over the land and establish your own government, second only to mine.

"That way, the government will not arrest and kill the Central Shengming Empire's former officials. Their families will then not have to worry and live in exile. They can live in peace and even gain prosperity."

Zhang Ruochen burst into laughter. “Who do you think I am, Chi Yao? You think you can buy me off with just the position Shengming’s emperor?”

“First of all, for the sake of the Kunlun Realm’s people, the Central Shengming Empire’s former officials, my family, and friends, I would return to the Kunlun Realm to do everything within my ability, without the need for you to mention it. But now that I have heard what you said, I only feel disgusted,” said Zhang Ruochen. “Do you not want the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus? I can give it to you, but you must answer a few questions.”

“You want to find out why I wanted to kill you eight hundred years ago, right? You do not even have to ask. I can tell you right away.” Chi Yao seemed indifferent.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat; the question had been bothering him for a long time. He had wanted to know the answer since the beginning.

There was a bitter expression in Chi Yao’s eyes, and she did not want Zhang Ruochen to see her actual expression. “It’s because the blood of the Immortal Vampires, one of the ten races in the Infernal Court, is flowing in your veins. Your mother was the Blood Empress, one of the Kunlun Realm’s three empresses eight hundred years ago. Is that a good enough reason?”

The truth came as a bolt from the blue, and Zhang Ruochen was rooted to the spot. He could not believe what he had heard.

Saddened upon seeing Zhang Ruochen’s reaction, Kong Lanyou glared at Chi Yao. “You promised not to tell him this secret.” Her voice trembled.

Chi Yao appeared even more austere. “Hear that? You may not want to believe me, but you should trust Kong Lanyou. The Blood Empress is your biological mother. There is only an empty coffin in the empress’s tomb in the imperial mausoleum.

“Eight hundred years ago, when the Blood Empress was still young, before she attained the cultivation level of a Supreme Saint, she had fought with Kong Shangling, Kong Lanyou’s grandfather and owner of the Peacock Manor, once.

“Kong Shangling had turned into a colorful peacock and swallowed the Blood Empress.

“However, not only did the Blood Empress survive, but she also transcended, transforming into a blood fetus after eighty-one days inside the peacock’s stomach. Then, she burst out of peacock’s body, severely hurting it.

“Instead of killing the colorful peacock, the Blood Empress left behind a toxin in its blood so that she could control its life and death.

“Her residence within the colorful peacock’s body for eighty-one days meant that the colorful peacock was her parent in a sense. Later, using her identity as Kong Shangling’s daughter, the Blood Empress met your father, Emperor Ming.”

Chi Yao took out an ancient script and threw it to Zhang Ruochen. “Your teacher, the Grand Tutor, is the author of this book. You should be able to recognize his handwriting.”

Zhang Ruochen did not pick up the script and just stood motionlessly on the spot.

He did not have to read it because he had read it when Yan Liren, the Sect of the Blood God’s Supreme Elder, passed him the Immortal Vampire Secrets.

It was just that the last page of the Immortal Vampire Secrets was missing; Zhang Ruochen did not know the outcome of the battle between Kong Shangling and the Blood Empress.

What Chi Yao said was most likely true.

Kong Lanyou called out to him softly because she was worried that Zhang Ruochen might break down after he learned the truth.

Zhang Ruochen was very emotional. He smiled only after a long while. “Since I am a half-Immortal Vampire, why did I not have the urge to drink blood until I reached sixteen?”

“Emperor Ming contained the Immortal Vampire bloodline in your body using his powerful cultivation. But as a result, you will not be able to attain the Fish-dragon Realm for the rest of your life. That was also why you were trapped in your past life until the completion of the Heaven Realm,” Chi Yao said.

“The Blood Empress had approached Emperor Ming, intending to control Central Shengming Empire through him with the ultimate target of controlling the Kunlun Realm.

“When Emperor Ming was still at the helm, the Blood Empress had half of the Shengming Empire’s government under her control through Kong Shangling and others. Later, when Emperor Ming found out who the Blood Empress really was, he joined hands with Emperor Qing, trying many times to get rid of the Blood Empress. Yet, all of their attempts failed.

“Emperor Ming only succeeded in throwing the Blood Empress into the endless abyss after she gave birth to you and was at her weakest.”

“Since the Blood Empress died eight hundred years ago, why did you still try to kill me? Why did Emperor Qing still invade the Central Shengming Empire?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Because there was intel that Emperor Ming did not kill the Blood Empress. Instead, he was being controlled by her and becoming her puppet,” said Chi Yao.

“Who was the source of the intel?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“That is not the point. What is important is that Emperor Qing persuaded Emperor Wen and used the Chessboard of the World to deduce if the Blood Empress was still alive. It was good enough to know that the Blood Empress was still alive!”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes turned red. “So all of you conspired to kill my father and overthrow the Central Shengming Empire’s government? Then, you also killed your fiancé with your sword and got rid of me?”

“That is correct,” Chi Yao replied after a few moments of silence.

“Did we... I mean, used to... love each other when I was sixteen?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

There was a prolonged silence from Chi Yao this time. She then chuckled self-deprecatingly. “Love? Maybe, but that was eight hundred years ago. How can I recall the thoughts in my mind after so many ages? I have long forgotten about it.

“Do not tell me you are still so naïve to think that I continue to have feelings for you now, Zhang Ruochen? If so, you had better perish the thought. You are just a useful pawn in the eyes of the gods. Are you not a pawn to Yueshen too?”

“Knock it off!” Kong Lanyou snapped.

However, Chi Yao ignored her. “Since you are just a pawn one way or another, why don’t you come back to the Kunlun Realm and work for me? You will have more to gain under me. You will be second only to me. You could help the Central Shengming Empire’s former officials, get the fiefdom that everyone covets, and cultivate inside the Celestial Wheel’s saintly source.”

That was an insult! That was definitely an insult!

The fire of anger burned in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. As he raised his arms, thirteen dragon souls and thirteen elephant souls appeared with earth-shattering roars.

Swhoosh!

He struck at Chi Yao with his palms, but his hands halted 30 meters from her, stopped by an invisible force.

He felt as though he had hit an invisible iron mountain. Sacred blood spurted out of his mouth as a powerful rebound force sent him flying back like a scarecrow.

Chi Yao hissed. “How dare a Saint King like you try to fight a god! You have overestimated yourself, Zhang Ruochen. If you do not want to be a pawn, you have to achieve the Supreme Saint rank first, or even better, transcend and become a god. Only then will you earn my respect. For now, you are a nobody, a mortal who can make no difference. Okay, maybe not. You are a useful pawn at least.”

Using her almost boneless-looking soft hand, Chi Yao held Zhang Ruochen up in the air, and the Chaotic Space-Time

Lotus immediately flew into her hand from Zhang Ruochen's body.

“Let's go!”

Chi Yao took the Oracle as well and was about to leave with Kong Lanyou.

“Wait a second.”

Yueshen supported Zhang Ruochen, who was wounded, and wiped off the bloodstain on his mouth. “Let me correct your mistake. Zhang Ruochen is not my pawn; we are working together.”

Zhang Ruochen slowly looked up at Yueshen with a surprised expression on his face.

In the past, he used to emphasize that he and Yueshen were equal partners. But deep down, he knew very well that in terms of cultivation and strength, he was not in the same league and not an equal partner of Yueshen—he was still a pawn.

Chi Yao turned around and looked at Yueshen's affectionate treatment of Zhang Ruochen. Her pupils contracted as her eyelids moved, but no one saw that subtle reaction of hers.

Yueshen stared at Chi Yao with her beautiful eyes and said, “Yes, I am defending Zhang Ruochen. But he has lent me a million Sainthood Sources, enabling the Guanghan Realm to train a vast number of Saints in just two years.

“Besides, he has also lent me his sacred medicine for me to achieve a speedy recovery. In the Celestial Domain of Truth, he was of great help to the Guanghan Realm. The truth is, I owe him more than he owes me.”

“Let's make it clear, Chi Yao, I was borrowing. Have you ever heard of someone borrowing from her pawns? If you know nothing about my relationship with Zhang Ruochen, please refrain from passing remarks.”

Yueshen's words jabbed her like needles.

Yet, no one knew what was in Chi Yao's mind. “How generous of him,” she sneered.

“Since you have Saint Monk Xumi’s Oracle, I will not stop you from taking the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus. Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen has been of great help to the Kunlun Realm, so how can you leave just like that? He may not want any reward from you, but I cannot bear to see him get shortchanged. He deserves something in return from you. By the looks of things, Saint Monk Xumi’s Oracle seems impressive. Leave it behind!”

Earlier, Yueshen had been observing Zhang Ruochen and realized that he was very interested in Saint Monk Xumi’s Oracle.

[1] Formerly translated as Orion God

Chapter 1770 - The Arrival of the Gods at Mount Yueshen

Chapter 1770: The Arrival of the Gods at Mount Yueshen

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Chi Yao gazed at the Oracle jade in her hand. Its divine glow had started to dim by then. “All right, here you go!”

The round Oracle jade suddenly spun, and a light beam shot out from it, creating a massive shock wave.

Zhang Ruochen looked ahead and saw that the shock wave had turned the rules of heaven and earth in Guanghan Temple upside down.

The palm-sized jade had enlarged, covering the entire sky, and it was now falling toward Zhang Ruochen.

One could imagine what the falling jade could do to the earth upon impact.

Yueshen extended her fair hand, and moonlight glowed at the tips of her fingers. She caught the Oracle in her hand and effortlessly neutralized the Oracle’s divine power before she handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

After he kept the Oracle with him and ran out of Guanghan Temple, Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the entrance with a grave expression. “I have something for you in return, Chi Yao!”

He took out the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

and opened the silver book.

Its pages flipped rapidly as countless silver light curtains divided the surroundings into dozens of partitions.

Following that, a towering temple immediately rushed out of the silver light curtains.

Beams of overpowering Saint Path energy caused the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

to vibrate in Zhang Ruochen's hands. The beams of Saint Path energy were so powerful that they overlapped with one another. Not even the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

could suppress them.

While the temple was still in midair, the Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm rushed out of it like bees out of their hive. Their weapons were activated and glowing like stars in their hands.

Those on the ground who gazed up into the sky could see what might have looked like the wonder of a thousand stars encircling the moon.

“How dare you try to suppress me, Zhang Ruochen! Do you know who I am?”

“You got cocky only because you had a secret spatial weapon. Now that I have regained freedom, you will be the first person I am going to kill.”

“I knew all along that Zhang Ruochen would not dare to kill us! Let us go forth at once and cut him into pieces.”

...

Ensnared by Zhang Ruochen in the temple, the arrogant Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings had felt humiliated. Their anger and resentment had arrived at a tipping point.

But soon, they discovered that divine energy was flowing between Heaven and Earth.

They looked in the divine-energy flow's direction.

Their hearts sank, and they choked when they saw Chi Yao and Yueshen, who were as beautiful as fairies. It was as if the sun and moon were radiating their light through the universe.

“It’s-It’s the gods...” someone quivered.

Chi Yao’s eyes appeared frosty, and her invisible might surged like a giant wave at sea. “The audacity of you lot!”

The Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings in the sky suddenly dropped like flies to the ground. Some of them quickly pulled themselves up, shivering while kneeling on the ground. Some could not even find the strength to get up.

Watching from afar, Zhang Ruochen was unnerved. In the eyes of ordinary cultivators, the Saint Kings were absolute overlords, legends of the Saint Path. Yet, they could not even get up before a god. Chi Yao was right; the Saint Kings were just mortals, abbreviated pieces of nothing in her eyes.

He clenched his fists and desperately wanted more strength.

With his current level of cultivation, he still had a long way to go before he could achieve divinity and be on an equal footing with the gods. Nonetheless, obtaining the power that could withstand divine forces and enable him to talk to the gods with his head high was not a far-off dream.

Zhang Ruochen gently touched the Oracle of Saint Monk Xumi, his eyes filled with energy.

If he could find Lieshen’s Divine Star Soul and control the Orion Eight Stars, he would not fear the divine force. Even Chi Yao could only kill but not insult him.

“It was the Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm who massacred the elites of the Kunlun Realm. As the god of the Kunlun Realm, what would you do with them?” said Zhang Ruochen. “The cultivators of the Kunlun Realm were just carrying out your orders to attack Xumi Dojo, so they died because of you.”

His voice was so loud that even the Guanghai Realm’s cultivators who were cultivating in the Tongyou Sacred Realm could hear it.

Many of the cultivators were shocked. They looked toward Mount Yueshen as a terrifying divine force came from Mount Yueshen.

“Chi Yao? Is she the Empress of the Kunlun Realm?”

“The Empress must be here. Her divine force is totally different from that of Yueshen; it is so much more powerful and oppressive.”

“Look, those Saint Kings are kneeling on Mount Yueshen. Among them are angels and elves. Could the Divine Envoy have captured them?”

“Will Empress Chi Yao, kill those Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm?”

A Saint King, who had lived over a thousand years, shook his head. “She will not. Among those Saint Kings kneeling on the ground are Xun Ya, the Fane of Bloody War’s young leader, and Wang Xu, the son of the Ruiya Realm’s deity. Besides, there are also the sons and daughters of other deities and emperors. Killing them will surely earn the Heavenly Realm’s wrath, and the Kunlun Realm cannot afford to provoke them now.”

...

Chi Yao was unintimidated. She instantly read Zhang Ruochen’s mind and knew what he was up to. “Very good, Zhang Ruochen. This is a wonderful gift! Ambushing and killing the Kunlun Realm’s cultivators is the greatest crime of all. I will hand down my judgment today—an eye for an eye.”

All of the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings were terrified. This was it! They would surely die if a god demanded it.

Just then, an ear-shattering divine voice came from above.

“Show some mercy, Empress!”

Boom!

The sky turned dark as black clouds abruptly appeared, and a star with a 1,800-mile diameter shot out of the clouds.

It slowly descended until it was hovering above Mount Yueshen.

Upon closer inspection, one would find that it was not a star but a black tower.

The moment the black tower appeared, billions of cold light beams, each powerful enough to cut Heaven and Earth in half, pierced through the sky.

A woman resembling Wang Xu, wearing purple-gold body armor, walked out of the black tower. A black maelstrom ten times the size of the black tower was behind the woman.

She was Wang Hanyou or Youshen, Wang Xu's divine mother.

Youshen could not bear to see Wang Xu kneeling on the ground, and she felt angry.

"Empress, spare him. The Kunlun Realm is still relatively unstable since it has just returned to the Celestial Court. Are you trying to provoke everyone?" Youshen fought back her anger and tried to talk nicely.

"I do not intend to provoke anyone. I just want to judge those sinners who deserve death. Youshen, are you here for your son, Wang Xu or here to take all of the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings with you?"

Chi Yao had never met Youshen before, but with the power of a god, Chi Yao could instantly make out her identity.

"You cannot afford to offend the Heavenly Realm. The right thing to do is to hand over all of the Saint Kings to me. That may help reduce the conflict between the Kunlun Realm and the Heavenly Realm," said Youshen.

"Since the day I started my journey of cultivation, I have never known what the 'right thing to do' means. Could you enlighten me, Youshen?" Chi Yao sneered.

"What an arrogant rookie deity. You think too highly of yourself, and you have never intended to compromise. Yanshen, Bloodlord Sijia, reveal yourselves!" Youshen ordered.

A ball of flame, which was several hundred miles in diameter, burst out of thin air to form a ring of fire.

Yanshen, glowing in tricolor light, walked out of the ring of fire. The land turned into a red-hot sea of lava sea as the heat from his body melted several thousand square miles of earth below him.

Immediately after, a seven-hundred-mile-long flying dragon flew into the Shatuo Domain. It was pulling along a blood-red chariot from thousands of miles away.

There were a couple thousand weaves of precepts on the dragon's body, and its aura made every Demi Saint, Saint, as well as Saint King, grovel on the ground.

What was even more horrifying was the divine force that was emanating from the chariot. It caused mountains to fall, rivers to dry up, and lands to subside wherever it went.

The flying dragon, which was hauling the blood-red chariot, had flown across several hundred thousand miles and arrived in Mount Yueshen's vicinity in the span of just a breath.

A burly old man with red hair alighted from the chariot, and a sea of blood, thousands of square miles in size, condensed under his feet, covering the entire Tongyou Sacred Realm.

Wang Xu and the Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm were overjoyed. Since Youshen, Yanshen, and Bloodlord Sijia had personally made an appearance, the empress of the Kunlun Realm would have no choice but to let them go.

After all, the empress had only achieved her divinity not long ago. She was too inexperienced.

In contrast, these three deities from the Heavenly Realm had very impressive backgrounds. Even Youshen, the youngest among them, had thirty thousand years of cultivation under her belt. She was in a different league from a rookie deity.

When the three powerful gods arrived at the Shatuo Domain, not only did the cultivators of the Guanghan Realm and Kunlun Realm quake in their boots, but the cultivators of the Greater Demonic Realm, Zifu Realm, and Hellblade Realm cowered on the ground too. They were plagued by a world-ending fear.

“Chi Yao, hand over Wang Xu and the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings, and I promise I will save you from more humiliation,” Youshen sneered. Instead of addressing Chi Yao as “Empress”, she directly called her by her name.

“The Celestial Palace does not want to see infighting among the major realms, so it has quietly agreed for us to bring these young men from the Heavenly Realm out of here. I will use saint stones as compensation for the Kunlun Realm in exchange for their lives. If you are smart enough, take up the offer, swallow your pride, and accept the compromise,” said Yanshen.

Bloodlord Sijia, the burly old man, guffawed. “The Heavenly Realm is the western universe’s dominant realm, ruling all the major realms including the Kunlun Realm and Guanghan Realm. A rookie god like you should pay more attention to guarding the dilapidated Kunlun Realm and stop being nosy. Crossing the Heavenly Realm will do you no good.”

Chapter 1771 - Gods at War

Chapter 1771: Gods at War

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

“Swallow my pride? Accept the compromise? I have never known these words in my entire life.”

Chi Yao might have been a woman, but she was proud and unrelenting even though the three gods before her had far longer experience in cultivation.

“If you make a mistake, you get punished. Just like the Heavenly Realm, there are certain lines you do not cross when it comes to the Kunlun Realm. Things will not end well if you do; there are no exceptions for the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings and gods.”

There was a dazzling bloody glow in Chi Yao’s hand, and the Blood Dripper appeared. It was red as if blood was dripping down the blade.

Then, streaks of blood-red energy shot out from the sword and pierced through the bodies of the Heavenly Realm’s Saint Kings.

Whenever someone was hit by the Blood Dripper’s sword energy, their bodies would be sucked dry of their blood. Even the Saint Kings were instantly reduced to mummies.

Youshen had already sensed something wrong the moment Chi Yao summoned her Blood Dripper. “You are asking for trouble.” Her eyes reddened as she snapped.

From thousands of miles away, Youshen thrust her hand out, and an elusive shadow shot out of her palm.

It traveled toward Chi Yao, who was on the platform, at a speed beyond the perception of the Saint King cultivators.

It was an attack in the form of spiritual power.

The power was extremely succinct, and almost all of it was concentrated in the black shadow. The spiritual power that escaped out was tiny yet horrifying.

With the exception of Zhang Ruochen and others who were under Yueshen's protection, other cultivators from other realms buried their heads in their hands. They screamed in pain and dropped to the ground, passing out as their eyes, nose, ears, and mouth bled.

Equipped with a god-level inscription, Yueshen could resist the spiritual-power attack and keep the others alive.

However, beyond her range of protection, in a thirty-thousand-square-mile area outside the Tongyou Sacred Realm, where she was, countless living beings were experiencing extreme headaches. It was as if their Saint souls were shattering and minds were breaking down.

A god's attack was not something that the cultivators of the realm could fathom. Even the smallest stray shock wave could affect the living beings on Earth.

As quick as Youshen was, she was still a bit too late. By the time her spiritual-power attack reached Chi Yao, over half of the Heavenly Realm's Saint Kings had turned into mummified bodies. Their Saint blood had flowed into the Blood Dripper.

Chi Yao had no choice but to temporarily stop her killing spree and hold up the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus.

Her hand seemed like an endless plane with five fingers as the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus emanated a dazzling light on her palm. The light illuminated not only the thirty-thousand-square-mile area around Tongyou Sacred Realm but also the Shatuo Domain.

The entire world was lit up brightly.

The spiritual-power shadow dissipated as the light wiped it out before it reached Chi Yao.

“That is all you have after thirty thousand years of cultivation, Youshen?”

Chi Yao glanced at her with contempt.

It was the contempt of an empress, which outdid the contempt of every other living being on Earth.

Youshen was extraordinary. Any living being would quake in its boots and revere her. Who would dare to act with contempt in front of her?

Angered, Youshen raised her hand to point at the sky, and the dark clouds above the black tower receded like the tide. They left behind a round hole in the air and a vast starry sky.

Once that happened, the starlight fell and converged at the top of the black tower, on which billions of mysterious patterns appeared. The energy that flowed out of it was even more terrifying.

Heaven and Earth turned dark. The dark energy devoured the light from the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus while it spread toward Mount Yueshen.

Zhang Ruochen stood behind Yueshen under the protection of her divine light. Even so, he still felt a chill run up his spine as he saw the looming darkness. The Saint Qi and blood in his body froze.

Holding his breath, he glanced over at Supreme Saint Manjian, who also looked back at him and forced out a smile.

Even the Supreme Saint was scared stiff, realizing that he was just a speck of dust before what was coming.

In the Shatuo Domain, a demonic emperor emerged from his demon fane and let out a sigh as he looked toward Mount Yueshen. “When the stars fall and the You Tower is activated, the war between gods is inevitable.”

The demonic emperor instantly released his demon energy, swept up all the cultivators in the demon fane, and brought them out of the Shatuo Domain.

In the Zifu Realm, one of the seven realms in the Shatuo Domain, a god, who had been hibernating for many years,

woke up in a sea of purple fog.

“What for? The Kunlun Realm has been in a decline. Just when there is a glimpse of hope with the birth of a young god, it wants to fight against the Heavenly Realm. Why can't it just compromise and be accommodating?” He breathed a sigh of helplessness, lamenting the vicissitudes of life.

All the gods in the Shatuo Domain's seven realms were alerted.

They all believed that those young gods in the Kunlun Realm were too keen to show how good they were, not knowing how to hide their abilities and keep a low profile.

They should have lived within their means since the Kunlun Realm had declined.

The Shatuo Domain's seven realms were the weakest in the western universe. So, the gods of those seven realms had a great understanding of their responsibilities, which were taking care of a billion lives, passing down civilizations, and maintaining the dignity of their worlds.

Sometimes, even gods like them had to humble themselves and do things they despised for the survival of their worlds as well as civilizations. That way, the living beings within their realm would not be enslaved and become food for others.

They lived with the hope that someday, heroes might rise up and make their worlds great again. There was still hope as long as they lived.

Chi Yao was different, apparently.

She could keep her head low and even grin and bear it, but whenever someone crossed the line, she would not swallow the humiliation. Surviving at the expense of dignity was not what she and the Kunlun Realm ascribed to. She would rather die in battle. If death was inevitable, she would make sure that her enemy paid a heavy price for it.

Chi Yao muttered as she lifted the Blood Dropper, and it shot out a powerful beam of blood light.

It tore the darkness apart and collided with the star-sized You Tower.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen felt a sharp pain in his ears. He looked at the shocking scene from afar but could hear nothing.

The blood-red divine power and black one formed into a circle and spread in all directions. Down below, the hills, as well as lakes, which looked like piles of sand and puddles the size of a fist were instantly flattened, becoming a desert.

Standing at 1,800 miles tall, the You Tower crumbled and fell to the ground.

Pieces of debris as small as fingernails could create gigantic craters across the land that was several dozen square miles when they hit the earth.

The bigger ones were more damaging. The earth and surrounding space were shattered, turning into a pitch-dark void.

Not just the Tongyou Sacred Realm, but several nearby realms were also destroyed.

Luckily for the cultivators, the Supreme Saints of those realms had evacuated most of them out of the Shatuo Domain. Otherwise, those living beings would have faced the horrible fate of extinction.

People looked at the broken, black You Tower in shock because they could not believe what they had seen.

Even the gods from the Shatuo Domain's seven realms sucked through their teeth upon seeing what happened.

Youshen was transfixed. "How is this possible? The You Tower is made of Hanyou Iron, a dark matter. It is one of the ten god-level matters, so how did you smash it with just one strike of your sword?"

The ten god-level matters were the most extreme matters in the universe. They were necessary materials for making ultimate weapons.

“Substance of Creation... Your sword is made of that substance,” Youshen said in a low voice.

Chi Yao stood in the void, dressed in a fine silk robe. Holding the Blood Dripper with one hand and the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus with the other, she looked down at Youshen beneath her. “You are not that much more powerful than Jueshen, whom I killed.”

Her words were grating to the ear, and Youshen almost went ballistic.

“You must have a death wish!”

“Dingxinghai!” Youshen roared.

A black divine column, measuring at 29,400 meters long, propelled out from the heart of the broken You Tower.

The name of the column was Dingxinghai.

Dingxinghai was the core of the You Tower, and it was made of some dark matter. However, this dark matter, called Dark True Iron, was even more precious than Hanyou Iron.

If Youshen summoned her full might, she could use the column to halt the motion of the stars in the universe.

Youshen held Dingxinghai and struck Chi Yao with it.

Yanshen and Bloodlord Sijia exchanged looks before they joined hands to face Chi Yao head-on.

With a flick of his hand, Yanshen summoned a Divine Purification Flame, which transformed into a giant hand, and aimed it at Chi Yao’s head.

The powerful flaming hand shattered space, tearing apart countless space fissures, each of which was thousands of miles in length.

Zhang Ruochen watched with bated breath. His attainment of the Path of Dimension was still too insignificant in front of the gods.

With his current level of cultivation, it was difficult for him to tear open a 30-meter-long space fissure in the Heavenly

Realm. But with their power, the gods could effortlessly rip open several-thousand-mile-long space fissures.

Bloodlord Sijia's hands were completely covered in precepts. Using his hand like a sword, he attacked Chi Yao from afar.

One thing was obvious; Bloodlord Sijia's power was far greater than that of Youshen and Yanshen. The strike cut all the pillars of Heaven and Earth in half, turning the dimension into a land of forbidden paths.

It was extremely baleful for three gods to be against one, who was a rookie with less than a thousand years of cultivation.

The Shatuo gods from the Greater Demonic Realm, Zifu Realm, Tianmu Realm, and others sighed. The Celestial Palace's inaction at this stage meant that the Heavenly Realm had obviously come prepared.

That god from the Kunlun Realm would most likely meet her end today.

Right then, a ring of white light that was 30 meters in diameter appeared under Yueshen's feet. "Do not step out of the light ring," Yueshen telepathically said to Zhang Ruochen and the others.

Yueshen flew up into the air above Mount Yueshen, her beautiful fairy-like body glowing. "Death is the only punishment for those who trespass the Guanghan Realm, those who wound its cultivators, and those who create trouble on Mount Yueshen."

Chapter 1772 - How Great Yueshen Used to Be

Chapter 1772: How Great Yueshen Used to Be

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

A Sun-moon Crystal Coffin flew out of Yueshen's sleeve, dividing the sky above and the earth below into two distinct poles.

The sky above the coffin was pitch-dark all over with only a soft glow that marked the moon. Meanwhile, the earth below the coffin was dazzlingly bright with a sun that burned like the fire in a divine furnace.

It looked as if Heaven and Earth had flipped upside down.

The Sun-moon Crystal Coffin flew straight at Bloodlord Sijia with such a powerful momentum that it tore apart the patterns surrounding his body before it forcefully hit him.

Awoo!

Bloodlord Sijia let out a howl that shook the sky and simultaneously raised his body as he grew and turned into a 1,800-meter-tall giant demon.

Boom!

It struck its target.

The blood sea that stretched out thousands of square miles under Bloodlord Sijia's feet immediately broke apart.

The impact from the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin broke Bloodlord Sijia's arms before it hit him straight in his chest.

Divine blood spurting out of his mouth as the force sent him flying back as far as thirty thousand miles.

Following that, the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin penetrated his chest and flew out of his back. It was horrifying.

Be they the Supreme Saints or gods, the jaws of the cultivators who were looking at Mount Yueshen dropped to the ground. They all felt a chill travel up their spines even though they were a great distance away.

Yueshen had hit an ancient god and sent him flying thirty thousand miles back.

The blow left behind a large hole in Bloodlord Sijia's chest, and his divine body was covered in cracks. The divine blood that oozed out of his body covered the entire thirty-thousand-mile stretch. Each drop of blood impacted the earth, creating bloody craters that were a dozen miles across.

It was as if a group of asteroids had hit the earth.

The flying dragon, which was hauling the chariot, was too close to Bloodlord Sijia. It could not escape in time and became a dead dragon after it got hit by the shock wave from the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin.

The seven-hundred-mile-long dragon carcass fell to the earth. The land shook violently, and clouds of dust rose into the air as it impacted the earth.

“Well done, Yueshen! The Heavenly Realm has learned its lesson today!”

“Yueshen lives up to her reputation as the Guanghai Realm's guardian god. I am proud of being one of its residents.”

...

Far away in the Guanghai Realm, the cultivators were all emotional as the humiliation that they had suffered for the past hundred thousand years had been avenged.

They had been forced to endure shame for the past hundred thousand years without Yueshen. The cultivators went down on their knees, bowing before Yueshen.

Bloodlord Sijia's body had been torn into pieces, but he quickly recovered. Gods were immortal and could reform their bodies.

The only time a god would die was when the god's Divine Star Soul was shattered, or when the god's body was smashed into fine particles, or when the god's mind, spirit, and qi were destroyed completely.

Of course, there were a few other ways to kill a god, but carrying out any of them was next to impossible.

It was too difficult to kill gods.

After the heavy blow, Bloodlord Sijia's Divine Star Soul was now not as bright as before.

"It has just been two years. How did you recover your divine power so fast?" Bloodlord Sijia looked at Yueshen as fear filled his eyes.

Yueshen was already brutally powerful in the Celestial Palace a hundred thousand years ago.

Had Bloodlord Sijia known that Yueshen had recovered her divine power, he would not have dared to come to the Shatuo Domain and pick a fight with her on Mount Yueshen.

Yueshen had enough reason to kill them based on what the three gods had done.

Before the three gods arrived, they had thought that no one could stop them in the Shatuo Domain. Hence, they had been so arrogant and carrying out wanton killing. Many cultivators lost their lives as a result.

But right then, Bloodlord Sijia regretted it.

Blackie and Awesome, the Little Taoist poked their heads out behind Zhang Ruochen's sleeves, one on each side.

Blackie gurgled as he swallowed. "The divine blood and flesh that are dropping off the god's body is good stuff. Why don't you collect them, Zhang Ruochen?"

Awesome, the Little Taoist's eyes brightened up. "Divine blood that has been stored for years cannot rival the divine

blood that is freshly oozing out of the god's body. Other than qi, the blood also contains a mysterious power that only gods can understand. This power is a necessary ingredient in making a Heavenly Divine Pill or other more potent stuff.”

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes; these two fellows could not have been greedier.

Even the Supreme Saint dragon got killed after it was caught in the crossfire. How could they have the guts to go out to harvest the divine blood and flesh?

Bloodlord Sijia was losing too much blood. Taking a deep breath, he summoned a strong divine wind to sweep the divine blood from the ground up toward him.

However, Blood Dripper shot out and absorbed all of the divine blood before it flew back into Chi Yao's hand, leaving a trail of its afterimage.

Bloodlord Sijia was furious. “How dare you take my divine blood!”

“You cannot possibly kill me on your own. Instead, you should be worried that Mount Yueshen will be your final resting place,” Chi Yao said to Bloodlord Sijia while she shot Yueshen a sideways glance.

Bloodlord Sijia's heart skipped a beat as he looked at Yueshen again.

“Do not be intimidated. As far as I know, Yueshen has not only exhausted her divine power entirely but also her Divine Star Soul and qi during the last battle a hundred thousand years ago. There is no way she could have recovered so quickly. I am afraid that she might have drained the last drop of her strength when she dished out that move earlier.”

Just like Shang Ziyang, Yanshen's cultivation exercise was the Way of the Three Corpses.

His divine body split into three, and as the flames surged, his body grew increasingly larger. It was as if a several-hundred-meter-tall god of fire was standing in the sky.

Zhang Ruochen and the others could not get a clear view of Yanshen's body. All they saw was three suns suspended above Mount Yueshen. The heat emanating from those three suns were thousands of times more horrible than that of the sun. If it had not been for Yueshen's light ring, the heat would have melted them all.

"Yanshen is too terrifyingly powerful. He has equally powerful bodies, and his strength is way greater than that of other gods."

"Techniques like the Way of the Three Corpses should not exist in this world."

The cultivators of the seven realms in the Shatuo Domain sighed as they shook their heads.

The arrival of those three gods at Mount Yueshen had already given them an advantage. Since their strength had increased so much that it was as if there were five gods among them, their advantage had multiplied significantly enough to crush any opponent.

"Divine Purification Flame!"

"Silencing Skyfire!"

"Annihilation Astral Flare!"

Yanshen's three corpses blasted three different flames with overpowering energy toward Mount Yueshen.

"Yueshen, I did not get to witness how great you used to be a hundred thousand years ago. Nevertheless, it does not matter if you have really recovered; this is no longer your era. It is your misfortune for bumping into me. Today, you will get to experience the power of the three flames!"

As the three corpses clapped their hands together concurrently, three flames twisted together to generate more violent energy.

Standing at the center of a lunar mark, Yueshen looked otherworldly with an aloof charm. "What a naïve child!" She sighed, shaking her head.

Yueshen extended her beautiful hand, and a massive hand materialized to clash head-on with the flames, smashing them

into a rain of fire.

Yanshen could not believe what was happening; his most powerful move had been defeated so easily.

While he was still in shock, the giant white hand came down and caught his three corpses. Three explosions ensued as the corpses were crushed into pieces. Chunks of body parts, still burning with fire, were blown away in all directions.

At that moment, all of the Shatuo Domain's Supreme Saints and great emperors quaked in their boots and nearly went down on their knees.

Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia's expressions changed. They quickly summoned up the precepts of Heaven and Earth in their bodies, then fled the Shatuo Domain as quickly as they could.

Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!

They would be safe as long as they made it out of the Shatuo Domain.

Chapter 1773 - Traitor and Junior

Chapter 1773: Traitor and Junior

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

The Shatuo Domain was large—it was so vast that it took Saint Kings almost a month to make it across the domain.

However, Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia had arrived at the edge of the domain in just a split second.

They were delighted, thinking that as long as they made it out of the Shatuo Domain and into another realm, Yueshen would not dare to pursue them.

At first, they had thought of taking the opportunity to defeat Empress Chi Yao and Yueshen to establish the Heavenly Realm's standing. Yet, they failed, and things ended up the other way around.

It was their fault; they had underestimated the enemy and caused themselves to flee with their tails between their legs. They were completely humiliated, but they had been too naïve for thinking like that.

“Do you really think that the Shatuo Domain is a place where you can come and go on a whim?”

Without warning, Yueshen appeared, standing on the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin in front of them. A silver moon rose behind her and blocked Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia's escape route as it gradually grew larger.

“How did she manage to be so quick?”

Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia's hearts skipped a beat.

They did not want to end up like Yanshen. Exchanging looks with each other, the two gods got off their high horse and cupped their hands in an apologetic gesture.

“Youshen and I trespassed the Shatuo Domain with the intention of saving lives. We did not mean to disrespect you. We will definitely give you a heads-up the next time when we visit,” said Bloodlord Sijia.

Youshen was extremely beautiful, although not as beautiful as Yueshen and Chi Yao. “Since the Kunlun Realm’s rookie god was killing innocent lives, we had no choice but to intervene. Bloodlord Sijia, Yanshen, and I will make up for the losses that the Guanghai Realm has suffered,” Youshen explained.

Yanshen was not dead; he was just badly wounded.

Right before Yanshen’s divine body crumbled, Empress Chi Yao had soaked up a vast volume of his divine blood with her Blood Dropper sword.

Yanshen might have reconstructed his divine body, but he was only half as healthy as before. Without a divine spring or medication, he might not be able to fully recover even after a hundred years.

He could not have been angrier right then. He hated Yueshen, not to mention Empress Chi Yao.

However, he knew that since he could not defeat Yueshen, he should not stay in the Shatuo Domain any longer. So, he fled in another direction.

Yet, Empress Chi Yao refused to let him go. She pursued him, shooting beam after beam of sword energy and aggravating Yanshen’s injury.

Yanshen gritted his teeth with fire in his mouth. “This is too much, Chi Yao! I dare you to wait for me to recover my full strength. Then, we will fight one-on-one under the starry sky!”

“You are not qualified to fight with me,” Empress Chi Yao said.

Blood spurted out of Yanshen’s mouth as he could not take the insult. How dare a rookie god with only a few years of

experience look down on him?

The Chaotic Space-Time Lotus erupted in a bright luminescence again, shooting a beam of light at Yanshen. The strike left behind a deep wound in Yanshen's back, and more divine blood oozed out of his body. Yanshen was furious as he fled. "Once the battle is ignited in the Kunlun Realm, the Heavenly Realm will surely wipe all of you out, banishing every single one of you to the bottom of the abyss. By then, none of you will be able to recover."

Boom!

The Chaotic Space-Time Lotus' energy destroyed thousands of square miles of land, tearing the dimension apart like a piece of paper to reveal the dark void inside.

Yanshen was forced to retreat into the void, but Empress Chi Yao had no intention of letting him go. She went into the void to pursue him.

The void had the power to destroy everything, yet divine power could still withstand its destructive force.

As long as there was no great danger inside, Chi Yao could still survive in the void for some time.

Of course, she needed to get out as soon as possible. Otherwise, the power of the void would still eat into her.

Outside Guanghan Temple at Mount Yueshen, a demonic shadow ripped open the dimension and emerged from the void.

It was a demon with a Hexagonal Warhammer in his right hand. He had a pair of horns on his head, and his body as massive as a hill.

With a wave of his left hand, he drew all of the Heavenly Realm's remaining Saint Kings into a scroll. Immediately after, his eyes landed on Zhang Ruochen and the others inside the ring of divine light.

"Do you really think that a tiny divine ring can protect them?"

The demon sneered, and his eyes turned dark like a pair of super-powerful black holes that was about to suck the Saint

souls of Zhang Ruochen and the others.

“Sh*t! There is one more god here...”

The second that thought came to mind, Zhang Ruochen felt something strike his Saint soul before his consciousness started to fade.

Looking out, he saw the Saint souls of the cultivators inside the ring leave them.

Supreme Saint Manjian had the highest cultivation attainment and could withstand the stare. He bent down to press his hands on the divine pattern that Yueshen left behind on the ring, injecting his power into it.

“The ‘Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens’ Grand Formation!” Supreme Saint Manjian roared.

Starting from the center of the divine-patterned ring, countless inscriptions appeared all over Mount Yueshen as an ancient matrix was activated.

The white Mount Yueshen instantly turned blood-red.

Once the stare was defeated, the demon was forced to take two steps back.

As that happened, the Saint souls returned to Zhang Ruochen and the others’ bodies.

In contrast to Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and Awesome, the Little Taoist who remained standing, the other cultivators had dropped to the ground.

Blackie and Awesome were not any better, though; their heads sank into their necks as they hid in Zhang Ruochen’s clothing.

The demon put on an apologetic smile. “I see. This divine ring pattern is the key to activating the Blood Moon Swallowing Heaven Formation. No wonder Yueshen seems so secure about leaving all of you here while she gives chase to Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia. What a shame. With only a Supreme Saint, the power is not enough to drive the entire Blood Moon Swallowing Heaven Formation.”

The demon raised his Hexagonal Warhammer and jumped up into the air before he sent a minor tremor throughout Mount Yueshen as he landed. His Warhammer instantly struck the divine ring pattern with a loud boom.

Dazzling light flared out from the ring, and a powerful shock wave spread a few thousand miles from Mount Yueshen in all directions.

The Warhammer was stopped, but inside the ring, Supreme Saint Manjian began to spit blood.

Before he could react, the demon had descended on them with another strike.

His arrival at Mount Yueshen was not only to save lives but also to tie up all the loose ends, and that loose end was Zhang Ruochen.

The moment the demon appeared at Mount Yueshen, Empress Chi Yao and Yueshen's faces changed, realizing that the Heavenly Realm had tricked them.

Empress Chi Yao summoned the power of the Chaotic Space-Time Lotus, trying to use its dimensional jump to travel across a hundred thousand miles to return to Mount Yueshen.

Unfortunately, a huge demonic hand broke the dimension and struck her, sending her flying back.

Soon after, a massive body appeared in front of Empress Chi Yao.

The current demon appeared identical to the demon on Mount Yueshen, but its body was at least ten times larger, and its energy was far stronger than Yanshen's. This demon looked like a majestic ancient mountain as his head reached the sky and his feet touched the earth.

In fact, this was his actual body. The demon on Mount Yueshen was just a clone of his divine will.

Empress Chi Yao's expression became cold when she saw the demon. "This is unexpected, Blackheart Demonlord.

Apparently, you are the Kunlun Realm's traitor. I am really surprised that someone like you managed to survive the Yuanhui Tribulation and live to see the second tribulation."

“I have never been a living being of the Kunlun Realm, so naturally, you cannot count me as a traitor of this realm.” Blackheart Demonlord looked down at Empress Chi Yao, who seemed like a speck of dust in his eyes. Every word he said was forceful and loud.

“If the Kunlun Realm had not imparted you with civility and teachings, giving you all the methods of cultivation, how could you have become a god and how could the Blackdemon Realm have become a part of the Celestial Court? Without the Kunlun Realm, the Infernal Court would have found you and made all of you their dinner. The entire realm would have been destroyed,” said Empress Chi Yao.

“I have become what I am today through my own effort. The Kunlun Realm’s help is merely auxiliary. Looking back on my days of cultivating and learning in the Kunlun Realm, did not I grin and bear every humiliation I received? I have come a long way, and my attainment today is a testament of it,” Blackheart Demonlord declared.

“Your current achievement only proves one thing: the Kunlun Realm raised you as a human, yet you willingly became a running dog for the Heavenly Realm,” Empress Chi Yao retorted.

Blackheart Demonlord hissed and proceeded to punch Empress Chi Yao. Just as he was about to do that, a stone tablet the size of a star appeared, and the air in the Shatuo Domain stood still for a moment.

In the shadow of the stone tablet was an abstruse pattern representing one of the drawings on the Demonstone Engraving

1

.

...

Meanwhile, Yueshen was furious. She thrust both of her hands out and smashed Youshen, as well as Bloodlord Sijia’s body before she hurried back to Mount Yueshen.

Just then, a blood vortex formed in the sky and engulfed her.

The blood vortex was so large that it possessed mass-destruction energy, powerful enough to roll up all the mountains and rivers in its wake.

Yueshen cocked an eyebrow and looked at the sky with a grave expression on her face.

In the vortex's eye, thousands of miles away, she saw a middle-aged man with eight blood wings on his back. He was holding a whisk and moving his wrist slowly.

The man was Bloodlord Erjia from the Fane of Bloody War.

“You really made it to divinity. What a surprise!” Yueshen exclaimed.

The man snickered. “We have only met once. I am flattered that a figure like you can still remember a junior character like me, Senior Yueshen. You once said that I had great potential and would attain divinity someday. Your words have motivated me and become my inspiration. Even during the hardest time of my life, during the most hopeless moment, I found the strength to go on when those words came to mind. After a hundred thousand years, I can finally tell you, Yueshen, that I did it!”

He no longer addressed Yueshen as his senior and himself as a junior at the end of his statement. He was proud of the fact that he was finally Yueshen's equal.

“You? If you are thinking about defeating me, you can dream on. Your teacher, Jiatianxia, would stand a better chance.”

Jiatianxia was the most powerful figure in the Fane of Bloody War.

The following three figures who had attained divinity could only use the title of Bloodlord Erjia, Bloodlord Sanjia, and Bloodlord Sijia. The three of them were in Jiatianxia's shadow.

“One hundred thousand years ago, you and my teacher were equal in terms of cultivation. No one could claim one was better than the other. However, my teacher has been improving over the past one hundred thousand years while you were in hibernation, declining in your divine power. You are no longer in peak form. One is moving forward while one is going

backward. Do you really think that you still can fight my teacher, Yueshen? Perhaps I can help you gauge how far you have gone backward.”

Yueshen glanced in Mount Yueshen’s direction. It appeared as though something had occurred to her because she was no longer in a hurry to return.

Chapter 1774 - Old Friend

Chapter 1774: Old Friend

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

One hundred thousand years ago, when Bloodlord Erjia was still young and only a Saint King, he had definitely been a benchmark for that era. As a result, Yueshen had thought highly of him.

That was how picky Yueshen was. She only had a good impression of five juniors, including Zhang Ruochen.

A favored man like Bloodlord Erjia, who had attained divinity and been cultivating for one hundred thousand years with superb combat ability, was definitely a terrifying figure.

“I just need to use a third of my strength to beat you,” said Yueshen.

“You are too bloody confident, Yueshen! Unlike one hundred thousand years ago, things have changed. The once all-powerful forces have fallen while the true gods of this new era have emerged, and I am one of them. Just one more battle, and I will be standing at the top of the Celestial Court.”

Bloodlord Erjia stood in the eye of the vortex and took a step forward. That single step brought him across a vast distance straight to the Shatuo Domain.

When Bloodlord Erjia said that he just needed another battle, he naturally meant a battle with Yueshen. As long as he could defeat Yueshen, he would shake off Jiatianxia’s influence, transcending to a key influencer of the Celestial Court.

He spun the whisk in his hand, and each of its silk strands possessed the ability to slice the heavens as well as the earth.

The land under Yueshen's feet instantly turned into a void.

Heavenly and earthly rules were severed in that void as thousands of powerful energy beams shot at Yueshen.

Extending one of her beautiful fingers, Yueshen pointed forward, and a ring of light spread from her fingertip.

Bloodlord Erjia sensed how powerful that light was and spun his whisk with all his might. The precepts that emanated from his body filled the space and converged at the whisk.

Boom!

The rules broke apart, and the whisk was shattered. Blood covered Bloodlord Erjia's hand. He quickly retreated with a horrified expression in his eyes.

It was not until he had retreated several thousand miles that he used an ancient shield to neutralize the force of Yueshen's finger.

“Whoa, that was powerful!”

Bloodlord Erjia's expression changed as he turned around and saw the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin approaching from behind him. It looked both like a scorching sun and a divine moon.

“Bloody war in the Heavens!”

Bloodlord Erjia spun around and transformed into a blood spring. As the blood spring surged, the sky and earth quickly turned into an endless sea of blood. Countless giant hands clashed with the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin on the surface of the sea while the world around them trembled.

Boom!

After numerous clashes, the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin's power split the sea of blood in half.

Yueshen stood on the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin in the middle of the fissure where the sea had split open. With Bloodlord Erjia's true body under her subdual, they plummeted into the void below and disappeared from everyone's sight.

The cultivators watched in astonishment from the sidelines as the dimensional fissure closed back up.

Right before she disappeared, Yueshen looked extremely heroic with Bloodlord Erjia under her feet.

Yanshen and Youshen still had their hearts in their mouths after they made it out of the Shatuo Domain. They knew better than everyone else how powerful Bloodlord Erjia was. Yet, he looked like a helpless lamb before Yueshen.

“Do not worry, Bloodlord Erjia did not come unprepared. Since he dared to challenge Yueshen, he must have brought that superweapon from the Fane of Bloody War. With that weapon in hand, it is not difficult to defeat Yueshen,” said Bloodlord Sijia.

Despite what he said, he would never dare to enter the Shatuo Domain again, lest Yueshen returned after triumphing over Bloodlord Erjia. Bloodlord Sijia could not imagine the consequences if that were to happen. Since Bloodlord Erjia, as well as Blackheart Demonlord, had made their move, the outcome was set, and they did not have to take the risk.

On Mount Yueshen, Blackheart Demonlord summoned his clones and formed demonic shadows. After thirty-over strikes, he finally tore through the divine ring pattern.

“No!”

Supreme Saint Manjian roared with indignation.

Boom!

A mighty divine power rushed into the ring and hit Supreme Saint Manjian.

The greatsword that Supreme Saint Manjian carried on his back automatically flew out to clash head-on with the divine power. The impact sent the greatsword and Supreme Saint Manjian flying back before they crash-landed into Guanghan Temple’s wall.

The demon guffawed. “It seems that I have underestimated the ability of the divine ring pattern and the ‘Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens’ Grand Formation—they have been bogging me down for quite some time.”

As powerful divine energy rushed into the broken divine ring pattern, Zhang Ruochen's face turned pale, and his joints swelled as if he was about to blow up.

Down below on the ground, Supreme Saint Manjian's greatsword vibrated and flew up into the air as the demon's shadow grabbed it by force.

Using its hand, the shadow rubbed a coat of divine light over the body of the sword and sealed the sword's soul.

The greatsword shot out at once, striking Supreme Saint Manjian in the neck. The sword cut his head off and pinned it to Guanghan Temple's wall. Meanwhile, his headless body dropped down next to Zhang Ruochen.

Only then did the demon's shadow fix his attention on Zhang Ruochen, squinting and smiling at him. "I became curious when I sensed a familiar vibe from you. It turns out that it is the Empress of the Phoenix of a Thousand Bones. Hey, old friend. Why are you hiding?"

Blackie stepped out from under Zhang Ruochen's clothes. "Old friend, my foot! The empress was generous to you. Little did she know that you were an ungrateful wolf. If I had not been sealed off for the past one hundred thousand years, I would be able to beat you with ease."

"I have always admired and respected the empress the most. If it had not been for her, I could not have joined the Kunlun Realm's prominent figures and listened to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree's sermon. What a shame; no matter how hard I tried, I still could not match her in terms of cultivation. I was not even close," said the demon's shadow.

"She treated me like a friend the entire time, but she never wanted to further our relationship. I knew that deep inside, she looked down on me." The demonic shadow became emotional, his face reddening and twisting at the mention of the Empress of a Thousand Bones.

"You should take a hard look in the mirror. How dare you covet the empress! You're not even a match for her little finger. With her exceptional abilities, if the empress were still

alive, she could kill an ungrateful, petty character like you a hundred times over using just her eyes.”

“Is she still alive?” asked the demonic shadow.

“Beg me, and I will tell you,” Blackie said in a ghastly manner.

“You must have a death wish, you bastard! Do you still think this is a hundred thousand years ago? I have ascended to godship with sovereignty all over the world. Who are you to talk to me like that? I will know everything I want after I suck your Saint Soul out of your body.”

The demon’s shadow stepped forward and reached out with his demonic claw to grab Blackie.

Before the demonic claw even came close, Blackie already felt its squeeze behind the force field. Blackie was only a sitting duck since there was a great disparity in their strength.

Blackie mumbled something as his eyes welled up and became filled with enmity.

Zhang Ruochen made out some of the words that Blackie had mumbled. He had mentioned the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and the Empress of a Thousand Bones.

Did the cutting of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree have something to do with the demon?

However, that was unlikely. At that time, even the Empress of a Thousand Bones had yet to attain her divinity. The demon could not have possessed the ability to chop off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Seeing that Blackie was about to be taken away, Zhang Ruochen shifted his body and stood in front of him.

“I am pleased to send you to hell since you insist.” The demon’s shadow struck at Zhang Ruochen’s head with its hand.

Right when every cultivator thought that Zhang Ruochen would surely die, he raised his hand and took the demonic shadow’s attack head-on, keeping the seemingly unstoppable offense at bay.

Boom!

Mount Yueshen's entire structure sank as a white and a black light turned into a ring and spread out thousands of miles in all directions.

"How-How is that possible?" Many cultivators were shocked.

"It is Yueshen's power."

One cultivator had figured out what happened when he saw the wooden staff in Zhang Ruochen's hand. A bright light shone out of the wooden staff and shrouded Zhang Ruochen.

"Yueshen has appointed Zhang Ruochen as a Divine Envoy? I thought one had to be a Supreme Saint to be a Divine Envoy?"

"Can Zhang Ruochen hold up against the power of a god with his Saint-King body and Saint Soul?"

The Staff of the Divine Envoy would be activated by an attack from any force beyond the rank of a Supreme Saint. With the staff in his hands, Zhang Ruochen could summon a part of Yueshen's power.

"I might have left the Kunlun Realm, but I hate traitors the most. I do not know what evil deed you committed one hundred thousand years ago, but since Blackie says that you are a traitor, you deserve death."

Zhang Ruochen launched his attack and an endless stream of divine power zapped out of his hand. It hit the demon's shadow in the chest, and the shadow ended up tumbling back through the air.

However, the move had also hurt Zhang Ruochen. There were streaks of blood on his arm, and he was in extreme pain. It could not be helped, as Yueshen's power was too great for him to handle.

I need to finish this as quickly as I can.

Zhang Ruochen jumped up into the air and struck the demonic shadow with the Staff of the Divine Envoy, sending it flying again. A scroll landed on the demonic shadow's body; it was where those Saint Kings had been sealed.

Lunging toward the scroll, Zhang Ruochen stuck his fist out.

If his punch hit its target, those Heavenly Realm Saint Kings in the scroll would be dead.

Boom!

Before his punch even hit the scroll, the divine power had already torn it into pieces. Those Saint Kings that flew out of the scroll exploded, turning into clouds of bloody fog in the air.

Soon after, silence filled the air. The cultivators of the entire Shatuo Domain were rooted to the spot. They must have been scared stiff.

The gods of the Heavenly Realm were there in the Shatuo Domain to save the Saint Kings, yet Zhang Ruochen had killed the Saint Kings in front of the gods.

It was a slap in the gods' faces. Not only did they feel humiliated but also distressed.

Chapter 1775 - The Divine Envoy's Might

Chapter 1775: The Divine Envoy's Might

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

“You have made a grave mistake, Zhang Ruochen. Even Yueshen cannot protect you today.” The demon's shadow was furious as his eyes flashed with fiery emotion.

“I have made many grave mistakes, but I am afraid that you still cannot kill me with your current ability.”

While he spoke, Zhang Ruochen continued his offense, striking the demonic shadow's butt with the Staff of the Divine Envoy. The blow sent the shadow flying before it crashed face down into a cliff on Mount Yueshen. It was nothing but embarrassing for the demon.

The demonic shadow looked identical to Blackheart Demonlord and possessed the same divine vibe.

Many cultivators were wide-eyed, almost as if Zhang Ruochen had kicked Blackheart Demonlord's actual butt.

Ling Xiu, a spiritual-power Supreme Saint, stood at the edge of the Shatuo Domain. Using his spiritual power, he inscribed what he saw and transmitted the footage with a special method.

The footage quickly spread and caused a stir among the Celestial Court's major Saint cities.

“That badass demonic vibe belongs to Blackheart Demonlord of the Blackdemon Realm. I have seen a stone statue of him before.”

“Who is that young man fighting Blackheart Demonlord?”

“That-That cannot be Zhang Ruochen. Why would he and Blackheart Demonlord fight? No, no. This is not right. One is a god, while the other is a Saint King. How could they fight? Could that guy be Zhang Ruochen’s forefather?”

“Look, Zhang Ruochen whacked and sent Blackheart Demonlord flying! I mean Zhang Ruochen’s forefather.”

“Really? That is a god who has survived the catastrophic Yuanhui Tribulation. Ouch, he was spanked in the butt like a child!”

...

The news spread far and wide in the Celestial Court. Some enthusiastic spiritual-power Supreme Saints had projected the footage in the air above major Saint cities.

Seeing the footage of him being abused by a Zhang Ruochen look-alike god, Blackheart Demonlord gritted his teeth. As he stood in the midst of the crowd, he wished that the ground would swallow him up.

It did not matter whether the footage was true or not. Blackheart Demonlord’s reputation was now going to the dogs.

Meanwhile, Blackheart Demonlord himself was still engaged with Empress Chi Yao. He stared at Mount Yueshen.

The demonic shadow on Mount Yueshen was just his clone, which he had created with his breath, and it possessed limited ability. Unfortunately, the Divine Envoy could summon a tenth of Yueshen’s power. Obviously, his clone was no match for Zhang Ruochen.

Blackheart Demonlord knew very well that it was already impressive for Zhang Ruochen to bear a thousandth, or even a tenth of a thousand of Yueshen’s power, considering his physical strength as well as Saint Soul.

Plucking a strand of hair from his head, Blackheart Demonlord made an actual clone of himself and injected some demonic blood into the divine clone.

Soon, the clone's power increased rapidly. As he spread his arms out, thunder and lightning rumbled in the sky high above. The divine clone had now turned into a dark demonic cloud and arrived above Mount Yueshen in the blink of an eye.

Zhang Ruochen stepped on the demonic shadow under his feet and felt oppressive energy above his head. He looked up, and inside the demonic cloud stood a massive figure in the shape of an ancient demonic mountain.

The vibe he felt was so oppressive that Zhang Ruochen found it hard to breathe.

“Has Blackheart Demonlord himself graced us with his presence? No. This energy might be strong, but it is still miles short of what Youshen and Yanshen have. I am sure this is not Blackheart Demonlord himself.”

Bang!

Holding the Staff of the Divine Envoy with both hands, Zhang Ruochen broke up the demon's shadow into a cloud of several thousand particles of demonic energy.

As though something attracted it, the cloud of demonic energy flew up toward the divine clone.

“Exterminate it!”

Zhang Ruochen struck again, ripping open a dimensional fissure and throwing the cloud of demonic energy into the void.

“How dare you destroy my Three Thousand Wills, you rascal! I will make you pay today!”

The divine clone cupped his hands, and immediately, a hundred thousand streaks of demonic lightning bolted between Heaven and Earth. The lightning streaks converged into his hands and turned into one giant lightning column, striking down at Zhang Ruochen below.

Zhang Ruochen clenched the Staff of the Divine Envoy as he tried to summon more power from Yueshen.

Just then, the divine clone's voice rang in his ear. “Bloodlord Erjia has brought with him the ultimate weapon of the Fane of

Bloody War, the Infernal Asuran Icon. He is determined to establish his reputation by defeating Yueshen. She must be having a hard time fighting off Bloodlord Erjia as we speak. The more power you draw from her, the weaker she will become.”

The divine clone’s words definitely affected Zhang Ruochen. He hesitated.

It was because he did not understand how divine power worked. He did not know how much power he had drawn from Yueshen, and the fact that he might become a burden to her worried him.

While he hesitated, the divine clone directed his power to Zhang Ruochen’s head.

At that moment, the inscription of Mount Yueshen appeared in a split second and collided with the lightning column.

Someone had activated the ‘Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens’ Grand Formation again and stopped the attack.

The divine clone was startled for a second. Scanning the ground below, he finally saw a silver-haired figure in the eye of another formation on Mount Yueshen.

It was Kong Lanyou. She had been the one who used her Supreme-Saint blood to power the inscription formation, activating the ‘Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens’ Grand Formation for the second time.

“You will have to step over my dead body first if you want to kill my cousin!”

Kong Lanyou knew how powerful the divine clone was. It was several times more badass than the demon’s shadow from earlier.

Even if she had to exhaust all of her Supreme-Saint blood, she was still determined to protect Zhang Ruochen.

Meanwhile, Supreme Saint Manjian had stood up despite losing his head. Walking into the broken divine ring pattern, he once again injected his Supreme-Saint power into the formation and kept it up.

Supreme-Saint blood spurted out of his severed neck like a geyser, spreading throughout the patterns of the inscription.

The energy of the formation was increasing.

Just then, Yueshen's voice echoed in Zhang Ruochen's mind. "You may draw as much power as you need from me as long as you can bear the load. Finish off Blackheart Demonlord's clone as quickly as possible and send me the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. I have a surprise gift for you today."

Zhang Ruochen was relieved to hear Yueshen's voice. It meant that she was not having a hard time dealing with Bloodlord Erjia in the void. He also realized that he had been intimidated by the divine clone earlier, and his drawing of Yueshen's power should not have any significant effect on her.

"What a cunning fellow. I cannot believe that a demon needs to resort to such a lowly way to deal with a Saint King."

Zhang Ruochen could not have been angrier. Disregarding his body and Saint Soul's ability to bear the load, he started to draw as much power from Yueshen as he could. The Staff of the Divine Envoy started to become brighter and brighter in his hand.

The divine clone had obviously sensed that something was amiss, so he stepped up his assault. Yet, the "Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens" Grand Formation suppressed all of his attacks. The formation had gained a tremendous boost in power as Supreme Saint Manjian and Kong Lanyou joined hands to drive it.

"Ultimate Demonic Mark!"

The divine clone clapped his hands together in the gesture of a mark, summoning an endless amount of precepts to himself. A circular demonic mark with thousands of suspended skulls instantly appeared above Mount Yueshen.

Boom!

Then, the demonic mark descended and crushed the protective shield of the "Blood Moon Swallowing the Heavens" Grand Formation.

That happened not because the formation was not powerful enough. It was just not operating at full capacity.

At least twelve Supreme Saints were required to drive the formation. If that had been the case, not even God himself could have taken down Mount Yueshen.

Supreme Saint Manjian's headless body, which looked like an ancient sacred mountain, dropped to the ground.

“Manjian!”

A streak of blood appeared on Kong Lanyou's brow. She glanced at Zhang Ruochen's spot before she dropped to the ground too. The stream of blood on her brow started to spread all over her impeccably white, ceramic-like body.

Zhang Ruochen screamed in anger. Just then, cracks began to appear all over his body as well. The demonic mark had not done anything to him. Instead, the power that he had drawn from Yueshen was causing the tearing.

Holding the Staff of the Divine Envoy in his hand, Zhang Ruochen lunged up into the air. He broke through the demonic mark and breached the demonic cloud that was high above, striking the divine clone with the staff.

A loud boom ensued as the divine clone exploded.

The strike had obliterated an immeasurable amount of demonic energy, so much so that even Blackheart Demonlord felt the effect. His body trembled, and his movements slowed down.

Just as the divine clone blew up, parts of Zhang Ruochen's body also exploded as blood and flesh flew in all directions. His bones were visible in some parts of his body, and he gritted his teeth while he fought the pain.

Despite that, he did not stop. He lunged toward the void that Yueshen and Bloodlord Erjia had ripped open earlier.

While he was still in the air, his heart ached as he glanced at Kong Lanyou, who had dropped to the ground. Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen understood that he could not stop. He had to hurry and join forces with Yueshen.

Victory would only favor them if he helped Yueshen defeat Bloodlord Erjia.

“Like an ultimate weapon, the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin possesses a force of mass destruction. So, why does Yueshen still want to borrow the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron? Is it because it is more powerful than the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin?” Zhang Ruochen was puzzled.

Yanshen, Youshen, and Bloodlord Sijia had been watching on the sidelines earlier. After Zhang Ruochen crushed the demon’s shadow and divine clone, they could no longer sit by and watch. Each of them shot out a beam of energy at Zhang Ruochen from afar.

Those energy beams held the power of the gods, which were much more powerful than that of the divine clone. Even with Yueshen’s divine power, there was no way Zhang Ruochen could parry them without being turned into ash.

“Here goes nothing!”

Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to take out the Secret Tome of Time and Space. He then tore the dimension open in advance and slipped into the void.

“That rascal is already creating trouble for us when he is merely a Saint King. I cannot imagine what he will become if he attains Supreme Sainthood or even Godship,” Youshen mumbled to herself.

Yanshen felt uneasy about Zhang Ruochen’s actions. He was just a Saint King, yet he was daring enough to join the battle between Yueshen and Bloodlord Erjia. What did he want? Something was not right.

Yanshen immediately entered the Shatuo Domain and stepped into the void as he thought about intercepting Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1776 - The Almighty Cauldron

Chapter 1776: The Almighty Cauldron

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Entering the void, Zhang Ruochen used the Secret Tome of Time and Space to form a personal protective space to protect himself from the harmful energy inside.

Activating his Heaven's Eye, he could see a huge continent floating in the distance.

It was a reddish-yellow place with a thick bloody fog filling its airspace. The land had mountains and rivers, but blood instead of water flowed in them. The blood-filled rivers, lakes, and oceans were horrible.

“Is this what Blackheart Demonlord calls the Infernal Asuran Icon? As the picture scroll lies open, it becomes a world of its own.”

With his current level of cultivation, Zhang Ruochen could only sense the incredible divine power in that continent and vaguely see its countless flowing inscriptions.

A silver moon was hanging in the sky above the Asuran Continent which, by eye measurement, could have been thousands of square miles in size. Meanwhile, Yueshen was standing right in the middle of the moon.

Not long after, a plume of bloody vapor, in the form of a shackle, rose from the Asuran Continent. It then twisted tightly around the moon and simultaneously shot beams of blood up into the sky, striking Yueshen at the center of the moon.

Although Zhang Ruochen was standing thousands of miles away, the mighty divine power forced him back from where he stood.

He took out the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, thinking of a way he could pass it to Yueshen.

Boom!

The space that was about a thousand miles away from where Zhang Ruochen was suddenly crumbled as a fiery red flame rushed into the void.

“Yanshen! That old man must be here to kill me.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. Jumping into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, he desperately drove the bronze cauldron toward the Asuran Continent.

“Where are you going? Even Yueshen cannot save herself. Do you think that she can save you?” Yanshen called out shrilly from the center of the fire.

His voice sounded ordinary, yet its shock wave had aggravated Zhang Ruochen’s injury. Not only was his body falling apart but his Saint Soul and Saint Qi were also on the verge of exhaustion.

The dimension that the Secret Tome of Time and Space formed could not withstand it. Borrowed power from Yueshen was no match either.

A god’s voice could wipe out the living beings of an entire realm.

Zhang Ruochen had initially been able to kill the demon’s shadow and shatter his divine clone only because Empress Chi Yao had pinned down Blackheart Demonlord himself. Hence, he had not been able to spare his efforts on anything else. Another reason was that the demon’s shadow and divine clone had limited abilities.

Just when Zhang Ruochen was about to run out of strength, glaring green light erupted from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. After that, several golden characters, which glowed more intensely, appeared above the cauldron.

Yanshen's eyes were fixed on the cauldron, and he saw a beautiful giant hand materialize above the bronze vessel. It extended out of the moon and stretched thousands of miles away.

Yanshen did not know why, but fear suddenly rose within him.

“Merits Unbounded!”

Yanshen used a Power of Merits as he reached out, and his hand turned into a cloud of five colors. He chased after the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, wanting to snatch it before Yueshen.

Without Bloodlord Erjia and the Infernal Asuran Icon to bog down Yueshen, Yanshen would not have been so confident in fighting against her, even with the Power of Merits.

However, things were different now. Yanshen was confident because he just wanted to take the cauldron.

With help from the Power of Merits, Yanshen had boosted his strength and gotten the upper hand. He successfully pushed Yueshen's power back.

“It is not easy to collect the Power of Merits. According to the rules in the Fane of Merits, Supreme Saints and gods may only use the Power of Merits in the event of a war with the Infernal Court. You have broken the rules of the Fane of Merits and the Celestial Court, Yanshen,” said Yueshen.

“Are you trying to threaten me with rules now that you cannot contain my ability, huh?” Yanshen sneered.

“You think too highly of yourself! I am just saying that the Power of Merits belongs to the entire Celestial Court. It is not your personal property. Since you have used what does not belong to you, you have acted against the rules and rightly deserve punishment.”

Boom!

The moon that hung in the sky above the Asuran Continent suddenly broke apart like a supernova.

Yanshen thought Bloodlord Erjia must have defeated Yueshen, and a triumphant smile spread across his face. But the next moment, his smile froze.

A stream of white light burst out of the broken moon and whizzed toward him.

It was the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin.

“This is not good!”

Yanshen’s eyes became luminous as he raised his hands to prop up a five-colored Power of Merits that was the size of a star. The shock wave generated by the energy could nearly match Yueshen’s power. Yet, little did he expect that the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin could effortlessly penetrate his five-colored Power of Merits.

“How could this be? How could it defeat my Power of Merits in the blink of an eye?” Disbelief was written all over his face.

Then, Yueshen’s voice rang in Yanshen’s ear. “To a god, divine cultivation is the bare basics. Mastering the Canon

1

will allow you to stand proudly at the top of the universe.”

As she spoke, a dazzling light appeared in front of Yanshen, cutting through a quarter of his body. His left hand and leg were severed before they were taken away by Yueshen.

What remained of Yanshen was struck by a hand, causing him to tumble back in the air. He nearly shattered into pieces again.

The next moment, Yueshen was seen standing near the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. Her white gown fluttered in the air, while her body was soft and slender like the flexible twig of a willow tree.

However, this willow twig had defeated Yanshen completely.

Zhang Ruochen was covered in blood, so Yueshen placed him into the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin. When she glanced back, she noticed that Yanshen was trying to flee.

“Why leave since you have made it here?”

Now that the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was in her hand, it began to spin and shoot out golden characters, which then turned into a golden stream that traveled across the darkness of the void, eventually hitting Yanshen’s body.

The golden characters seemed to possess terrifying power as the stream completely immobilized Yanshen.

“This-This is...”

Yanshen finally knew what the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was.

He had been very confident at first, thinking that he could get away from Yueshen even if he was not her match.

Yet, at that moment, fear filled his eyes.

He realized that the cauldron in Yueshen’s hands could kill and smelt gods.

What puzzled him though, was how the cauldron ended up in the hands of a Saint King.

Yanshen tried to warn Bloodlord Erjia, but the golden characters had subdued him. He could not make a sound or even use his spiritual power and divine will.

Leaving Yanshen aside, Yueshen looked at the Asuran Continent in the distance. The continent looked like a piece of drawing as it rose. It then flipped upside down and crashed down on Yueshen.

Her dark hair blew in the wind, and her eyes were as beautiful as the stars. From in between her hands, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron slowly flew up, growing bigger and bigger as it spun. After a while, Yueshen looked like a speck of dust in front of the cauldron.

Boom!

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and the Asuran Continent clashed, sending a tremor throughout the void.

The impact from the clash was transmitted to the material world and caused a massive amount of space fissures to appear in the million-square-mile Shatuo Domain.

If the battle dragged on, the Shatuo Domain might become a semi-void, much like the forbidden land of the Divinity Bestowment Altar.

Fortunately, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron had bored through the Asuran Continent, and the entire realm began to collapse.

Bloodlord Erjia and the Infernal Asuran Icon fell from the broken Asuran Continent, but Yueshen swiftly grabbed the picture scroll.

She then shot out streams of golden characters at Bloodlord Erjia.

“No! I will bust the myth of the invincible Yueshen today!”

Bloodlord Erjia tried to resist. He summoned a powerful divine power in his body to try and fight back the golden characters, but he failed. Instead, cracks started to appear on his divine body.

Yueshen looked at Bloodlord Erjia with a distant expression as she put him and Yanshen into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

She then jumped out of the void and returned to Mount Yueshen. “Gods of the Celestial Court, if all of you still refuse to reveal yourselves, Bloodlord Erjia and Yanshen will die today,” she called out in a divine voice while she stood in front of Guanghan Temple. Her voice was heard throughout the Celestial Court.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was suspended above Mount Yueshen, and Bloodlord Erjia as well as Yanshen, could be heard groaning from the inside the cauldron. They were suffering from the pain of the divine trial.

Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia listened on with bated breath. Sensing that staying at the edge of the Shatuo Domain was not the safest idea, they quickly fled—the farther, the better.

Unlike Youshen and Bloodlord Sijia, Blackheart Demonlord was much more powerful. Even so, he also left the Shatuo Domain at once, avoiding Yueshen like the plague.

None of the Shatuo Domain’s cultivators said a word. Some were kneeling on the ground, bowing before Mount Yueshen, while some were quaking in their boots with cold sweat trickling down their spines.

Everyone could see that Yueshen now possessed the ability to kill the gods.

Would today be the day some poor gods met their ends?

Rarely would gods die from the infighting inside the Celestial Court. But once that happened, it could cause a terrifying change and affect an immeasurable number of living beings.

The death of a god was not the end of things because it could create a chain reaction that destroyed an entire realm.

A while later, the sky in the Shatuo Domain turned into a shade of dark red.

Everyone looked up and saw a majestic temple; it was bright red and floating among the clouds of blood. At first glance, it looked as if it was just a few thousand miles away, but careful observation seemed to suggest that the temple was in another space and time, as though it was billions of miles away from the Shatuo Domain.

Seeing the temple, a rare and grave expression appeared on Yueshen's face. "Jiatianxia!"

"Long time no see."

A loud and ancient voice filled the air.

"Are you going to do the dirty job yourself, Jiatianxia?"

There was a long silence from the owner of the sanguine temple as if he was in his own world, thinking of something.

"I have to admit that you have improved so much after one hundred thousand years. I may not be able to gain an upper hand again like before. But, with this cauldron, I could easily enter the Heavenly Realm. I could also kill everyone, except you, in the Fane of Bloody War and wipe out every race in the Heavenly Realm. Would you like to try me?"

Chapter 1777 - The Changing of Times Is Nigh

Chapter 1777: The Changing of Times Is Nigh

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

After a long, long while, a heavy voice rang out from the sanguine temple. “Wars between gods are forbidden in the Celestial Court, and even I cannot break that rule. This matter is both Yanshen’s and Bloodlord Erjia’s fault. As to what it will take for you to let them go, name your price.”

Following that, others could not hear the conversation between Yueshen and the lord of the bright red temple anymore.

No one knew what kind of agreement was reached, but in the end, Yueshen released both Yanshen and Bloodlord Erjia from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

However, it seemed that both Yanshen and Bloodlord Erjia had lost something within the cauldron as they appeared extremely weakened.

The two gods looked in Mount Yueshen’s direction as a sense of humiliation and fury they had never felt before rose within them. In the end, they turned into two streams of divine light that flew toward the sanguine temple in the sky.

A moment later, the temple disappeared and hid away in the void.

Both Yanshen and Bloodlord Erjia appeared before the Fane of Bloody War. By then, the two gods had composed themselves and displayed a stalwart demeanor. They were now talking to the lord of the Fane of Bloody War.

Yanshen's pupils burned with fire as he said, "Yueshen has taken away about ninety percent of both Bloodlord Erjia's and my divine blood, as well as a huge amount of divine spirit and divine souls. We have been greatly weakened and will not be able to recover in a short period of time. I really cannot take this lying down."

Someone's voice then rang out from the temple complex. "If you commit a grievance, you have to bear the consequences; even gods are not exempted from that. Both of you are the ones to blame for this mess."

Yanshen was immediately silenced, and he did not talk back.

Winners took the throne, while losers were branded as bandits.

Failure was the biggest mistake, and no quibble would help his cause.

"Master, your disciple does not understand. Why did you have to come to a compromise with Yueshen? I do not believe that you are afraid of Yueshen, Master. Even if she could really infiltrate the Heavenly Realm, destroy the Fane of Bloody War, and slay all living beings in the Heavenly Realm, she would still only be met with a path of demise. I do not believe that Yueshen would take such an action where neither side wins," Bloodlord Erjia said.

The voice from the temple rang out again. "The matter today has proceeded beyond our initial plans. Someone from the Heavenly Palace has spoken out, so things will end as they are. If we press the matter, it will only get worse and not do us any good."

Bloodlord Erjia frowned and said, "Someone from the Celestial Palace? Who? Why is he not giving you any face, Master?"

"The one who guards the Celestial River."

Bloodlord Erjia and Yanshen glanced at each other; all of a sudden, there was nothing left to say.

...

The storm that erupted in the Shatuo Domain was like a tidal wave. Soon, it spread all across the Celestial Court and even into the mortal realms.

In the past, few cultivators had ever heard of the Shatuo Domain, but now, the domain, alongside the Guanghan Realm and Kunlun Realm had all become instantly famous.

Yueshen, whom the cultivators had long forgotten, had finally allowed them to truly know her through the last battle.

Now, Yueshen's name was thunderous.

Of course, most cultivators would never understand the world of gods, and they dared not comment casually about it. So, alternatively, Zhang Ruochen, the young Saint King became the focus of talks amongst the cultivators across the realms.

Zhang Ruochen's actions in the Celestial Domain of Truth only got the top scions in Heaven to be familiar with him.

The battle on Mount Yueshen made him famous in the Celestial Court, and he became a hot, controversial figure within the realm of Saints. Even the heavenly scions whose names were on the "Saint King Merit List" and "Duelist Heavenly King List" had all been robbed of their limelight by him.

After all, he was probably the only person at the cultivation level of a Saint King to have been able to influence a battle between gods.

The Thousand-star Domain.

The Thousand-Star Domain was a cultivation territory given to the Thousand-star Civilization by the Heavenly Realm, and the concentration of Saint Qi within it was ten times higher than in Shatuo Domain. The activity levels of its heavenly and earthly precepts were also far beyond the Shatuo Domain. It was a veritable superior domain.

"That guy sure is something. He was brave enough to directly challenge a god. His mind is indeed superior to mine, and it looks like I will need to train my mind harder," the Maiden of a Thousand Stars said.

The Fane of Death.

The moment Han Qiu heard news of the battle on Mount Yueshen, a smile appeared on her pretty face. “As expected of a man that I have taken a liking to. He is just extraordinary.”

She then looked a little worried. “I hope he did not die in the crossfire of that battle between gods.”

Le wiped the sword in his hand and said, “Zhang Ruochen is definitely not dead. Even if he did die, he would probably come back fighting his way out of death’s door. He is just far more resilient than anyone else.”

His battle involving the gods made waves, but that did not last too long as it was soon overwhelmed by even more shocking news.

A hundred thousand years ago, the Kunlun Realm, which was ranked top five in the “Merit List of Ten Thousand Realms”, had been breached by the Infernal Court. Since the Kunlun Realm was one of the realms under the Celestial Court, the gods from the Celestial Palace had rushed over to protect it and ward off the Infernal Court’s invasion.

The Kunlun Realm was one of the few long-lasting realms in the universe. Throughout its history, it had given birth to many legendary figures and left behind countless miracles, opportunities, as well as legacies.

Even though the Kunlun Realm was past its prime, it was still a treasured ground, coveted even by the gods. They would naturally prevent it from falling into the hands of the Infernal Court.

Amid the starry skies not too far away from the Kunlun Realm, a terrifying battle between the gods broke out.

Gods from the Celestial Court and ten clans of the Infernal Court fought silently across the boundless stars. One by one, the stars were annihilated like dense fireballs as they flew through the night sky.

There were meteor showers every night.

All of the cultivators became nervous and restless for fear that the battle would take a more brutal turn as it went on, just like a hundred thousand years ago. Back then, half of the gods had fallen and thousands of realms had been destroyed.

One month later, the battle between the gods in the stars ended, and news spread across the Celestial Court.

“Several gods have fallen amid the stars. The gods from both the Celestial and Infernal Court do not want the situation to develop to the point of no return, so they have ceased their fighting.”

The cultivators in the various realms finally heaved a long sigh of relief.

However, they understood that the Infernal Court would not give up so easily. Although the battle between the gods was over, the army of cultivators from the Infernal Court was probably already on its way to the Kunlun Realm.

The Kunlun Realm had become the battlefield where the forces of the Celestial and Infernal Courts collided.

That was the desired result of the gods from both the Celestial and Infernal Court. Next, they would all compete for the various treasures and openings within the Kunlun Realm with their own abilities.

...

The Fane of Merits.

Shang Ziyan clasped his fist as he bowed before a tri-colored divine fog. “Greetings, Master.”

Yanshen’s voice traveled out from the divine fog. “Ziyan, you have not disappointed me. Not only have you survived the Trial of Purgation in the Purgatory Furnace of Life and Death, but you have also become physically stronger. Plus, your cultivation level has broken into the Eight-step Saint King realm, right?”

“Yes,” Shang Ziyan said calmly.

“In that case, this time, you will lead our forces into the Kunlun Realm.”

Shang Ziyan's expression was reserved, and there were no emotional fluctuations in his eyes as he said, "I am too young! There are countless seniors who are stronger and more experienced than I am. It would be better for them to lead the team."

"You do not have to be so humble. Although you are indeed slightly weaker than them now, your potential is far greater. As long as you attain the Nine-step Saint King rank, even those on the Saint King Merit List will not be able to do anything to you.

"Do not tell me that you have no ambitions? This time around, go to the Kunlun Realm and show them your true abilities. Perhaps you may stumble upon a supreme opportunity there and create an immortal Saint body beyond the reaches of even the other Supreme Saints."

Shang Ziyan no longer refused and said, "Will the Supreme Saints participate in the war as well?"

"The Supreme Saints cannot enter the Kunlun Realm. Their battlefield is beyond Kunlun, and you are the true main force in this battle." Yanshen's voice rang out again.

Shang Ziyan then asked, "How about the local Supreme Saints in the Kunlun Realm?"

"You do not have to worry. They will leave the Kunlun Realm."

Yanshen then continued, "Since the Kunlun Realm wants to be protected by the Celestial Court, it would naturally need to abide by the Celestial Court's rules. Remember, you will need to fight the Infernal Court and also take this opportunity to end the Kunlun Realm's path. On top of that, take out Zhang Ruochen. We cannot allow him to do as he pleases anymore. If he breaks through the realm of a Supreme Saint, he will be difficult to deal with!"

...

The Ruiya Realm.

Youshen's furious voice echoed in a dark dimension. "The two of you will lead our army into the Kunlun Realm. You must

capture all living beings related to Zhang Ruochen and force him to show himself. Kill him, extract his Saint Soul, and bring it to me.”

“Master, you can rest assured that by the time we are done, Zhang Ruochen will wish he was never born.”

At a lower elevation away from Youshen, there was a man and woman.

The man was three meters tall, burly, and he radiated dark Saint light. Millions of Saint Path precepts flowed all over his skin, and it was hard to imagine that he was just a Nine-step Saint King.

After all, a Nine-step Saint King who could cultivate over ten million Saint Path precepts was already quite powerful.

The woman was wearing a fitting black robe, which revealed both her extremely fair legs, and holding a wooden staff in hand. One could easily imagine what kind of peerless beauty was hidden beneath the robe.

However, the spiritual powers that emanated from her body were not much weaker than the man’s Saint Path aura.

...

The Blackdemon Realm.

Blackheart Demonlord’s phantom stood in the sky and said, “Scions, you are all among the Blackdemon Realm’s Saint Kings who have cultivated the thirty-six Demonstone Engravings to the highest level. Go to the Kunlun Realm and be sure to find the thirty-six True Engravings of the Demonstone Engravings. Then, bring them back to the Blackdemon Realm. Also, there are two other tasks: get rid of Zhang Ruochen and find the Empress of a Thousand Bones.”

“Yes.”

Thirty-six Saint Kings knelt down on one knee. All of them were first-class powerhouses just beneath a Supreme Saint.

The Blackdemon Realm’s leader in the Celestial Domain of Truth, Qiong Lin was the youngest of the lot. In comparison to

the other thirty-five, the aura that radiated from him was much weaker.

Farther away, countless demonic cultivators, all of whom had Saint-level cultivations, knelt down. At a glance, one would only see a sea of people.

...

The Fane of Bloody War.

After Bloodlord Sijia proclaimed a divine order, blood-red light spots flew toward the teleportation array like a rain of blood.

Each light spot was a Saint-level cultivator.

...

In a vast space, a star was sitting at the center with twelve other stars surrounding and illuminating it.

When compared with it, the other stars seemed small.

Luo Ji, the Rakshasa Princess was clad in thin, plain Saint clothes as she sat on a chariot.

Meanwhile, behind the chariot, a Rakshasa army slowly marched into a dimensional rift.

The Rakshasa Princess gently touched her crimson lips with her snow-white fingers as she said to herself, "I am really looking forward to this. I wonder, will that person return to Kunlun? My fated one, you have to come back!"

Chapter 1778 - God's Left Leg

Chapter 1778: God's Left Leg

After the war between the gods, the sky above the Shatuo Domain shone brightly during the day, while holy rain fell at night.

It lasted for a whole month as a miracle happened in the domain, which had been shattered by the gods.

The overwhelming power fluctuations left behind by the war had gradually disappeared. Across the scorched wasteland, fragrant spirit grass, Saint flowers, and towering spirit trees all grew overnight. Condensed Saint aura had reappeared throughout the sacred grounds in major sacred sites, and even the quality of the soil had improved a lot.

Apara-godaniya, once the poorest region within the Shatuo Domain, had received a blessing in disguise, and its soil had become much more fertile. While it was not at the level of a mid-level region, it was enough to make the cultivators from inferior regions around it feel envious.

Among the lower-tier domains, the Shatuo Domain's cultivation environment had reached the upper mid-level.

The cultivators from the seven regions in Shatuo were all excited. With such an environment, the speed of their cultivation would significantly increase, and the overall strength of the macro world itself would also increase rapidly.

Once the ranking of their macro world improved, they would no longer have to participate in the Battle of Merits and worry about their mother-world becoming a battlefield, ending in annihilation.

Therefore, the improvement in the Shatuo Domain's cultivation environment had resulted in endless benefits for its seven regions with profound impacts.

“It must have been by Yueshen’s grace that the Celestial Court improved the cultivation environment in the Shatuo Domain.”

“A domain still needs a great omnipotent god such as Yueshen to hold the fort for us to gain substantial benefits and be respected by the cultivators all around the universe. From now on, who would dare to come to the Shatuo Domain and kick up a fuss?”

...

Mount Yueshen.

A circular blood fountain had been built within a bedchamber made out of sacred jade. In the middle of the fountain of blood, a naked Zhang Ruochen woke up on a jade bed.

His wounds seemed to have healed, and he felt no pain.

“I’m still alive.”

After Zhang Ruochen sorted out his thoughts and recalled everything before he fainted, a smile appeared at the corner of his mouth.

Being able to survive a battle between gods was something to be happy about.

Pressing his palm against the Xuanbing Jade Bed, Zhang Ruochen wanted to jump up, but the moment his upper body left the bed, his left leg felt as heavy as lead iron and pulled him back down.

Bam!!

The back of Zhang Ruochen’s head slammed heavily into the jade bed.

“What... What’s going on? Is my left leg paralyzed? Why can I not feel or lift it?”

With the vitality of a Saint King, even if his legs were to be chopped off, he could regrow a new one.

Yet, what was the deal with his crippled state?

Only a divine power that had infected his left leg during the battle could have crippled his leg. Similarly, Blackie had been

afflicted with the Shenlong Chaos Tower of Sun and Moon's power. His cultivation level not only hit rock bottom, but he had also taken a half-cat, half-phoenix form.

“Oh! You are finally awake!” A crisp, clear voice suddenly rang across the bedchamber.

Immediately, a petite figure that radiated a jade-colored glow and a whiff of fragrance approached the side of the Xuanbing Jade Bed.

It was a girl who was about fifteen to sixteen years old. Her skin was as bright as jade, her features were delicate, and her eyes were clear as well as sharp. Her hair was tied into two braids, and she was staring at Zhang Ruochen with a curious look.

“Who are you?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the girl, and to his shock, found that he could not see through her with his current cultivation level and eye power.

She was not a simple character.

She was definitely a powerful one, but why had he never met her on Mount Yueshen before?

The girl smiled at Zhang Ruochen as she giggled. “I'm Xiaoyu! Do you not recognize me anymore?”

“Xiaoyu?”

Something seemed to occur to Zhang Ruochen, and he was slightly taken aback. He then looked at the girl again before he probingly asked, “Are you that Sacred Imperial Jade I took out of the Divinity Bestowment Altar?”

The girl revealed her snow-white teeth and smiled. “Yes, yes. Thank you so much for that, or else I would not have been able to become Lady Yueshen's disciple.”

Zhang Ruochen's expression turned somewhat awkward.

It is necessary to point out that the girl before him, who looked incredibly innocent like an immaculate piece of white paper,

was a real Supreme Saint. Who knew what kind of powerful Saint techniques she had learned from Blackie and Yueshen?

Now, she could probably pin Zhang Ruochen down with just her little finger.

More importantly, Zhang Ruochen was completely naked at that moment. It was super embarrassing for every part of his body to be seen by a girl with such a pure and lovely face.

Zhang Ruochen coughed dryly and was about to speak. He wanted to ask her to bring him a Saint robe, but he only heard Xiaoyu's soft voice. "Wow!"

He noticed that her petite snow-white hands were stroking his left leg and her eyes were gleaming. She moved her hands from his calf to his thigh and finally pressed her fingers against the base of his thigh.

Zhang Ruochen felt the slight coolness from her fingers, and his whole body trembled.

When Zhang Ruochen could no longer bear it, he heard Xiaoyu say, "It has actually already begun to fuse together, Zhang Ruochen. Your physical body and constitution are simply too strong!"

"What has fused together?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"God's left leg of course!"

Xiaoyu's eyes twinkled as her long eyelashes fluttered. She appeared exceptionally beautiful.

"God's left leg?" Zhang Ruochen wondered.

Xiaoyu patted Zhang Ruochen on the thigh as a powerful, boundless surge of Supreme Saint power rushed in. Suddenly, a flaming pattern appeared on Zhang Ruochen's leg and started to burn.

The temperature of the flame was so intense that the base of Zhang Ruochen's thigh and his lower abdomen felt a little painful as if his body was about to melt.

"Lady Yueshen had already helped you by fusing the god's left leg into your left leg. Your bones, meridians, blood vessels,

and saint meridians had all connected together. Try activating your Saint Qi, and infuse them into your left leg.”

Zhang Ruochen suppressed the astonishment in his heart and quickly activated the Emyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture. He guided his Saint Qi to flow through his meridians and Saint channels into his left leg.

At the same time, his spiritual power flowed along with his Saint Qi as he was ready to explore what had changed in his left leg.

Once it reached the base of his left thigh, a fiery force surged from his meridians and Saint channels. Right then, he felt like his spiritual power had fallen into a pool of lava and been pushed back by it.

Zhang Ruochen was startled as he quickly went all out to control his Saint Qi.

After he fought the fiery force in his left leg for several hours, only did his Saint Qi make a single revolution through his meridians and Saint channels.

Immediately after, the blood in his veins also began to flow, and Zhang Ruochen gradually regained feeling in his left leg.

Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual power, however, could not enter his left leg and could only wander around the base of his thigh back and forth because there was an endless sea of flames beyond. His left leg had turned into a fiery domain; it was both heavy and full of arcane mysteries.

“Did Yueshen really infuse a god’s left leg into mine?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Yes!”

Xiaoyu nodded and earnestly said, “Lady Yueshen cut off both Yanshen’s left arm and leg. After she wiped out his divine will from them, she infused the left leg into yours. Yueshen said that with your current cultivation and physical strength, bearing a god’s left leg is already the limit. So, she did not infuse the divine left hand into your left hand.”

Zhang Ruochen was stunned.

What kind of method was it?

It was just too mindblowing!

No, the power of a god was extremely terrifying, and even though Yanshen's divine will had been wiped out, there was still a powerful rejection. With Zhang Ruochen's Saint-King level cultivation, how was he able to withstand it?

No matter how powerful Yueshen was, surely she could not have done something as mind-blowing as that.

Zhang Ruochen verbalized the question he had in his heart.

Xiaoyu tilted her tiny head as she pondered before she shook it. "I do not know either. Why don't you go and ask Lady Yueshen herself?"

"All right. Take me to her."

Zhang Ruochen put on a Saint robe and got down the Xuanbing Jade Bed.

While he had regained the sensation in his left leg, it was still extremely heavy as if there was a divine mountain was inside.

Zhang Ruochen limped while he walked and needed to use the Staff of the Divine Envoy to prop him up for him to move forward. He was literally no different from a cripple.

Whenever his left leg touched the ground, a shallow footprint would be left behind. Even the sacred jade floor could not support it.

As he walked, Zhang Ruochen asked, "Xiaoyu... Supreme Saint Xiaoyu, do you know if Mu Lingxi is on Mount Yueshen?"

"You mean Senior Sister Mu? She is not here." Xiaoyu turned her head around and smiled.

While Xiaoyu's cultivation was far superior to that of Mu Lingxi, since Mu Lingxi had become Yueshen's disciple earlier than her, she naturally called her a senior.

"Where did she go?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Xiaoyu continued, “Supposedly, Lady Yueshen sent her to the Kunlun Realm a few months back.”

“What is she doing in the Kunlun Realm?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Xiaoyu shook her head and said, “I have no idea. She did not tell me. Why don’t you ask Lady Yueshen herself?”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and could not figure out why Yueshen would send Mu Lingxi to the Kunlun Realm.

When Zhang Ruochen arrived at Guanghan Temple’s complex, he saw Yueshen.

In the battle between gods a month ago, Yueshen had left a deep impression on Zhang Ruochen. Characters like herself were truly capable of stepping on suns and plucking stars out of the skies. She was extremely fascinating.

“Salutations, Yueshen.”

After Zhang Ruochen gave her a fist-palm salute, he asked about Mu Lingxi first.

“In the years that you were absent from the Kunlun Realm, it went through several earth-shaking upheavals, and many arcane mysteries emerged from the depths or hidden dimensions. The reason I sent Lingxi to the Kunlun Realm is that after the Kunlun Realm recovered, a supreme opportunity for her appeared.” Yueshen’s voice was as calm as water.

Zhang Ruochen followed up with another question. “What opportunity?”

“An opportunity left behind by the ancestors of her clan,” Yueshen said.

“The ancestors of the medieval aristocratic Mu Clan? No, could it be... the Phoenix Clan?”

It had to really be something for Yueshen to call it a supreme opportunity.

An opportunity left behind by an ancestor of an aristocratic family would not be at that level.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Mu Lingxi had the blood of the Frost Phoenix flowing in her, and she was the only living person in the Kunlun Realm who could fully revive the Frost Phoenix bloodline.

Yueshen did not continue to answer Zhang Ruochen's question. Instead, she asked, "How is the god's left leg feeling?"

"I was just about to ask you about it. Why did you infuse Yanshen's left leg into mine? Will there be any hidden dangers?" Zhang Ruochen replied.

"No."

Yueshen stood up and drew a beautiful thin curved line in the air as she said, "Other cultivators, Supreme Saints even, can barely fuse together with a god's left leg, but you are different. You have the Five-element Chaotic Body and the Mark of the Gods, so your compatibility is excellent. Neither will you have any resistance to the god's left leg nor will it resist you.

"In addition, I have placed four seals on the god's left leg, sealing ninety-nine percent of its power. The little bit of power that remains is what your current cultivation and physical body are capable of handling.

"Of course, if you can utilize this tiny amount of strength well, just with this leg alone, you can run rampant at any rank below a Supreme Saint.

"Once you reach the rank of a Nine-step Saint King, you can try to unlock the first seal of the god's left leg. Then, this leg's power will be even more terrifying and even a Supreme Saint's immortal body might not be able to go up against it."

Chapter 1779 - Meeting Guoguo and the Demon Ape Again

Chapter 1779: Meeting Guoguo and the Demon Ape Again

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

A tiny amount of strength?

Zhang Ruochen did not know what to say.

Perhaps in Yueshen's eyes, the power of a god's left leg was almost insignificant. However, to Zhang Ruochen, it was an extremely potent power, a power many times stronger than his own.

If he were to compare the god's left leg with something, it would be a peerless soldier who weighed in over two hundred pounds. Zhang Ruochen, however, was akin to a seven- or eight-year-old child. With his current strength, there was no way for him to utilize the soldier at all.

On the contrary, the peerless soldier was a burden to a certain extent.

It was obvious as Zhang Ruochen limped as he walked.

Zhang Ruochen still had a long way to go if he wanted to use the god's left leg at will.

Nevertheless, having a god's left leg was indeed a great thing. If he spent more time cultivating and refining it, perhaps he might be able to gain unexpected benefits in the future.

Zhang Ruochen then thought about another matter. "How is Kong Lanyou doing?"

He clearly remembered that before he fainted, Kong Lanyou was seriously wounded, hence he was very concerned.

Yueshen did not speak, and the atmosphere in Guanghan Temple became a little somber.

The more somber it got, the more worried Zhang Ruochen felt. “What happened? Tell me. No matter how bad the news is, I can handle it,” he said.

Yueshen sighed slightly. “Her immortal body was shattered, and her cultivation rank has dropped back to the that of a Saint King.”

Zhang Ruochen felt pain in his heart as he clenched his fists tightly. “Damn that Blackheart Demonlord. If I ever become a god, I will definitely kill him.”

For Saint Kings to form immortal Saint Bodies, they would need to break through to the Supreme Saint rank. Not only did that demand unparalleled talent, but also the accumulation of various achievements.

Once successful, they could live for at least three thousand years.

Even after they died, their bodies would not rot for thousands of years.

However, once a Supreme Saint’s immortal body was shattered and her ranking fell, the difficulty of remolding another one would be a hundred or a thousand times more difficult.

Although there were prior cultivators who had successfully reshaped their immortal bodies, only a few had ever done so. Many more were relegated to mediocrity, never to return to the realm of a Supreme Saint.

Kong Lanyou’s path had pretty much been severed, and her journey of cultivation would be full of darkness and difficulties.

It all came down to the fact that Kong Lanyou’s cultivation as a Supreme Saint had only been a few years long. Hence, her foundation had yet to stabilize. She only ended up in such a

miserable state because she had fought against the avatar of a god.

If she had been like Supreme Saint Manjian, who had cultivated his Supreme Saint realm for thousands of years, such an incident would have unlikely happened.

“Do not worry too much about her. Perhaps, it may not be a bad thing at all for her,” Yueshen said.

Zhang Ruochen thought that they were merely comforting words from Yueshen and did not even listen to her. He wanted to leave Guanghan Temple and rush to Chaisang Sanctuary to visit Kong Lanyou as soon as possible.

He knew very well how painful and discouraging it was for cultivators to have their Saint Path severed.

Kong Lanyou had waited for him for eight hundred years and regarded his hatred as her own, fighting against Chi Yao throughout that time.

In the past eight hundred years, she already had a hard time on her own, and her heart must have been extremely tired. She was obviously a peerless beauty, yet her hair was all white. Zhang Ruochen simply could not forget the sorrow in her eyes.

“If you plan on searching for her, I am afraid that you can only do so in the Kunlun Realm,” Yueshen said.

“The Kunlun Realm? She has returned to the Kunlun Realm?” Zhang Ruochen stopped.

“Not only has she gone there, but all of the Saint-rank cultivators from both the Celestial and Infernal Courts have also gone there!” Yueshen continued.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart trembled as his eyes widened. “Has the Altar of Heaven and Earth been breached?”

“Yes.”

“How long ago?”

“A month back.”

“That long?”

“The Altar of Heaven and Earth was breached a month ago, but the main armies from all of the great realms have only rushed over to the Kunlun Realm in the last few days. So, if there are people and matters that you cannot let go in the Kunlun Realm, you should go now because it is still not too late,” Yueshen said.

Zhang Ruochen breathed a sigh of relief as he tried to calm his garbled mind and sort out his thoughts.

He definitely needed to go back to the Kunlun Realm. His mother, Concubine Lin along with his fourth elder brother, ninth elder sister, and his old clique from the Shengming Central Empire—all of them—needed to be picked up and relocated elsewhere.

In addition, there were a few things that he had to find out.

Zhang Ruochen did not fully trust Chi Yao with regard to the great upheaval eight hundred years ago, and he did not believe that his father would be controlled by the Blood Empress. Even a god could never turn an outstanding emperor like him into a puppet.

If his father had become a puppet of the Blood Empress, how could he have possibly cultivated Buddhahood in the Western Buddha Realm and allow Fairy Cihang to bring him the Eight-Dragon Umbrella?

When that occurred to him, Zhang Ruochen’s thoughts came to a halt as he realized that he had seemingly misunderstood something in the past.

“Back then, Fairy Cihang only said that hundreds of years ago, an emperor in the Kunlun Realm had given her the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and asked her to bring it to me. But, hundreds of years back, Father was not the only emperor in the Kunlun Realm.

“Could it be that the one who attained Buddhahood in the Western Buddha Realm is actually not Father at all? Otherwise, why wouldn’t he come and see me?

“If the one in the Western Buddha Realm is not Father, where did he go? Is he still alive?

“Also, for Blackie to be an old acquaintance of Blackheart Demonlord and be very close with the Empress of a Thousand Bones... is it hiding anything from me? Was it really the Emperor Who Slaughtered the Heavens and Earth thousands of years ago? Why did Saint Monk Xumi seal its Saint Soul in the Sacred Qiankun Wooden Picture Scroll?”

“Is my mother the Blood Empress?”

...

There were too many questions in Zhang Ruochen’s heart. He then closed his eyes and asked, “Mistress Yueshen, where is Blackie?”

“That phoenix?”

“After the battle, it left Mount Yueshen and never came back,” she said.

“Bastard.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists tightly and was furious. That pr*ck must have concealed a lot of information and was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would question it. So, it ran away and hid beforehand.

The next time he saw it, he would definitely pluck all of its feathers.

“I’ll head out for a bit.”

Zhang Ruochen called forth the Golden Dragon Carriage and commandeered nine golden dragons as he flew off Mount Yueshen.

Before he returned to the Kunlun Realm, there were some issues he had to clear up.

Four hours later, Zhang Ruochen arrived at a sanctuary that was surrounded by mountain peaks. Maneuvering the dragon carriage, he stopped it under a hump-shaped holy mountain and released a soundwave from his mouth. “Central Shengming Empire’s Prince Zhang Ruochen has come to pay his respects to the mountain.”

The Central Shengming Empire's two sacred beasts were both at the Supreme Saint level, and they had occupied two sanctuaries in the Shatuo Domain, turning them into their territories. The Demi Saints, Saints, and Saint Kings from the old Central Shengming Empire cultivated in those two sanctuaries.

Zhang Ruochen went up to one of the sanctuaries.

They were sacred beasts that protected the country and were also Supreme Saints in their own right. Not to mention, they had last seen Emperor Ming eight hundred years ago, so Zhang Ruochen refused to believe that they knew nothing.

A moment later, an earth-rattling sound came from the sacred mountain as two demonic monstrous auras rushed out.

Then, a rabbit and demonic ape charged at him from the direction of the auras.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are finally here. I thought that the gods had taken you out!” The rabbit, which was the size of a fat pig, sped toward Zhang Ruochen in excitement.

Zhang Ruochen quickly stepped aside to dodge it.

Bam!!

The rabbit crashed heavily into the ground and created a large hole in the process.”

“That is what you get for your impudence toward His Royal Highness.”

The Demon Ape rolled its eyes and performed a fist-palm salute as it said, “Greetings, Your Highness.”

The two beasts before him were the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Guoguo and the Demon Ape that had stolen, as well as eaten, Zhang Ruochen's sacred medicine leaves back in the Qiankun Realm.

The leaves were so precious that Zhang Ruochen could not bear to eat them.

A single Moonleaf was enough to recover fifty percent of Yueshen's divine power.

These two had not wasted the sacred medicinal leaves at least, and both of their cultivation bases had reached the realm of a Six-step Saint King. On top of that, the auras they emanated were reminiscent of two demonic gods.

These two gluttons actually cultivated at a faster speed than Princess Bai Li who had also stolen the same sacred medicine.

However, Princess Bai Li was improving step by step, and she had also cultivated the Path of Truth. There were barely any foes who could match her in the same rank. Unlike the Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit and the Demon Ape, whose cultivations entirely stemmed from eating, there was still a large gap between the two.

When Zhang Ruochen recalled the fact that his sacred medicine had been stolen, he became furious.

“Why are there only two of you? Where are the two Golden Beast Kings?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“An unprecedented catastrophe has befallen the Kunlun Realm, and both Beast Kings have rushed over to join the battle,” the Demon Ape said.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and replied, “Nonsense. Only beings below the Supreme Saint rank are able to enter the battlefield in the Kunlun Realm.”

The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit got to its feet and patted the dust off its belly. “You may be correct about the battlefield in the Kunlun Realm being accessible only to those beneath the Supreme Saint rank, but you do not know that the stars around the Kunlun Realm are the battlefield for the Supreme Saints.

“Apparently, not only will they fight each other, but they will also snatch the Divine Planets left behind by the Kunlun Realm’s gods. Any Divine Planet would make a Supreme Saint salivate since it could help them attain godhood.”

“Damn it,” Zhang Ruochen hissed.

The planets amongst the stars around the Kunlun Realm were all relics left behind by the ancient Kunlun gods. Now, he could only watch as the Supreme Saints from both the

Celestial and Infernal Courts took them away, and that made him really angry.

The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit rolled its eyes as it said, “Actually, it is not that simple. Without precise coordinates, even a Supreme Saint would be hard-pressed to find the Divine Planets...”

“Because after a god falls, a Divine Planet’s light would dim, and it would float within the dark space, which can only be detected using spiritual powers.

“The two Beast Kings have mentioned before that the stars around the Kunlun Realm are like vast oceans, while the Divine Planets are like small islands in the middle of the vast oceans. Finding one is about as difficult as climbing all the way to Heaven.

“Plus, many of the Divine Planets around the stars in the Kunlun Realm have been hidden away by an old baldie using dimensional means. They practically cannot be found.”

“A baldie?”

Zhang Ruochen glared at the Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit.

The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit patted its paws and solemnly said, “Aye, that is what the two Beast Kings said.”

Zhang Ruochen then continued, “Since they are that hard to find, why did the two Beast Kings rush to join the fray?”

“The two Beast Kings told us that they wanted to create traps with a few Divine Planets they had already discovered and send some of the Infernal Court’s Supreme Saints to their doom.”

The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit rubbed its paws together happily. If its rank had not been insufficient, perhaps it would have also joined the two Beast Kings in wreaking some havoc. If they managed to booby trap a Supreme Saint to death, the resources and treasures they gained would be unimaginable for such beings of the Saint King realm.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen took the Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape to meet Grandmaster Taiyi.

He wanted to find out what the Guardian Dragon Pavilion had built with the Central Shengming Empire's treasury.

Unfortunately, no one was home because Grandmaster Taiyi had already returned to the Kunlun Realm.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen could only drive the Golden Dragon Carriage and return to Mount Yueshen. It seemed that he had no choice but to unravel the various mysteries from eight hundred years ago himself.

Chapter 1780 - A Day in Heaven, a Year on Earth

Chapter 1780: A Day in Heaven, a Year on Earth

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

In Guanghan Temple, Zhang Ruochen pulled out the sundial and placed it at the center of the hall.

Then, Zhang Ruochen held the Oracle of Saint Monk Xumi and saw a cyan-colored light appear on the sundial. Its brilliance was magnificent.

“It is said that Saint Monk Xumi was the master of the sundial?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yueshen nodded before she said, “Yes, and no. Saint Monk Xumi was just one of its masters. In fact, the sundial has existed for a very long time, and it can be tracked all the way back to the genesis of civilization.”

Yueshen pushed her slender jade-like hands in the direction of the sundial, and a surge of mighty divine power poured into it.

Whoosh!!

A dense cluster of light flew out of the sundial and engulfed the entire temple.

“It is the Mark of Time. Stand back.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed, and he darted back as quick as lightning.

In the Frostfire Phoenix’s lair, where Zhang Ruochen had seen the sundial for the first time, being hit by three of the Marks of Time was enough to shave off fifty years from his lifespan.

Zhang Ruochen only stopped after he retreated about a hundred and twenty feet away.

On the other hand, Yueshen did not move at all and just stood in the same spot.

The Marks of Time were extinguished like a candle in the wind long before they got close to her.

“Amazing. She’s able to ignore the Power of Time,” Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Yueshen’s strength was truly unpredictable, massive, and omnipotent. What could the world throw at her to defeat her?

It seemed as though Yueshen had seen through Zhang Ruochen’s thoughts, and she said, “It is not that the Power of Time cannot harm me, but the Power of Time from the sundial is too weak.”

“This is considered weak? Even if a Nine-step Saint King were to step within a hundred and twenty feet radius of the sundial, he would barely be able to take a few breaths before his entire lifespan is exhausted,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Yueshen responded, “When the sundial’s power is fully unleashed, forget about the one hundred and twenty feet radius, even the time in a macroworld will be turned upside down. The damage it could cause is completely unimaginable for someone of your current cultivation level.”

“I have tried to infuse Saint Qi into the sundial, but it was like tossing rocks into the sea. I did not get any reaction from the sundial at all. Does it require divine power to be activated?” Zhang Ruochen secretly asked.

Whoosh!

Perhaps the flow of time was just too fast, as the sundial actually emitted a sound that was similar to flowing water.

Yueshen stared at the sundial and said, “You can place the Oracle of Saint Monk Xumi into the groove in the middle of the stone platform.”

Zhang Ruochen observed it carefully and noticed that there were three grooves at the center of the platform.

The size and shape of the groove in the middle almost matched the spherical jade Oracle in his hand.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen made a new discovery. As long as he held the Oracle in his hand, the Mark of Time light spots would automatically avoid him.

“Interesting, very interesting. What kind of material is this jade made of that it can cross such a long span of time from one hundred thousand years ago to one hundred thousand years later? Could it be that this jade used to be part of the sundial itself?”

Zhang Ruochen walked back into Guanghai Temple with the jade in hand and placed it in the middle of the three grooves.

Nothing changed.

What was going on? Was there zero connection between the jade and the sundial?

Suddenly, all the Marks of Time that were floating in the air disappeared as the flow of time went into flux, becoming slower and slower.

Zhang Ruochen made some careful calculations, and a look of shock appeared on his face as he muttered to himself, “How is this possible? How... is it possible for the ratio of time to reach such a terrifying state.”

Yueshen faintly replied, “You do not have to be surprised. There used to be a saying in the Kunlun Realm, ‘one day in Heaven is one year on Earth’. That is because, a hundred thousand years ago, during the middle and later stages of the battle between gods, Saint Monk Xumi unleashed the sundial’s power to its maximum and engulfed the entire Kunlun Realm. A year of training in the Kunlun Realm meant that only a day had passed in the Celestial Court and other macroworlds.

“In just a few hundred years, a large number of elite powerhouses had been born in the Kunlun Realm. By the time the Infernal Court noticed it, it was already too late. At that point, the Kunlun Realm had already become the largest and strongest macroworld, and the power they possessed was

enough to determine the outcome of the final battle. If it had not been for...”

Yueshen abruptly stopped at this juncture as a look of regret appeared in her eyes, and she uttered a sentence that had a deep meaning to it. “The human heart is just too complicated!”

That was true.

Within a hundred and twenty feet away from the sundial, the ratio of time flow was indeed an astonishing one to three hundred and sixty-five.

A year of training under the sundial would only be a day in the outside world.

Zhang Ruochen was shaken as he asked, “Did the Kunlun Realm have such a glorious period a hundred thousand years ago?”

“It just went by in a flash. Relying on the Power of Time caused its power to swell in a short period of time, and that proved to be ultimately fatal. Blackheart Demonlord was a god who cultivated during that glorious age, and what became of him?” Yueshen said.

Zhang Ruochen felt that Yueshen’s words were not merely a reference to the Kunlun Realm a hundred thousand years ago, but they also seemed to be a reminder to him.

“No matter how you put it, that period is indeed the brightest page in the Kunlun Realm’s history. Unfortunately, it was erased by an invisible force, and now, no one knows about it aside from the cultivators who have lived through that period,” Yueshen said.

“Who covered up that part of history? Why did they do that?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yueshen shook her head and said, “I too would like the answer to that question.”

After an extended silence, Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh. After all, the Kunlun Realm’s glorious age was gone, and it currently resembled a dying dragon in a mire. Whether it could survive the latest catastrophe was still unknown.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I found the sundial in the nest of the Frostfire Phoenix. It is likely that it also hides the Star Soul of the Zuling Realm’s only god, Lieshen. Mistress Yueshen, you have great power and wisdom. Can you help me unlock the secrets within it?”

“Lieshen’s Star Soul is not within the sundial, but...”

Yueshen walked gently toward the sundial and looked at it. “Perhaps the answer is here.”

He finally realized that at some point, a lot of arcane patterns and light spots had appeared on the stone platform beneath the sundial.

The light spots numbered in the hundreds of thousands, and the lines, as well as patterns, were even more densely packed. Connecting together, they formed the divine portrait of a Buddha and also a seemingly complicated astral route.

It was not the first time Zhang Ruochen had seen such patterns and light spots. Afraid that they would disappear without warning, he took out a piece of spirit paper and drew the patterns and light spots.

“What exactly is this?”

Zhang Ruochen studied the patterns and light spots while he analyzed them at the same time. He had some guesses in his mind, but he soon eliminated them one by one.

Yueshen looked at him for a good while before she said, “Those are the stars beyond the Kunlun Realm, and every light spot is a star.”

“Do these patterns and lines reflect the lines in the stars?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yueshen extended two of her snow-white fingers as she made a gesture in the air before she smiled slightly. “The secret of those lines is for you to naturally find out later. However, I have probably unraveled the secret behind Lieshen’s Star Soul.”

Zhang Ruochen listened attentively but only heard Yueshen say, “Within Guanghan Temple, only the sundial itself emits

light, so how can a shadow appear?”

“Shadow? What shadow?”

Zhang Ruochen was quite puzzled at first, but out of the blue, he apparently realized something, and he looked at the stone needle at the center of the sundial.

The stone needle was projected toward the location of the current hour.

But, the projection of the stone needle upon the dial was clearly not from the light.

Zhang Ruochen flew to the top of the stone platform and turned the stone disk on the sundial. Then, he noticed that the shadow on the stone disk was always pointing in the same direction.

“Ahahaha! So that is what it is.” Zhang Ruochen laughed.

The projection of the stone needle did not represent time at all. It was very likely that it was pointing to where Lieshen’s Star Soul was.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen only had knowledge of one direction, and he had no idea how far he would need to travel in that direction before he could find the god’s Star Soul.

One hundred thousand miles? A million miles? Or would he have to cross a galaxy?

Zhang Ruochen stared at Yueshen with a smile on his face.

Yueshen stopped pouring her divine power into the sundial and said, “Do not look at me. This is your own opportunity, so you have to look for it yourself. In the end, your path is only yours to walk.”

If Yueshen were willing to help, with her supreme powers she could easily cross the boundaries of hundreds of millions of miles and retrieve the Star Soul.

However, Zhang Ruochen was not disappointed because of this since he understood that what Yueshen said made sense, and his path, was his own to walk.

After Yueshen retracted her powers, the Power of Time on the sundial disappeared, and the flow of time in Guanghan Temple returned to normal.

“How could this happen? Does the sundial really require divine power to spur it?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yueshen responded, “That is correct.”

Zhang Ruochen had the urge to vomit blood. He had been so excited earlier, thinking that with the sundial, his cultivation speed would increase by leaps and bounds. Besides, he could even use it to raise a large number of elites in a short period of time.

If it could only be activated by divine power, how could he even use it?

Even if Yueshen was willing to use her divine powers to help him with his cultivation, Zhang Ruochen could not continue to stay on Mount Yueshen with peace of mind.

Going to the Kunlun Realm was a matter most urgent.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s confused face, a sly look flashed across Yueshen’s eyes. “Have you heard of the Godstone?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lit up, and he said, “Can the sundial be activated with a Godstone?”

“Yes. Do you see the two grooves next to the jade? Put two Godstones into the groove to activate the sundial,” Yueshen said.

An expression of joy appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face before his brows were furrowed deeply as he said, “A Godstone is a supreme treasure that only the gods could use, and it is literally impossible to buy one in the holy city. Mistress Yueshen, surely you have some Godstones with you? Can you give me some?”

“No.”

Yueshen’s answer was succinct.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank once again.

Soon after, though, Yueshen spoke again. “Other macroworlds may not be able to form Godstones, but the Kunlun Realm is one of the few long lasting macroworlds and should be able to form Godstones. Go and look at a few of those ancient mines in the Kunlun Realm, you may find something.”

Chapter 1781 - Last Year at This Door

Chapter 1781: Last Year at This Door

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Zhang Ruochen could not escape whatever he needed to face, after all.

Yueshen sent him out of the Celestial Court and unlocked the Qiankun Realm's seal within his Sea of Qi.

He conjured a spiritual avatar and entered the Qiankun Realm, arriving at the Central Shengming Empire's imperial burial grounds. Then, he appeared before a large tomb.

Before Zhang Ruochen left the Kunlun Realm, he had moved the imperial tombs and imperial ancestral halls into the Qiankun Realm.

Now, he was standing before a tombstone.

The words, "Tomb of the Empress" were engraved on the tombstone.

Eight hundred years ago, Emperor Ming had told him that his mother was buried in the Tomb of the Empress, and Zhang Ruochen had always believed those words.

Now, however, he needed to verify it himself.

Zhang Ruochen stood in place for a long time and took a deep breath before he released his spiritual power. It spread all across the tomb to explore it.

To do so was disrespectful to his late mother, but he needed to know the truth and did not want to be kept in the dark.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen retracted his spiritual power as a bitter and mocking smile appeared on his face. He laughed. “Haha, it turns out that Chi Yao was not lying to me. It really is an empty tomb.”

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen screamed in agony. “Father, why did you lie to me?! Who is my birth mother? Why have you deceived me? Hahaha!!”

Zhang Ruochen found it very difficult to accept the fact that the Blood Empress was his birth mother.

The Immortal Vampires were synonymous with evil, destruction, and slaughter. They drank the blood of living beings to enhance their cultivation and constantly pillaged. Their greed was insatiable.

This race simply destroyed one civilization after another.

Once they destroyed all civilizations, they would eventually die off themselves.

Zhang Ruochen was repulsed by the vampires, and he hated them. But now... an Immortal Vampire was probably his mother. What kind of joke was this?

At some point, Yueshen had also entered the Qiankun Realm, and she appeared beside Zhang Ruochen. Her beautiful star-like eyes were fixed on the imperial tombs, and she said, “The ancestors of the Zhang Clan are far more than this. Many powerful characters are not buried here.”

Zhang Ruochen managed to control his emotions and gradually calmed down. He use Heaven’s Eye to observe the imperial burial grounds.

The gravesite was one of the most important grounds for the Zhang Clan, and it had been laid with the inscriptions of a Supreme Saint.

In the past, when Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level was still too low, he had visited some areas of the imperial burial grounds and did not understand a lot of it. Even the relocation of the imperial tombs had originally been carried out by the Guardian Dragon Pavilion.

Now when Zhang Ruochen observed the imperial burial grounds, he was slightly shocked to discover that there were as many as nine tombs that radiated the aura of a Supreme Saint. Even though the Supreme Saint ancestors were dead, their auras were still potent and constantly flowing out of the tombs.

“I heard my father said that the imperial burial grounds were only created after the establishment of the Central Shengming Empire,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Our ancestors were not buried in the burial grounds.”

Clearly, the Zhang Clan’s history was far beyond the Central Shengming Empire’s.

“So that is how it is.

“This place should have had a god buried in it!” Yueshen said.

A name that made all descendants of the Zhang Clan proud filled Zhang Ruochen’s heart. “Mistress Yueshen, are you referring to The Immovable Wisdom King?”

Yueshen shook her head and said, “The era of The Immovable Wisdom King is too far back. Even I have not met him before. But during the end of the Middle Ages, the Zhang Clan gave birth to a god called the Crownsnatcher. It is said that he fought against a god and perished in the stars. His divine body was later brought back to the Kunlun Realm by the descendants of the Zhang Clan.”

In Yueshen’s opinion, once the corpse was brought back to the Kunlun Realm, it would be natural for it to be buried within the Zhang Clan’s imperial burial grounds, hence why she said that.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and responded, “I once read an ancient tome that mentioned another ancestral land belonging to the Zhang Clan, but it was destroyed at the end of the Middle Ages. As for where that ancestral land was, no one knows!” Yueshen had seemingly lost interest in the imperial burial grounds and turned around to walk out. “It is extremely perilous to go to the Kunlun Realm now. I have inscribed a Divine Mark on you. Perhaps it could be of some use to you.”

“A Divine Mark!”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes lit up as the haze in his heart was swept away.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen would become quite envious whenever he saw other scions of gods with Divine Marks on them.

After all, a body with the protection of a Divine Mark was similar to an Unbreakable Body, and he would not be easily killed.

Now that he had the Divine Mark, even if he were to meet elites like the Fane of Truth's Ten Divine Scions, he would still have a chance to escape.

That was great!

As expected of Yueshen, the more he looked at her the more godly she appeared.

Zhang Ruochen roused his Saint Qi and activated the Divine Mark. Right after that, a series of white circuit lines appeared and covered every inch of his skin, generating a faint chill.

Very soon, the smile on Zhang Ruochen's face froze because he felt a cold surge between his legs as they were intertwined with fine circuits.

"This..."

An unspeakable feeling manifested in Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Yueshen's voice rang out in Zhang Ruochen's ears once again as she said, "The Divine Mark has not only been placed on your skin, but also in your Sea of Qi. It will seal off the Qiankun Realm's power and prevent it from seeping out of your Sea of Qi."

Zhang Ruochen's initial elation disappeared in an instant.

"Why?"

Since the Divine Mark sealed his Sea of Qi, did that not mean that Zhang Ruochen could no longer use the Qiankun Realm's power?

That power was his biggest trump card.

“The spirit of the Qiankun Realm has begun to take form. You will be the Qiankun Realm’s master in the future, not its envoy. If you want to be the master of the realm, you need to use your power to suppress the Qiankun Realm’s world spirit and cast it away instead of borrowing its powers to slay your foes.”

Yueshen flew up and rushed out of the Qiankun Realm.

Zhang Ruochen carefully thought about what Yueshen had said, and a moment later, his spiritual avatar flew out of the Qiankun Realm and merged into his body.

Yueshen returned to the Celestial Court, while Zhang Ruochen brought Awesome, the Little Taoist, as well as the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and the Demon Ape, to one of the planets by the bank of the Celestial River. Using the Saint Road to connect the Celestial Court to the Kunlun Realm, they soon arrived at a planet not too far away from the Kunlun Realm.

This planet, named Tianquan, was the Grand Terminal of Merits, which had been recently developed in combination with the Celestial Court, the Fane of Merits, and the Kunlun Realm.

On Tianquan, there were dimensional teleportation arrays, a merits exchange hall... and the like. All of them were meant to serve the Kunlun Realm’s War of Merits, and all major macroworlds had also established their strongholds there.

Although the Kunlun Realm’s battlefield had just been recently opened up, Tianquan was not deserted. Instead, it was overcrowded as a steady stream of cultivators kept arriving.

“The Kunlun Realm is full of opportunities, and if my luck is with me, I might even be able to obtain the legacy of a Supreme Saint.”

“It is said that the Kunlun Realm has many sacred artifacts from the Middle Ages. It even has supreme artifacts. If I manage to get my hands on a few of them, my power will definitely increase.”

“You lot are a bunch of clowns. Are all of you graverobbers? Do not forget why we are going to the Kunlun Realm. We are

going to war, and our enemy is the Infernal Court. This time around, I must enter the Saint King Merit List!”

...

All of the cultivators who went to the Kunlun Realm had their own goals. Some coveted the realm’s treasures, some wanted to hone their skills, while some wanted to become famous.

Zhang Ruochen was not too bothered. He just went directly to the Grand Terminal of Merits.

After verifying his identity, the reception staff at the Grand Terminal of Merits looked at Zhang Ruochen strangely as expressions of surprise, excitement, solemnity, and awe were interlaced in his eyes.

A moment later, the receptionist cautiously asked, “There are seventy-two sub-terminals established in the Kunlun Realm. May I know which terminal are you going to, Master Ruochen?”

“Are you a Kunlun Realm cultivator?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The receptionist replied, “All of the low-level staff in the Grand Terminal of Merits are recruited from the Kunlun Realm. Since this is the Kunlun Realm’s war, we need to provide a helping hand as well.”

Zhang Ruochen did not ask further and said, “I would like to go to the Omen Ridge in the Eastern Region. What is the closest sub-terminal that leads there?”

While the Omen Ridge was a remote and barren place, it produced two extraordinary characters in Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu. Soon, a crowd thronged over.

The receptionist then said, “The thirteenth sub-terminal is the closest to the Omen Ridge, and it is built in the royal city of Qianshui Commandery.”

“Qianshui Commandery.”

When Zhang Ruochen said those words out loud, the look in his eyes became a little complicated.

Through the dimensional teleportation array, Zhang Ruochen directly teleported from the Grand Terminal of Merits to the 13th Sub-Terminal of Merits. As he walked out of it, he appeared in the streets of the royal city of Qianshui Commandery.

Qianshui Commandery was one of the top-ranking commanderies in the Eastern Region. The royal city was built to look very impressive with its towering walls that resembled mountains. The strength of the city's defense system became a lot stronger than before after the sub-terminal was built in the city. In the past, Sifang Commandery had commanded an army of a million and declared war on Yunwu Commandery. In just ten short days, Yunwu Commandery lost twelve cities in a row.

Yunwu Commandery's king had no choice but to bring Zhang Ruochen along to Qianshui Commandery's royal city to seek help in hopes to survive the onslaught. In order to save the country at that time, Zhang Ruochen even participated in a spouse-seeking martial arts competition for the thirteenth princess of Qianshui Commandery.

When he recalled that martial arts competition, an ice-cold figure appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Suddenly, his heart ached greatly.

If it had not been for that competition, he would not have had to deal with so many grievances and feuds later on.

Zhang Ruochen walked on the crowded streets with many thoughts running through his mind, and his body was as numb as a doll. On the contrary, the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape were ecstatic to return to the Kunlun Realm. As they jumped about along the street, god knows how many item shelves they knocked over.

Previously, Zhang Ruochen's three meridians had been exhausted, and many of his foes had appeared, wanting to find him and take the opportunity to finish him off. At the same time, everyone knew that Huang Yanchen, the Princess of Qianshui Commandery, was Zhang Ruochen's wife.

In order to force Zhang Ruochen out, an unknown number of enemies headed by the Immortal Vampires struck the royal palace in Qianshui Commandery and killed all of Huang Yanchen's clansmen. They then captured the king and queen of the commandery.

It was during that period of hardship that Zhang Ruochen finally opened up his heart to Huang Yanchen and tried to truly love someone.

Unknowingly, Zhang Ruochen had approached the gates of the Qianshui Commandery's royal palace. Even after several years had passed, there were still faint bloodstains on the palace walls, and the rain was unable to wash them away.

Zhang Ruochen initially thought that he had completely forgotten about Huang Yanchen, but when he got there, he still had the urge to walk into the palace. Perhaps by walking in, he could see her as he did before.

They could either draw swords at each other or cross glances coldly, or look at each other silently, or... treat the other like a stranger.

However, in the end, Zhang Ruochen did not cross the palace gate.

Last year at this very door, the plum blossoms and their faces were flushed.

Gone was the familiar face, yet the plum blossom continued to bloom.

“It is all in the past, all in the past...”

Zhang Ruochen turned around and left the royal palace. The farther he walked, the more his back emanated a depressing aura. Perhaps this was a hurdle that he would never get past in his lifetime.

Chapter 1782 - Old Place, Old Acquaintances

Chapter 1782: Old Place, Old Acquaintances

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

It was clear that Zhang Ruochen was not an ordinary person. As soon as he walked out of the Qianshui Royal City, he composed himself and hid everything deep down his heart.

There were more important things to do.

Raising his head and taking a deep breath, Zhang Ruochen noticed something different.

“Qianshui Commandery can only be regarded as a remote place in the Eastern Region. To think that the spiritual qi here is so potent that there is a trace of Saint Qi flowing in the air.

“It looks like the Kunlun Realm is really beginning to recover!”

Some time ago, the concentration of spiritual qi in Qianshui Commandery had been less than one-fifth of what it was now.

It could be inferred that sacred grounds occupied by top-class sects and schools would have even more potent spiritual qi and Saint Qi.

A second later, Zhang Ruochen began exploring the place.

He soon realized that the Kunlun Realm’s dimensional structure and material hardness had increased by several times. While it was still far behind the Celestial Court, it was not weaker than the top one thousand realms on the Merit List of Ten Thousand Realms.

The soil seemed to contain spiritual substances, and even ordinary weeds grew like green emeralds.

“I quite look forward to this. What level would the Kunlun Realm reach once it completely recovers?”

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power and summoned Awesome, the Little Taoist, as well as the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape, who were still in the city. He then drove the Golden Dragon Carriage toward Yunwu Commandery.

The distance between Yunwu Commandery and Qianshui Commandery’s royal palace was about a hundred thousand miles. With the Golden Dragon Carriage’s speed, they crossed the borders of Yunwu Commandery a mere two hours later.

As they arrived outside the royal city...

“I’m finally back!”

Zhang Ruochen jumped down from the carriage and looked at the familiar city in the distance with high spirits.

He would be able to see his mother, his fourth elder brother, and ninth elder sister soon. If the family could get together again, even if it was just for a simple meal, it would be a happy occasion.

For the past two years, Zhang Ruochen had been fighting and killing in the Celestial Court. He faced a storm of blood every day with the possibility of either him or the other side dying. Zhang Ruochen’s heart was just really tired!

This time around, upon his return to Yunwu Commandery, Zhang Ruochen would bring all of them into Qiankun Realm.

If it was possible, Zhang Ruochen even planned to pick up all of Yunwu Commandery’s civilians and take them away.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s gaze sank slightly as he sensed many powerful auras emanating from within the commandery. Although they had used qi-restraining techniques, they could not hide from Zhang Ruochen’s perception.

“Four Saint Kings, and thirteen Saints. For so many powerful persons to be in the small Yunwu Commandery...”

Yunwu Commandery's royal city was not too far from the 13th sub-terminal, and the appearance of so many cultivators was not very surprising. However, Zhang Ruochen had many enemies, and he needed to be on guard.

Plus, the Saint Kings from both the Heavenly Realm and Infernal Court possessed valuable items that could hide their auras, and Zhang Ruochen's perception might not necessarily be able to detect them. There was a possibility that there were even more powerful characters in the city itself.

“Hopefully, nothing happens.”

Zhang Ruochen did not want to arouse suspicion, so he did not release a spiritual avatar to probe the matter for fear of being sensed by elites.

After he got Awesome, the Little Taoist, as well as the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape, to wait outside the city, he activated the power of the Bodhi Emperor beads to hide his aura. Then, he sneaked into the royal city.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen appeared inside the palace.

He did not find his mother, Concubine Lin, his fourth elder brother, Zhang Shaochu, or his ninth elder sister, Zhang Yuxi, and Zhang Ruochen's heart tightened slightly. Had the thing he worried about the most happened after all?

As he left the palace, Zhang Ruochen's eyes brimmed with cold light. He was ready to reveal his identity and force all of the Saints and Saint Kings in the city out. Perhaps he would be able to glean something out of their mouths.

Zhang Ruochen abruptly stopped as he looked to the side of the street and saw a magnificent mansion. Two forcibly written words, “Lin Manor”, were displayed on a gilded plaque above the gate.

The Saint Light in Zhang Ruochen's eyes flickered, and he could see that something was off, so he walked toward the door.

Clang clang, clang clang...

Zhang Ruochen held the gate knocker and knocked.

After knocking for a long time, he heard light footsteps inside, and the heavy door was opened. A beautiful woman in her early twenties appeared before Zhang Ruochen.

Lin Lingshan, Zhang Ruochen's cousin sister...

The girl who had looked down on Zhang Ruochen back then reappeared in front of him, and just as in the past, Zhang Ruochen's heart remained calm. His face was impassive.

Lin Lingshan's eyes seemed a little dazed, and when she recognized Zhang Ruochen, a look of joy filled her pretty face. However, she soon became nervous again, her expression bizarre.

It appeared that she had matured a lot over the years, and she no longer possessed that sense of youthfulness and haughtiness.

The moment she saw Zhang Ruochen, a look of inferiority flashed across her face, but shortly after, she blinked anxiously as if to hint something to him.

Zhang Ruochen was apparently not able to see her hint, and he said, "We have not met for so many years now, won't you let me in to have a seat?"

Lin Lingshan's neck stiffened, and she shook her head slightly. Yet, the next moment, her face became pale as she sighed and nodded. "Come in... Come in..." she said quiveringly.

Zhang Ruochen calmly followed her from behind as he limped into the Lin Manor and walked about ten feet.

Out of the blue, a dark wind came rushing down from above his head.

Lin Lingshan quickly turned and exclaimed, "Watch out!"

Without her reminder, Zhang Ruochen had already noticed that something was wrong, and he slowly raised his head.

He only saw the dark wind above him condense into the form of a dark and terrifying ghost that emanated a tyrannical aura. In an instant, Lin Lingshan was pinned to the ground by the aura, and her eyes were full of fear.

At the second, she saw something even more shocking, though.

Zhang Ruochen stood still, exhaling once, and the terrifying ghost let out a screech before it was dispelled by the force of his breath.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen raised his arm and performed a grabbing motion in the direction of the stone pond.

A man in a black robe materialized as a result. He was a Spiritual-power Saint and the one who had controlled a ghost lord to attempt the murder of Zhang Ruochen.

Realizing that he had provoked something out of his league, the black-robed man promptly activated a Saint Art and rushed farther into Lin Manor.

Zhang Ruochen flicked his finger, and a sword flew out of his fingertip.

Sching!!

The black-robed man's body burst open and turned into a cloud of blood.

Lin Lingshan had yet to recover from the shock. The black-robed man had been so terrifying earlier, and the Saint Aura he unleashed earlier was similar to that of a true god. The entire Lin Clan's cultivators would have to kneel before him.

Despite that, he was like a gnat in the face of Zhang Ruochen, killed with just the flick of a finger.

The second Lin Lingshan looked at Zhang Ruochen again, her eyes were filled with awe, and she immediately knelt before Zhang Ruochen. "Cousin... I beg you... Please... save Big Brother... Please save the Lin Clan... I beg you..."

Zhang Ruochen glanced deep into Lin Manor and said, "Get up. Lead the way."

Zhang Ruochen did not actually like Lin Manor or Lin Lingshan and her brother.

If it had not been for the purpose of finding his mother, Zhang Ruochen would never have walked in.

Of course, since he had already walked in, he could not ignore what was going on.

...

The Lin Clan's Ancestral Hall.

The members of the Lin Clan, as well as their servants, were all gathered together, and they knelt on the ground. Among them was Lin Lingshan's elder brother, Lin Chenyu, who had been castrated and made into a slave because he had offended the Seventh Prince, Zhang Tiangui.

After Zhang Tiangui slaughtered the Lin Clan, both Lingshan and Lin Chenyu, through some means, actually gathered the children of the branch families and rebuilt the Lin Clan. It seemed that the clan was now much stronger than before.

An extremely seductive woman in a black robe stood amid the crowd. She had long slender legs and extremely short underclothes, which revealed her snow-white waist and sexy belly button, while a perpetual smile hung on her face.

She was a charming and beautiful person who could turn the world upside down, but no one dared to have any untoward thoughts about her. Instead, everyone was trembling and terrified.

“Soul Search.”

The woman in the black robe grabbed the empty space with her fingers, and a large amount of black haze poured out.

Lin Chenyu's body was wrapped in black mist and floated off the ground. The black haze, reminiscent of tentacles, drilled into Lin Chenyu's head.

“Argh...”

Lin Chenyu's face contorted, and he screamed.

An elder of the Lin Clan, who had reached the Tianji Realm, seemed to have found strength from somewhere, and he broke through the suppressive aura. Standing up with red eyes, he

roared angrily, “Let go of the patriarch! If there is an issue... come at me.”

The black-robed woman turned around and smiled at the clan elder. “Okay. Then, tell me, where is Zhang Ruochen?”

“I do not know,” the clan elder said.

“I knew you would say that, so I did not bother asking you in the first place. Using the Soul Search directly, I can naturally find the information I want to know. But, my Soul Search is quite the powerful spell, and anyone who is afflicted with it will be reduced to a muddled fool, hehe.” The black-robed woman chuckled.

“This old one will fight you!”

That clan elder rushed toward the black-robed woman, but barely three steps in, a big bald man by the side stepped forward and swung an iron staff to his knees.

Splat!

The clan elder’s legs shattered like ceramic, turning into pieces of flesh and blood.

With a thud, the clan elder crumpled heavily to the ground as blood flowed all over, creating an indescribably miserable sight.

“Great Granduncle!”

Lin Lingshan rushed into the hall and knelt down as she hugged the elder’s upper body in tears.

The big bald man lifted the bloody rod and licked his lips as he guffawed. “Girl, who was knocking on the door outside just now? Has that person been eaten by Xie Hong’s ghost lord?”

Lin Lingshan was obviously very afraid of the big bald man, and her eyes could not help but move toward the direction of the corridor.

The big bald man noticed something and stared in the corridor’s direction too, only to see a young man limping over.

“Where did that cripple come from? Where’s Xie Hong?” the big bald man drawled.

He sensed a dangerous aura emanating from the cripple.

“A cripple?”

The black-robed woman looked over as well, and shock instantly appeared in her beautiful eyes. “Zhang... Zhang Ruochen...”

The space around shook slightly as Zhang Ruochen’s figure materialized before the black-robed woman.

Right then, the woman’s face turned pale as she struck both of her palms forward simultaneously. She transformed her spiritual powers into thunder and lightning, which then turned into a dozen thunder dragons that flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

“A spiritual power Saint King, I see.”

Zhang Ruochen pressed his palm forward, and a vortex appeared out of nowhere. Meanwhile, all of the thunderbolts that had been rushing toward him suddenly changed direction and struck the black-robed woman instead. The hits sent her flying through the walls and deep into the ancestral hall.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Within Lin Manor, more than ten black-robed, Saint-level cultivators ripped through the air and surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1783 - The Fool and the Butcher

Chapter 1783: The Fool and the Butcher

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

A series of powerful Saint-Path forces erupted and flooded Lin Manor entirely, stopping only at the edge of the manor as they were blocked by a light screen.

Most of the people in Lin Manor were so badly affected by the surging auras that their noses and ears bled, and they fainted on the ground.

Lin Chenyu noticed Zhang Ruochen's figure. While there was some initial elation and trembling, all of that turned into a long sigh. "Cousin... you... you should not... have come back..."

In Lin Chenyu's opinion, those black-robed cultivators were like incarnations of demon kings or celestial generals, and Zhang Ruochen was literally walking into a trap by coming back.

"I had to come back and visit."

A halo of Saint Qi appeared around Zhang Ruochen's body and soon covered Lin Chenyu, Lin Lingshan, as well as the rest. It helped them to resist the aura that was coming from all of the present Saints. Immediately after, he took out a low-grade sacred pill and tossed it to Lin Lingshan so that she could give it to the clan elder.

Whoosh!!

In the air, a circuit began to take shape.

A thin man in black walked out from the center of the circuit and sneered, “Zhang Ruochen, you have finally shown yourself!”

“With your cultivation level, you should not be hoping for me to show up,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

“There are three Nine-Step Saint Kings and more than ten Seven-step Saint Kings in our realm who are within the borders of Yunwu Commandery. I have already passed on the news to them, and they will rush over soon enough,” the man in the black robe said.

Zhang Ruochen responded, “To think that Ruiya Realm would send so many powerful folks just to come after me.”

He could detect an aura similar to that of Wang Xu and Wang Tian from the man in black, hence he determined that the cultivators were from the Ruiya Realm.

“If you have some self-awareness and do not want to cause the deaths of the mortals in this manor, you better surrender now,” the man in black said.

Whoosh...

Zhang Ruochen could not be bothered to say more to him. The Saint Qi halo around his body multiplied and expanded outward, one circle after another. As many as a hundred and eight rings enveloped the entire manor.

Such a devastating Saint-Path Power shocked all of the martial artists and cultivators in Yunwu Royal City.

Up in the air, the expression of the black-robed man suddenly changed, and he said, “Zhang Ruochen, do you really want to fight? Even if we are not your match with our cultivation level, once the fighting starts, the ensuing destruction will be enough to wipe out every human in Yunwu Royal City.”

The man in black knew that Zhang Ruochen would be cautious about acting in the city. That was why he dared to appear and talk to Zhang Ruochen.

“Dealing with you lot is just a matter of flicking my fingers,” Zhang Ruochen said nonchalantly.

The Saint Devourer rushed out from behind Zhang Ruochen and deployed over a dozen vines at the speed of lightning, impaling more than a dozen black-robed cultivators before starting to absorb them.

“Haha.”

Moyin’s alluring laughter echoed throughout Lin Manor.

The man in black used all of his might to break free from the Saint Devourer’s vines in midair, and he was frightened to the point that his face turned pale. Zhang Ruochen’s strength turned out to be far beyond his initial estimation, so he quickly flew out of Lin Manor.

The man knew that it would be difficult for him to escape Zhang Ruochen’s grasp, so he uttered a threat, “Zhang Ruochen, you better not force my hand. Would you believe me if I told you that I was sending the entire populace of the royal city to death with me?”

Boom!!

Following a dragon’s roar, the clouds above the royal city roiled as a massive dragon claw descended from the sky and struck the man, crushing him into a cloud of blood.

Back in Lin Manor, Zhang Ruochen retracted his palm, which contained a Sainthood source, and said impassively, “No.”

He then walked back into the hall.

“He is still a Three-Step Saint King and should not be wasted!”

The Saint Devourer popped out of Zhang Ruochen’s back and turned into Moyin as she summoned a vine, on which dense leaves grew. She started to collect the blood and soul fragments that the man in black left behind after he died.

After the battle at Xumi Dojo, the Saint Devourer had devoured a large number of Heavenly Realm Saint Kings and reached the peak of the Six-Step Saint King rank. She was just one step away from being a Seven-step Saint King.

Now, she naturally wanted to absorb more nutrients and break through the Seven-step Saint King realm as soon as possible.

Zhang Ruochen moved next to the scorched spiritual-power Saint King and placed his hand on her back as he said, “You do not need to pretend to be dead before me. Tell me, does Youshen want me killed? Who is your leader? Did you take the people in the palace?”

The spiritual-power Saint King slowly raised her head and said with a grin, “Zhang Ruochen, you won’t have long to live. Once news of your appearance in Yunwu Commandery spreads, those who want to kill you will swarm this place.”

“Since you refuse to tell me, I can only use special methods to obtain the information I want.” Following a pause, Zhang Ruochen spoke again. “You are not the only one who can use Soul Search.”

The female Saint King’s expression changed right then, and she wanted to rouse her spiritual power to destroy her own Saint Heart.

“You still want to blow yourself up when I am already in front of you?”

Zhang Ruochen released his own spiritual power and his peak, Level 58 spiritual power immediately suppressed the female Saint King’s spiritual will, stopping her from blowing herself up.

Then, Zhang Ruochen pressed his palm against the top of her head.

A quarter of an hour later, Zhang Ruochen killed the Saint King and limped out of the ancestral hall, tossing her body to the Saint Devourer.

Zhang Ruochen’s face was rather grim as he started to think.

From that female Saint King’s memories, Zhang Ruochen did not find any information regarding his mother, fourth brother, and ninth sister. He did not know if he should be glad or worried.

Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen did find some useful intel. For example, they were all indeed cultivators under the Fane of Youshen’s banner.

The man clad in black was telling the truth. Over a dozen elite masters from the Fane of Youshen had come to Yunwu Commandery to deal with him.

Not long ago, they had found treasured territory in Yunwu Commandery and rushed over. They left about a dozen lower-leveled cultivators to capture humans who were related to Zhang Ruochen to force him to appear.

However, those powerhouses from the Fane of Youshen probably never expected Zhang Ruochen to return to Yunwu Commandery so quickly.

“You can deal with me, sure. But harm anyone around me, and I will make sure that your death will not be an easy one.”
Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold.

As a result of swallowing the sacred pill, the clan elder’s leg, which had been shattered, fully grew back.

After all, if it was merely a martial arts cultivator of the Tianji realm, a simple sacred pill would be enough for the person to regrow his torn legs. Things would not have been so simple if it had been a Saint who had broken his legs.

That clan elder was surprised to find that his cultivation level had also instantaneously increased to the Tianji Realm’s Completion Stage.

Moreover, there was still a large amount of healing power from the pill that had yet to be digested.

Was it really just a healing medication?

Every clansman and servant in Lin Manor continued to kneel on the ground, not daring to stand up. They looked at Zhang Ruochen as though they were looking at a god, afraid that they might do something to offend him.

The last time Zhang Ruochen and Concubine Lin came to Lin Manor, they were treated with contempt.

Power!

It was all because Zhang Ruochen held the power to control the life, death, and destiny of many that he gained his current status and identity.

“Stand up! In a short while, Yunwu Royal City will likely suffer a devastating attack, and I can take all of you to another world. Are you all willing to leave?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Lin Lingshan asked in a low voice, “Are we leaving the Kunlun Realm?”

“Consider it a yes!” Zhang Ruochen replied.

The clansmen of the Lin Clan started to hesitate. They already had extensive properties and power there, with their clansmen spreading all over the country. How could they leave just like that?

Lin Chenyu was the patriarch of the Lin Clan, and he bowed before Zhang Ruochen as he said, “I heard that there is a rule in the Celestial Court stating, no Saint-level battles can happen in a human city. If such a battle is discovered by the Emissaries Vigilant, those involved will suffer divine punishment.”

The battlefield in the Kunlun Realm was very different from the original Zuling Realm battlefield.

It was not a battle directed by the Fane of Merits alone, rather, it was supervised by the Fane of Merits, the Celestial Palace, and the Kunlun Realm. Strict regulations had been issued, whereby cultivators from all the major macroworlds were forbidden from fighting in human cities.

“The relationship between the various macroworlds under the Celestial Court is much more complicated than you think. As long as they are not discovered by the Emissaries Vigilant, destroying a city is just a simple matter of lifting their hands or legs. Plus, even if the Celestial Court’s macroworlds refuse to act with restraint, what of the Infernal Court?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“The cultivators from the Infernal Court are here in the Kunlun Realm to bring ruin and destruction.”

In the end, Lin Chenyu responded, “All members of the Lin Clan, listen to me. Pack up and prepare to leave the Kunlun Realm immediately.”

After most of the Lin Clansmen left the hall, Zhang Ruochen asked Lingshan about Concubine Lin.

Concubine Lin placed great importance on familial relationships. No matter how bad the Lin Clan had treated her, she still made sure that she had many contacts within the Lin Clan over the past few years in Yunwu Commandery.

“A woman picked her up long ago?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little surprised and promptly asked, “How long back?”

“About four months ago,” Lin Lingshan said.

Right after, Lingshan described the woman’s figure and facial features to Zhang Ruochen. Once he listened to her, Zhang Ruochen smiled slightly. “It looks like Lingxi understands me. She took Mother away at the very first moment.”

Since Lingxi had brought his mother, fourth brother, and ninth sister away, Zhang Ruochen was no longer worried, and his mood significantly improved a moment later.

With the Fane of Youshen not dealing with the Infernal Court and trying to kill him by any means instead, how could Zhang Ruochen not be angry? Thus, he planned to stay in Yunwu Commandery first and play a round of games with them.

...

Although the battle earlier was short, due to the black-robed man’s roar, almost everyone knew that the Ninth Prince of Yunwu Commandery was back!

Yunwu Royal City, inside a restaurant.

A stupid-looking, fat man holding a wine bowl looked in Lin Manor’s direction and said, “That demon, Zhang Ruochen has actually returned to Yunwu Commandery. What should we do? What should we do?”

Opposite him was a big burly man with his upper body exposed. A red bandana was wrapped around his head, while a broad machete was tied to his back. He looked just like a butcher.

The butcher's face was rugged, and it gave him a fierce image. "What are you so nervous about? While there will not be peace wherever Zhang Ruochen goes, it has nothing to do with us, no? Even if he and the Fane of Youshen fight until the end of the world, we will just treat it as a show. Better still, if more were to come, that would make things more interesting."

The chubby fool was also quite powerful. "Her Royal Highness is still cultivating at the banks of Luoshui. Since such a big thing has happened, should we go back and report it?"

"All of them are useless. Some of them may have been cultivating for over two thousand years, but they do not fight often. Besides, it's not like Cang Long or Ruan Ling have come to Yunwu Commandery... Gosh, darn it... All right, All right, if you are that worried, we will hurry back and report it once we are done shopping."

The butcher found the fool to be flat-out boring, and he seemed unhappy.

Chapter 1784 - Royal Mountain's Transformation

Chapter 1784: Royal Mountain's Transformation

Zhang Ruochen took out an Exquisite Dimensional Orb and opened the World Gate to another planet.

The next second, nearly a hundred beautiful female Saints walked out of the World Gate.

There were eight Exquisite Dimensional Orbs, and within each orb was a huge planet.

Zhang Ruochen selected four Exquisite Dimensional Orbs with habitable planets and handed them to the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Demon Ape, Saint Devourer, and Xie Chengzi. Then, he got them to lead the female Saints in an attempt to take all of the civilians and martial artists in Yunwu Commandery away.

The reason why Zhang Ruochen did not use the Qiankun Realm was first, there would definitely be Saint-level cultivators from the Celestial Court in Yunwu Commandery, and Zhang Ruochen was worried that they would blend into the crowd. That would enable them to sneak into Qiankun Realm and learn its secrets.

Second of all, Zhang Ruochen's energy alone was limited. The Saint King elites from the Fane of Youshen could arrive at any time, and if they did not find Zhang Ruochen, there was a possibility that they would slaughter the entire city in a fit of rage.

Besides, in addition to the Fane of Youshen, Fane of Bloody War, Fane of Merits, Blackdemon Realm, and even the Infernal Court, there were countless forces that wanted to get rid of Zhang Ruochen. If they knew that he had appeared in Yunwu Commandery, he would definitely attract a storm of blood there.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Staff of the Divine Envoy and dragged his heavy left leg as he walked toward an ancient mountain outside the city.

The ancient alp was called Royal Mountain, and the kings of Yunwu Commandery were buried there.

In any case, the king of Yunwu was Zhang Ruochen's father in this life, so Zhang Ruochen planned to move his tomb to the Qiankun Realm and re-bury him.

Awesome, the Little Taoist followed Zhang Ruochen from behind and looked at his left leg. Seeing it create one deep footprint after another, he sniggered. "Is that left leg of yours really the leg of a god? Why does it feel like you are really crippled?"

"Want to give it a try?" Zhang Ruochen stared at it.

"Nope! Nope!"

Awesome, the Little Taoist shook his head quickly and dared not tempt fate. Then, he pulled away from Zhang Ruochen and rushed into the depths of Royal Mountain first.

A moment later, Awesome, the Little Taoist rushed back with a thick purple root in his possession and shouted from a distance, "Zhang Ruochen, guess what I've found? It is really amazing that I managed to find such a rare treasure in this forsaken place."

Before Zhang Ruochen could take a closer look, he smelled the strong scent of a medicinal plant and felt a surge of Saint Qi washing over his face.

It was a three-foot-long purple root with a finger-sized seedling growing at the top. The seedling had two small leaves, while the root looked like an amethyst gemstone. It was radiant, and dazzling liquid flowed within.

"A Qiongxin Spirit Root, and a purple one at that. Does this mean that it is already seventy thousand years old?" Zhang Ruochen was taken aback.

It was not his first time on Royal Mountain, but he never thought that such a treasure could be found on the mountain.

No...

The herbs for sacred medicine did not just grow anywhere.

The older the sacred medicine, the higher the requirements of the soil.

Even the Kunlun Realm's top sects could not cultivate more than a handful of sacred medicines that were seventy thousand years old. How could Yunwu Commandery have any sacred medicine, much less such a valuable one?

"Perhaps the start of the Kunlun Realm's recovery is causing such strange phenomena."

Zhang Ruochen drew the Ancient Abyssal Blade, sliced the Qiongxin Spirit Root apart, and drank its contents with Awesome, the Little Taoist. A moment later, purple light radiated from their skin as they gained many boons.

The strength of their spiritual powers, especially, had increased by a lot.

Along the way, Awesome, the Little Taoist dug up five more sacred medicinal plants, which amazed and awed Zhang Ruochen.

For the small Royal Mountain to have so much sacred medicine, would other sacred grounds not give birth to even more of them?

However, Royal Mountain had seemingly grown a lot bigger and was not actually that small.

Awesome, the Little Taoist felt a little puzzled and asked, "Are you sure that this mountain only occupies two hundred miles of land? Why do I feel as though I have walked at least six hundred miles?"

Zhang Ruochen frowned and stopped.

Boom!!

With a stomp of his left foot, his entire body flew up, and he landed atop a hill not too far away.

Opening his Heaven's Eye, Zhang Ruochen looked into the depths of Royal Mountain, and a moment later, his expression

turned a little solemn. “Interesting, there is a folded dimension in Royal Mountain. As the Kunlun Realm recovers, the folded dimension will slowly open up. My Heaven’s Eye is being blocked by a strange layer of energies, and I cannot see the end of this mountain.”

In the past, Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level had been too low, and even if he had encountered a folded dimension, he would not have been able to tell. So, naturally, he would not have noticed the secret of Royal Mountain.

Awesome, the Little Taoist jumped up and exclaimed, “The ancestors of the Zhang Clan sure know how to choose their spots. Of all places they could have chosen for a burial ground, they chose one with a folded dimension.”

Zhang Ruochen deployed a pair of dragon wings on his back, and just as he was about to take off, he crashed into the ground.

His left leg was just too heavy, resulting in a total inability to fly.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen decided to cast the Great Dimensional Shift to avoid crashing directly into the ground.

“Damn it.”

Zhang Ruochen slapped his left leg and deployed the Great Dimensional Shift as he rushed farther into the mountainous area. After traveling for more than a thousand miles, Zhang Ruochen found Yunwu Commandery’s royal burial grounds.

When he found the tomb of Yunwu Commandery’s late king, he moved it into the Qiankun Realm.

After some thought, Zhang Ruochen looked at the rest of the Zhang Clan’s tombs and finally made up his mind to move all of them.

Suddenly, the ground trembled slightly and cracked open.

“What is going on? Oh, I understand now. You need to be careful with the relocation of ancestral tombs. You must first make sacrifices, burn joss paper, and write certain inscriptions. Since you performed such a big deed so recklessly, you must

have angered your ancestors,” Awesome, the Little Taoist said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen did not buy that at all and carefully observed the crack in the ground.

He only saw a strong surge of Saint Qi escaping the gap, with a lot of heavenly and earthly precepts gushing outward. An extremely ancient aura soon flew out and flooded the surrounding area.

Boom!

The ground shook violently again, and the crack was now two feet wide.

The heavenly and earthy Saint Qi, as well as precepts, kept pouring out of the fissure. Even the skies changed as a green light river appeared to stretch from east to west.

At the same time, the ancient tombs started to emit smoke.

Soon, cyan-colored Saint flowers quickly grew all over the burial grounds and transformed it into an endless sea of flowers.

Each Saint flower was at least ten thousand years old.

As the Saint Qi became increasingly potent, the precepts became denser and more arcane. Some of the Saint flowers grew even more rapidly while they bloomed even more beautifully. The brilliance that they emanated was dazzling beyond words.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Awesome, the Little Taoist were stunned. They never expected to witness such a bizarre scene unfolding before their eyes.

All of a sudden, an old man in tattered clothes crawled out of the crack.

“A ghost!!” Awesome, the Little Taoist screamed.

Zhang Ruochen glared at it and scoffed, “What monster or ghost have not met at the Divinity Bestowment Altar? What are you pretending for?”

“Oh right, my Tao abilities are advanced. What is there for me to fear?”

Awesome, the Little Taoist walked over to the old man before he raised his little fist and shouted, “Hee yah!” The moment his strike connected, the old man was sent flying over a dozen feet away.

“Oh, gosh darn it... which godless cur... actually hit an old man... my waist... is broken. Oh god, I am being killed. Will anyone come and save this old man....”

His pitiful screams echoed across the sea of flowers.

“It’s not a thousand-year-old corpse? It’s alive?” Awesome, the Little Taoist was shocked.

Zhang Ruochen rushed over and used his spiritual powers to investigate and determine that the old man was indeed a living person. He quickly took out a sacred healing pill and prepared to give it to the old man.

The moment he squatted down, Zhang Ruochen caught a whiff of a foul smell. He had no idea how long that old man had been underground.

Zhang Ruochen endured the stench and placed the sacred pill in the old man’s mouth.

As he stood up, Zhang Ruochen studied the old man cautiously. The man looked like he was in his seventies. He was thin as bones and covered in shaggy, dirty white hair. Zhang Ruochen had no idea when the old man had last taken a shower or had a change of clothes. Even his skin had a thick layer of grime, and his clothes were so tattered that they looked like turf grass.

If he had not been a living person, Zhang Ruochen would have taken him for a ten-thousand-year-old corpse.

“Old man, feeling better now?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Ahhh, it still hurts. You must take responsibility after you beat someone up. You cannot abuse the elderly.”

The old man curled up on the ground, crying in pain.

A look of doubt appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

It is important to note that the Lin Clan's elder had also taken the same sacred pill, and his shattered legs regrew. Yet, why did this old man on the ground, who had the same Tianji Realm cultivation, not get better after he consumed the pill?

Zhang Ruochen became vigilant and asked, "Old man, why did you climb out of the ground?"

The old man's eyeballs rolled beneath his eyelids, and he said, "I am a grave robber, and when I saw that there were many large tombs here, of course, I had to go down and make a fortune."

"A grave robber?"

Frown lines appeared on Zhang Ruochen's forehead as he coldly said, "Do you know that my ancestors are buried in these tombs?"

The old man was slightly startled, and suddenly, his waist did not seem to hurt anymore. He gave Zhang Ruochen a closer look and asked, "Young man, what is your name?"

"Zhang Ruochen."

Zhang Ruochen lifted his Staff of the Divine Envoy and began to roll up his sleeves, revealing half of his arm.

"Zhang, what a good surname. I am also a Zhang... What are you doing, boy... What are you trying to do?"

Zhang Ruochen raised the Staff of the Divine Envoy and smacked it down in a flurry of strikes, creating a series of loud bangs.

"A grave robber, huh? Since you have robbed my ancestor's tombs, surrender all of the valuable items you have stolen."

"Ahhh, he is beating an elderly. Will anyone come and save me? I will be beaten to death... Young man, I have not stolen anything, none... Save me... You are about to kill an old man...."

The old man got up from the ground and fled.

There was a sharp light glint in Zhang Ruochen's eyes, and he felt that that old man was not a simple character.

Earlier, when he wielded the Staff of the Divine Envoy and steadily increased the strength of his hits, he estimated that the final blow would have killed a Demi-Saint straight off.

However, aside from some screams, the old man was not injured at all. Instead, he proceeded to run faster than a rabbit.

Interesting...

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to pursue and catch the old man, a few powerful Saint auras came rushing from the forest. Five to six powerful cultivators above the rank of Seven-step Saint Kings were quickly approaching.

Chapter 1785 - Powerful Foes Strike

Chapter 1785: Powerful Foes Strike

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Six shadows darted across Royal Mountain like a beam of light as they quickly flew between hills and mounds.

The man at the front was Yuan Che.

To be precise, Yuan Che was not a human being but a Vajra Snowsea Ape that had cultivated for over two thousand years, and his cultivation was at a Nine-step Saint King level. He had two-meter-long white hair and broad shoulders while his head and eyes were twice the sizes of a normal person's. Even without unleashing his Saint-ly Aura, he had an oppressive air about him.

All of them were elites from the Fane of Youshen, and they had rushed over after tracking Zhang Ruochen's aura.

Closely behind Yuan Che, an old woman with a spiritual power of Level 58 had a little golden snake coiled around her wrist. She looked down at the mountain below, and a strange glint appeared in her eyes as she said, "Master Yuan Che, this mountain is no ordinary mountain. It may be an awakened sacred land, and I have detected the aura of many sacred medicines."

The old woman was called Tian Lanzi, and she was a beastmaster who held a high position in the Fane of Youshen.

The deeper they flew into Royal Mountain, the stronger the heavenly and earthly Saint Qi they detected.

The sacred medicinal herbs on the ground exuded a resplendent light that made them extremely tempting, and all of the Saint Kings from the Fane of Youshen had a look of avarice on their faces.

Yuan Che said, “Do not let the sacred medicines cloud your judgment. Our real task is to capture Zhang Ruochen. Once we deal with that brat, will everything here not belong to us?”

“You are right. We need to secure Zhang Ruochen and bring him back to Master Youshen—”

A Seven-step Saint King in green Saint Mail Armor was hit by a beam of white light before he could finish speaking, and his voice ceased abruptly.

That light was actually a white arrow.

Rrrrip!

His green Saint Mail Armor was instantly torn into pieces by that white arrow as if it was made out of paper.

The arrow pierced the Seven-step Saint King’s chest, and he screamed as Saint Blood gushed out of his falling body.

“Watch out! Zhang Ruochen is nearby,” Yuan Che roared.

He immediately reached out, and a white stream of Saint Qi jetted out of his hand and enveloped the wounded Seven-step Saint King.

A moment later, all five of the Fane of Youshen’s elites landed on the ground.

Yuan Che had experienced many trials and tribulations, thus he was a very cautious creature. The moment he landed, he immediately deployed four flags and placed them facing four different directions.

The four flags expanded in the wind and turned into four brass pillars that were hundreds of feet high. They were intertwined with lightning patterns, which condensed and took the form of four sacred beasts.

Yuan Che examined the Seven-step Saint King in his arms and found that the vitality in the latter’s body had totally been drained. He was now a cold dead body.

Even the wise Yuan Che was taken aback.

“Watch out for that white arrow. Do not get hit by it.”

Yuan Che tossed the Seven-step Saint King’s body onto the ground and flew dozens of feet into the air. Raising his voice, he said, “Zhang Ruochen, you are Yueshen’s envoy after all, and your status is comparable to that of a Supreme Saint, so how could you execute something like a sneak attack?”

A burst of laughter echoed across the mountains. “The Fane of Youshen acted against mortals just to force me to show myself. Did Youshen teach you such a method?”

Yuan Che’s eyes turned grim as he tried to provoke Zhang Ruochen. “What kind of ability is this—hiding and not daring to show yourself? Are you afraid of me to the point that you cannot show yourself?”

When the enemy was exposed and one was not, it was an absolute advantage. Therefore, Zhang Ruochen would obviously not reveal himself so easily.

An Eight-step Saint King with the head of a golden leopard and dazzling golden mail, as well as a flaming halberd in his hand, shouted, “Zhang Ruochen, if you dare to show your face, I will kill you with just a single hand.”

Whoosh!!

From deep within the mountain, a Whitesun Arrow flew out toward that humanoid golden leopard.

Boom!! Boom!!

The arrow hit a spot between two of the flagpoles, and a lightning net appeared out of thin air, effectively blocking it.

Seeing that, the humanoid golden leopard laughed. “Master Yuan Che’s Thunder Flags Array has been refined for thousands of years. With your cultivation level, you would not be able to break it even if we gave you a whole year.”

“You lot can just stay inside for a whole year, then!” Zhang Ruochen’s voice rang out.

Yuan Che and the humanoid golden leopard's expressions turned grim. They did not expect Zhang Ruochen to be so composed and not reveal himself until now.

Then, Yuan Che looked at Tian Lanzi. "Any progress?"

Tian Lanzi shook her head and said, "Zhang Ruochen's spiritual power is not beneath me. I am not able to find him using my spiritual powers."

A brilliant light flashed in Yuan Che's eyes as he deliberately raised his voice. "Well, since he wants to be a tortoise, we will head back to Yunwu Royal City and turn all of the human cultivators there into blood pills."

Tian Lanzi, the humanoid golden leopard, and the rest grinned.

"Are you not afraid of being discovered by the Emissaries Vigilant with that brazen move?" Zhang Ruochen's voice traveled out of the forest.

Yuan Che was overjoyed. He secretly reckoned that Zhang Ruochen probably felt uneasy and would soon be forced to reveal himself.

So, once again, he said in a cruel tone, "We have captured an Immortal Vampire Saint King, and even if we were to sacrifice every human in Yunwu Royal City, we can pin all of the blame on him.

"Zhang Ruochen, you are still too naive! Our playbook is much, much bigger than you think.

"Those fools in the Kunlun Realm think that hiding in the city means their lives are safe. Yet, they do not know that the prohibitions are like pieces of waste paper to us. If we want to kill him, it will be as simple as slaughtering dogs and pigs."

...

Zhang Ruochen's sneer rang across the mountain. "Whatever happens to the Kunlun Realm, I do not care! But Yunwu Commandery is my turf, and anyone who comes here to show off their powers will die."

Before he even finished, the sky changed.

Layers of dark clouds began to roil, turning the entire area around Royal Mountain extremely dim.

Following that, an oppressive and terrifying aura radiated above the clouds. A purple Bagua Seal broke through the dark cumulonimbus and fell from the sky, pressing down toward the Thunder Flags Array.

Before the Bagua Seal, even mountains appeared small and insignificant.

“A Supreme Power... That is a Supreme Artifact...”

Yuan Che’s expression drastically changed as four Saint Light Pillars phased out of his body and infused themselves into the four flag poles. The fluttering flags flew up and made a series of folding, popping sounds.

Four Thunderbeasts the size of mountains rushed out of the array and headed for the Bagua Seal.

Bam! Bam!! Bzzzt!

The place was filled with a series of crackling noises.

Zapped by the Supreme Power, the four Thunderbeasts turned into bolts of lightning, which resembled heavenly blades, and crashed into the ground.

“Fall back!” Yuan Che shouted.

All of the Fane of Youshen cultivators were frightened, and their initial bravado had all but disappeared as they fled into the distance, one after another.

When the Bagua Seal and the Thunder Flags Array collided, it only took a mere moment for the flag poles to snap.

Boom! Boom!!

The moment the Bagua Seal hit the ground, it flattened an area with a radius of several hundred miles and sank a further hundred meters into the ground.

Two Seven-Step Saint Kings were killed on the spot.

Both Tian Lanzi and the humanoid golden leopard were injured. They looked back in horror and only saw smoke, as

well as dust, flying about. Layers upon layers of Supreme energies were rushing over like a tide. Wherever the force passed through, the vegetation, mountains, and rocks would all turn to dust. Its destructive power was terrifying.

The humanoid golden leopard tried his best to wield his flaming halberd, and he blasted out the full strength of the Fifth Radiance, barely managing to block the Supreme Artifact's remaining power.

“No wonder they say that Zhang Ruochen is a powerful one. So, he actually wields a Supreme Artifact. I regret it now; I should have looked more into Zhang Ruochen. I thought he was just a Five-step Saint King who could be killed just like that.”

The humanoid golden leopard spat out a mouthful of blood. Just as he stood up, he heard Zhang Ruochen's voice in his ears. “Even if I am just a Five-step Saint King, I am not someone you can just manhandle, no?”

Amid the storm of dust, Zhang Ruochen walked out with the Staff of the Divine Envoy in hand.

The humanoid golden leopard's expression immediately changed. He wanted to run away right then, but he suddenly remembered that activating a Supreme Artifact was not an easy thing, and it would take time.

Could he not quickly kill off a Five-step Saint King with his Eight-Step Saint King rank?

The humanoid golden leopard darted out, transforming into a golden light stream, and in the blink of an eye, he was merely three feet away from Zhang Ruochen. His flaming halberd burst into flames and turned into a cloud of fire.

The Eight-step Saint King unleashed all of his power, and its coalescence was so terrifying that the ground over a radius of several hundred miles shook.

The halberd possessed an overwhelming power no different than a wildfire.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes, and without underestimating his opponent, he yelled, “Eleventh Palm of

the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, Sky Soaring Dragon-Elephant!”

Upon striking both of his palms out, thirteen dragon souls and thirteen elephant souls appeared concurrently while thousands of palm technique precepts converged in his palms.

The Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike’s power was immense.

Zhang Ruochen’s body radiated golden light, and the humanoid golden leopard was so dazzled that he could not open his eyes. At the same time, Zhang Ruochen evoked the Precepts of Truth and unleashed an offensive power that was six times stronger.

Boom! Boom!!

The power of the palm strike tore up the humanoid golden leopard’s arms very badly, and he was sent flying backward.

Once he landed on the ground, he still had to take over a dozen steps back before he could stabilize himself. The humanoid golden leopard then discovered that both his hands and fingers had been mutilated, and blood was spurting everywhere.

“How could a mere Five-step Saint King be as powerful as you?” The humanoid golden leopard’s mind was so blown, and he found it difficult to accept the fact.

With a gulf of three ranks and the unknown gap between their power, how did he end up being beaten back so readily?

Zhang Ruochen said, “Even if those from the Ruiya Realm were to cultivate the Supreme Perfection Physique in the Celestial Domain of Truth, I can still cross realm boundaries and kill them. So what does that say about beings like you who have not even reached the apex? Plus, you have not cultivated the Path of Truth and will not be able to unleash powers several times stronger.”

“Off I go.”

Realizing that he was definitely no match for Zhang Ruochen, the humanoid golden leopard turned around and took off at his fastest possible speed, fleeing Royal Mountain.

“Are you not an Eight-step Saint King? Were you not going to take me down with just one hand? Why are you running away?”

Zhang Ruochen pointed at the humanoid golden leopard.

Bam!!

Within a hundred miles of the humanoid golden leopard, the dimensional walls suddenly shattered like a mirror and swallowed him into the void. As a result, his physical body was cut into pieces by the power of space.

Zhang Ruochen had wiped out an Eight-step Saint King elite from the world just like that, without even leaving a single bone behind.

Chapter 1786 - Fighting a Nine-step Saint King

Chapter 1786: Fighting a Nine-step Saint King

The ground shook violently, and the air current vibrated.

Yuan Che was a Nine-step Saint King who had been cultivating for over two thousand years. Even the Supreme Power was not able to kill him.

“Raaaaawwwr!!”

He turned into a Vajra Snowsea Ape that was more than twenty feet tall and stormed forth on the ground. It had golden skin and white fur, while numerous layers of Saint aura halos spread from its body, sending the ground and rocks within a hundred-mile radius into the air.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed a little as both of his legs sank and his upper body leaned forward. At the same time, an inscription armor was activated to wrap around his entire body.

Despite that, Zhang Ruochen was still pushed back by the erupting force from the Saint Qi halo. Every time he was pushed back, the ground beneath him would crumble.

“Is this the power of a Nine-step Saint King?”

Zhang Ruochen felt a dull pain in his chest; the blood and Saint Qi in his body were not flowing smoothly. His scalp also felt somewhat painful as if it was about to be torn apart by the terrifying Saint Path Qi.

There were three massive wounds on the Vajra Snowsea Ape’s body, each measuring several meters long. That only added more dread to his appearance.

Tian Lanzi released a black light and floated in the air not too far away from the Vajra Snowsea Ape. “Damn it, for four top-level elites of the Fane of Youshen to fall here... Since

Youshen only wants Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul, how about we flay him alive and grind his bones to dust?"

"I have the same thoughts as well."

A thunderous sound came from the Vajra Snowsea Ape.

Immediately after, he expelled a cold breath and turned into a blue torrent.

There were three sacred swords in the torrent. All of them were sacred artifacts with majestic power, and with their full strength unleashed, everything across a few hundred miles quaked.

Zhang Ruochen dared not go against the ape head-on, so he had to use the Dimensional Shift to dodge.

However, the space was vibrating so violently that Zhang Ruochen's shifting deviated, and one of the sacred swords before him charged straight at him.

Zhang Ruochen promptly extended his palms to block it.

Sching!

The Fire God's Gauntlet collided with the sacred sword's light, and sparks flew all over the place.

Zhang Ruochen was then sent flying to the right by the sacred sword's power. He landed a few miles away, supporting himself with his hands so that he did not fall on the ground.

Unfortunately, his left hand was particularly painful.

"Zhang Ruochen, I am here to help you."

Awesome, the Little Taoist flew over, and just as he was about to take out his Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, not too far away, a stream of golden light began to speed toward it.

"What the hell is that? Oh goodness, it is a Goldthread Dragonviper."

Awesome, the Little Taoist immediately waved the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror and slapped the Goldthread Dragonviper with it, causing it to whirl back.

However, the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror's Supreme Power had not been activated, and it failed to kill the Goldthread Dragonviper. Besides, the Dragonviper was extremely fast, and barely a second later, it was charging at Awesome, the Little Taoist again.

The Goldthread Dragonviper was the little snake that had been coiling around Tian Lanzi's wrist earlier.

Zhang Ruochen had heard of the Goldthread Dragonviper. It was a rare Nine-order beast. Once it reaches adulthood, it will be a Beast Emperor on par with a Supreme Saint. The most terrifying thing about the Dragonviper was its venom, and even if it was a Supreme Saint who was bitten, it would be difficult to neutralize the venom.

That said, the Goldthread Dragonviper before him was obviously not an adult.

It wanted to swallow Awesome, the Little Taoist so that it could continue to grow and gain stronger powers.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Tian Lanzi and noticed that she was using some kind of secret technique to control the Goldthread Dragonviper. So, he pulled out his Azuresky Bow and Whitesun Arrow in preparation to shoot her.

“Zhang Ruochen, I am your opponent!”

The Vajra Snowsea Ape ran swiftly and left the ground trembling in its wake as it closed in on Zhang Ruochen.

The three sacred swords were like three gleaming sacred rivers, slashing at Zhang Ruochen from three different directions. Zhang Ruochen wanted to dodge the attacks, but his left leg was just too heavy. His movements were getting slower and labored.

Seeing that the three swords were about to slice him, Zhang Ruochen cursed in his heart, “What kind of bloody leg is this? Is it really crippled?”

He stomped his foot fiercely, and the divine power of fire rushed out from his left leg, spreading in all directions.

Boom!!

The ground within a radius of a few dozen miles sank in the form of a massive, footprint-shaped crater, just like a sinkhole. In turn, the flames' divine power blew the three sacred swords back.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the bottom of the large crater, feeling slightly lost.

Is this... the power of the god's left leg?

The Vajra Snowsea Ape was astonished too. How could Zhang Ruochen's stomp be so terrifying? If that stomp were to land on it, it would be enough to smash it into a paste.

Awesome, the Little Taoist was fighting the Goldthread Dragonviper, and he shouted, "That's it! Stomp it to death."

Zhang Ruochen was about to rouse his Saint Qi and use the god's left leg again, only to find that the Saint Qi in his body was gone. It had seemingly been exhausted by that stomp earlier.

"Can you not screw around?"

Zhang Ruochen slapped his left leg and wanted to cry.

Suddenly, the area before Zhang Ruochen darkened as a huge shadow appeared above his head.

The Vajra Snowsea Ape had obviously been startled by Zhang Ruochen's previous stomp, so it grew its body hundreds of times larger. It morphed into a colossal ape with its feet on the ground and its head in the heavens. It swung its hand, which was large as Mount Wuzhi, and slammed it against Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!! Boom!!

A palm print that was a dozen miles in length appeared on top of the equally large footprint.

Just as the Vajra Snowsea Ape thought that Zhang Ruochen had been smashed to smithereens, it felt a sudden surge of extreme pain in the middle of its palm.

Whoosh!

Golden light penetrated its palm, and Saint blood gushed out.

The ray of golden light soared into the sky and turned into eight golden dragons. At the center of the eight dragons was a golden umbrella.

As it opened up in midair, the umbrella revealed Zhang Ruochen and a black skeleton beneath it.

The black skeleton held the umbrella for Zhang Ruochen as they both slowly landed on the ground.

The black skeleton had been condensed from the Yi Huang Bone Staff, and the evil spirit energies that were emanating from its body were not much weaker than that of the Vajra Snowsea Ape.

After refining about three percent of Amber Ash's soul mist, the evil spirit energies within the Yi Huang Bone Staff were no longer weaker than a Nine-step Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen swallowed a pill that could quickly restore his Saint Qi and said to the black skeleton, "Go!"

The black skeleton lifted the Fane of Bloody War's ancient artifact, the Treasure Wheel of War as dark qi and blood mist spewed outward, quickly covering Royal Mountain. All of this turned the mountain into an eerie and terrifying place.

Bam! Bam!!

The Vajra Snowsea Ape and black skeleton fought head to head, and their fight caused the entire dimension to shake. The mountains collapsed in droves as if the world was about to end.

Thousands of miles away at Yunwu Royal City, the sky was dim as gale winds blew. The ground shook as houses and pavilions began collapsing.

The evil spirit within the black skeleton let out a piercing laugh and attacked ferociously; it wanted to kill the Vajra Snowsea Ape. As long as it could absorb the ape's Saint Soul, the evil spirit's power would grow by leaps and bounds again.

Noticing that Zhang Ruochen was seemingly unable to move, a brutal smile appeared at the corner of Tian Lanzi's lips as she said, "Zhang Ruochen, going against the Fane of Youshen will

only end badly for you. I will let you taste the agony of having ten thousand insects chewing on your bones.”

Tian Lanzi took out a bamboo basket, and what looked like thousands of black spots, flew out of it.

Each of those black spots was a Saint insect, and they swarmed toward Zhang Ruochen like a bug torrent.

“Did you really think I was just standing here for you to kill me?”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out a talisman and tossed it at the bugs.

The talisman exploded with a loud bang and turned into a cloud of Divine Purification Flames. Instantly, the entire swarm of insects was reduced to fireballs, and they all fell to the ground, charred.

After the battle at Xumi Dojo, Zhang Ruochen had seized many talismans from the Heavenly Realm Saint Kings.

Even if he could not use his martial arts or spiritual powers and could only rely on the talismans in his possession, Zhang Ruochen was not afraid of Yuan Che and Tian Lanzi. It was just that when he used one, the amount he had would drop by one, so naturally, Zhang Ruochen did not take them out willy nilly.

Seeing that all of her carefully cultivated Saint insects had died, Tian Lanzi’s heart ached, and she hated Zhang Ruochen even more.

Zhang Ruochen’s Saint Qi had recovered by twenty to thirty percent, so he stood up abruptly and fit the Whitesun Arrow to the Azure Sky Bow. Drawing it, he said, “It would be impolite if I did not return the same favor. Try taking one of my arrows, then.”

Whoosh!

The Whitesun Arrow zipped through the air and left a trail of Saint light, which was dozens of feet long.

Tian Lanzi’s expression changed as she immediately raised the bamboo basket in her hand. Thousands of inscriptions then appeared around it, radiating a purple-golden light.

Boom!! Boom!!

The Whitesun Arrow hit the bamboo basket, and the force of the collision sent Tian Lanzi tumbling through the air.

Although the Whitesun Arrow was blocked, the Mark of Time on the arrow had landed on Tian Lanzi's body, immediately cutting two hundred years off her lifespan.

The very moment she was weakened, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Dimensional Shift and reappeared beside her. Soon after, he swung the Eight-Dragon Umbrella in his hand and stabbed her heart with it.

Tian Lanzi's Saint heart shattered, and she died immediately.

At the same moment, the Goldthread Dragonviper hesitated a little.

Bam!!

Making use of the opportunity, Awesome, the Little Taoist captured it and threw it into an ancient bronze bottle.

Upon seeing Tian Lanzi killed, Yuan Che knew that the tide had turned and instantly transformed back into a human. After that, he flew toward Yunwu Royal City.

Yuan Che was well aware that Zhang Ruochen could use Dimensional Shift, and it would not be easy for him to escape. Only by rushing toward Yunwu Royal City would Zhang Ruochen be forced to hold back and let him go.

He simply needed to wait until the other elites from the Fane of Youshen rushed over. Then, dealing with Zhang Ruochen would not be difficult.

Yuan Che was close to leaving Royal Mountain, and he could see the royal city's magnificent silhouette. Just as a hint of joy appeared on his face, there was a loud roar behind him.

“Running away? This little Taoist will kill you today and shock the Kunlun Realm.”

A purple cloud in the shape of a grinding disc appeared above Yuan Che's head.

Then, a massive Bagua Seal burst out of the purple clouds and came crashing down with Supreme Power in its wake.

This time around, the Supreme Power unleashed from the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror was even stronger because it was being powered by Awesome the Little Taoist, Zhang Ruochen, and the evil spirit.

“Noo....”

Yuan Che felt a trace of despair and blasted all kinds of attacks with the sacred artifacts and talismans on his body.

Boooooommm...

The Bagua Seal continued to press on and crushed Yuan Che beneath it, forcing him to return to his original form and become a colossal Vajra Snowsea Ape that was bloodied all over.

Once that was over, the Bagua Seal's remaining power flowed out and surged across Yunwu Royal City. It shook the walls so hard that they cracked as if they were about to collapse, scaring all of the cultivators and mortals in the city.

Chapter 1787 - News About the Godstones.

Chapter 1787: News About the Godstones.

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

The Vajra Snowsea Ape was crushed to the brink of death by the Bagua Seal, but it continued to struggle and wanted to get back up. Its willpower was something to behold.

“I am the Snowsea King. I am not someone to be taken out by the likes of you...”

Boom!! Boom!!

Zhang Ruochen flew down from the sky and stomped heavily on the Vajra Snowsea Ape’s head, pushing it back into the ground.

Following that, Zhang Ruochen pressed his right palm against the center of its eyebrows and blasted a thunderous surge of spiritual power into its head.

The only way Zhang Ruochen could stop the Vajra Snowsea Ape from self-destructing its Sea of Qi was to suppress it with his spiritual powers.

Otherwise, the destructive power of the Nine-step Saint King’s self-destruction would be enough to easily raze the Yunwu Royal City in the distance to the ground.

Duhff!

The Vajra Snowsea Ape fought Zhang Ruochen with its spiritual will, but it ended up for naught.

Zhang Ruochen used his spiritual powers to extract the Vajra Snowsea Ape's memories to look for information that he was interested in. Then, a steady stream of memory bubbles flooded Zhang Ruochen's mind.

However, just as he was about to explore some special memories, Zhang Ruochen's spiritual powers were repelled, and that part of the Vajra Snowsea Ape's memories was automatically destroyed.

Now, both the Vajra Snowsea Ape's cultivated skills and Saint techniques were no longer obtainable by Zhang Ruochen.

“A Supreme-Saint existence has locked down parts of the Vajra Snowsea Ape's memories.”

In the end, Zhang Ruochen's discoveries were rather limited.

Whoosh!!

Zhang Ruochen directly extracted the Saint Source from the Vajra Snowsea Ape's Sea of Qi.

A small sword, formed by Saint Path precepts, floated within the Saint Source. It was the Vajra Snowsea Ape's Saint Precept Artifact.

The ape had a Saint Source that contained a Rank 9 Saint Precept Artifact, which was equivalent to a Nine-step Saint King's inheritance. Its value was far beyond any ordinary Saint Source and could be sold for sky-high prices.

“Let me have a look.”

Awesome, the Little Taoist rushed over and stared at the small sword inside the Saint Source with its mung bean-like eyes. “This Saint Precept Artifact is made out of more than seven hundred and forty thousand precepts.”

Immediately after, Awesome, the Little Taoist inspected the Vajra Snowsea Ape's corpse and hypothesized, “This Ape King is probably in the realm of the Lesser Precept World within the Nine-Step Saint King rank.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “There is indeed a big gap between its cultivation level and the realm of the Greater Precept World.”

A Nine-step Saint King was quite close to becoming a Supreme Saint and was just a step away from being immortal. Yet, that single step was fraught with difficulties, which had blocked countless talented individuals from becoming Supreme Saints.

The Nine-step Saint King rank was divided into the Lesser Precept World and Greater Precept World.

The realm of the Lesser Precept World was the most common among Nine-step Saint Kings, just like the Vajra Snowsea Ape, who was still in that realm even after cultivating for over two thousand years.

Creatures of the Greater Precept World were elites amongst Nine-step Saint Kings, and their strength was far superior to those of the Lesser Precept World. The precepts they possessed exceeded ten million in number and would even flow into their body as well as various meridians.

Supposedly, above the Greater Precept World, there was a realm called the Precept Dominion.

Those of the Precept Dominion were even more powerful and had a taste of the mysteries of Supreme Sainthood.

In short, there was a gulf the size of Heaven between a Nine-step Saint King and a Supreme Saint. Only by crossing that gulf would one obtain a Saint Emperor's power.

Zhang Ruochen's face was solemn as he slowly said, "The Fane of Youshen has a Nine-step Saint King with a cultivation level close to the Greater Precept World within Yunwu Commandery."

Awesome, the Little Taoist's expression changed drastically as he replied, "Someone on that level is beyond our current abilities. Forget those mortals in Yunwu Commandery, and let us find a place to hide. Once I have broken through to the Nine-step Saint King rank, we will come out again and begin the slaughter."

Why would Zhang Ruochen not want to break through to the Six-step Saint King rank or even the Seven-step Saint King rank as soon as possible?

But, it was impossible to ask him to forsake the people of Yunwu Commandery.

Moreover, from the Vajra Snowsea Ape's memories, Zhang Ruochen learned that the cultivators from the Fane of Youshen had somehow found out about the Supreme Saint dragon corpse at the bottom of the Tongming River.

They wanted to dig up the dragon corpse buried at the depths of the river and refine it into a Wyrmlord Abomination.

That dragon corpse was obviously the remains of the Golden Dragon.

Zhang Ruochen owed a debt to the Golden Dragon. If it had not handed Zhang Ruochen the Dragon Pearl and Bodhi Emperor's sarira, he might not have been able to achieve what he had today.

Although the Golden Dragon's remains had sunk to the depths of the earth and were extremely difficult to find, there was a legendary Nine-step Saint King in the Fane of Youshen who sought out dragons to refine their corpses. There was a possibility that the person would find and dig up the Golden Dragon's remains.

"If you want to dig up the Golden Dragon's remains, you will have to step over my dead body."

Whether it was out of respect for the Golden Dragon or for self-preservation, Zhang Ruochen had to stop the Fane of Youshen's cultivators.

Of course, many of the Fane of Youshen's elites were gathered at the Tongming River. Among them were two Nine-step Saint Kings, so Zhang Ruochen was not going to rush in to fight them. He would need to plan things out first.

The Kunlun Realm had forbidden the cultivators from the various macroworlds in the Celestial Court to kill one another on its battlefield. Therefore, Zhang Ruochen immediately dragged the Vajra Snowsea Ape's body back to Royal Mountain.

A strange force surrounded Royal Mountain, allowing them to avoid the detection of the Emissaries Vigilant.

The evil spirit that had taken the form of a black skeleton had already gathered the Saint Souls of several slain elites from the Fane of Youshen. It swallowed them whole and stored them within its bones to slowly refine them.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen drag the corpse of a thousand-foot-tall giant ape to the mountain, the black skeleton immediately rushed over and siphoned all of the Vajra Snowsea Ape's remaining soul into its mouth.

Immediately after, the black skeleton transformed into the Yi Huang Bone Scepter and planted itself atop the mountain before it proceeded to refine the souls.

Boom! Boom!!

The process of refinement was terrifying as lightning came crashing down continuously. Rocks melted into droplets, and vegetation turned into ash amid strong winds. Ordinary Saint King creatures could not even get close.

A moment later, the Saint Devourer, the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, and Demon Ape all rushed to Royal Mountain, one after another. Some of them wanted nutrients, while others wanted food.

The moment it saw the Vajra Snowsea Ape's corpse, however, the Demon Ape suddenly lost interest. The Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit had also been with the Demon Ape for a long time and was not interested in the meat of ape beasts. Hence, the Saint Devourer got her hands on the corpse.

“After I completely assimilated with this great ape, my cultivation level will definitely be able to reach the Seven-step Saint King rank. ”

Saint Devourer planted her roots into the Vajra Snowsea Ape's corpse and began to absorb it.

Having discovered that there were a large number of sacred herbs and holy springs on Royal Mountain, both the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape instantly drooled as they rushed into the forest. They gorged themselves on food and drink.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was solemn as he thought about how to break through to the Six-step Saint King rank.

He was different from the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape, who could increase their cultivation base just by eating.

He needed enlightenment.

The path he had to walk was different from that of the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape. Not only did he have to fight invincible foes from the same rank, but he also needed to plan for the long term. He needed to become a Supreme Saint as well as cultivate to be a god against the heavens.

The Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Demon Ape, and Saint Devourer would only be able to follow him and get stronger if he reached the Supreme Path.

If he wanted to be their master, naturally, he had to work much, much harder.

“Things are already so tense here in Yunwu Commandery. I do not have time to study the Saint Path Precepts. Sigh, time...”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes lit up as he thought of the sundial. “If I can find a Godstone, I can activate the sundial.”

He promptly wrote something on a Communication Talisman and sent it away.

The talisman was intended for Luo Xu.

In the Kunlun Realm today, apart from the imperial court, the strongest establishments with the most means available to them were probably the Martial Market Bank and the Black Market.

Both markets possessed significant backgrounds, as well as long histories, and might have Godstones in their inventory.

Luo Xu was one of the Eastern Region Saint Court's principals, and he had a high status in the Martial Market Bank. Should he step forward, he could probably help Zhang Ruochen find out about the Godstones. Soon, Zhang Ruochen

sent out a second message via the Communication Talisman to the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers, Ji Fanxin.

Ji Fanxin was the disciple of the Mandala Goddess, and she held a lofty position within the Qianhui Realm, hence there was a chance for her to get a Godstone there. Most importantly, she had something she wanted from Zhang Ruochen, and it would definitely do her best to help him.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen also wanted to send a message to the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. That heavenly maiden was powerful, and any treasure she pulled out would be one that commanded a heavenly sum.

Obtaining Godstones would probably not be a difficult task for the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Yet, Zhang Ruochen held back and did not send her the message.

After all, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were not allies but mortal enemies. While the two had yet to act hostile toward each other, a battle for life and death would come sooner or later due to the Canon of Truth.

Not long after, Luo Xu was the first to reply via talisman.

“The Martial Market Bank has Godstones, but even I must spend merit points to buy them. With my current merit points, I can only buy two of them. Where are you now? I will send someone over right away.”

Luo Xu’s own handwriting flowed on the talisman made out of light.

From the beginning to the end, Luo Xu never mentioned anything about Zhang Ruochen paying for the Godstones.

Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen knew that Godstones came at an extremely steep price. Even if Luo Xu were to exhaust all of his wealth, he could only buy two of them.

Zhang Ruochen blasted out another Communication Talisman to inform Luo Xu of his location.

Whoosh!!

Just then, another Communication Talisman flew over; it was Ji Fanxin's reply.

"Where are you now? I will come to you."

The writing on the talisman was beautiful and the message succinct.

Zhang Ruochen hesitated for a moment and thought to himself, "It is not a secret that I am in Yunwu Commandery, and news of today's incident will probably spread across the Kunlun Realm soon anyway, so it is fine to tell her."

No longer dwelling on it, Zhang Ruochen sent out another talisman and provided Ji Fanxin with his location.

At last, there was some news about the Godstone, but two Godstones were still too few. If Ji Fanxin could bring another two, that would be great.

"Where did that old man go?"

Zhang Ruochen thought about the old man who had crawled out of the tomb and immediately used his Heavenly Eyes, as well as spiritual powers, to search around. However, even after he scoured most of Royal Mountain, he could not find a trace of that old geezer.

The tiny Awesome walked to Zhang Ruochen's side and said very seriously, "Royal Mountain is very likely an awakened sacred ground, and perhaps, even an awakened divine ground. I ventured deep into the mountains earlier and found that the dimension inside is very vast as if it was borderless. Plus, there are many heavenly treasures growing all around.

"I dare say that a great sect or an ancient family probably occupied this land in the past. However, something happened later, causing the land to be hidden within the folded dimension."

The fissure within Royal Mountain was still spewing Saint Qi, as well as heavenly and earthly precepts, making the cultivation environment there increasingly wondrous.

The battle earlier had caused great damage to Royal Mountain, yet in just an hour, all of the destroyed areas had automatically

healed as dense vegetation grew once more.

Chapter 1788 - On the Tongming River

Chapter 1788: On the Tongming River

Zhang Ruochen nodded lightly, “We need to get this piece of treasured lands into our hands. Sadly, Blackie is not here, or else it could use its inscription array to hide the Royal Mountains.”

Awesome, the Little Taoist showed a look of disdain and patted its eyes. “My skills in formation arrays are definitely not beneath that owl.”

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen did not believe it.

“It seems like I need to show you my skills only will you know who is the real master of formation arrays.” Awesome, the Little Taoist was full of confidence and immediately wrote a list of materials.

“As long as you can prepare all of these materials, I will be able to deploy a Ninth-rank formation array for you.”

Zhang Ruochen took the material list and said. A Nine-rank formation?”

A Ninth-Rank Formation Array can block creatures of the Supreme Saint realm, and only an Earthlord-realm Array Master would be able to create such a formation. And frankly speaking, Zhang Ruochen did not believe that Awesome, the Little Taoist had such an ability.

Awesome, the Little Taoist coughed twice and said. “Of course... It’s just a very rudimentary Ninth-Rank Array, and there is still a gap with the real one.”

Zhang Ruochen had not studied much about formations, but he was after all a spiritual power Saint King and found that the

list Awesome, the Little Taoist had given him was still somewhat reliable, and was not made up.

“I have most of the materials on the list, but I will need to purchase about a third of them.”

Zhang Ruochen kept the list and came to the periphery of the Royal Mountains and started using dimensional distortion techniques to create a large Dimensional Maze.

With this Dimensional Maze guarding the place, even a Nine-step Saint King would find it difficult to break into the Royal Mountains.

Of course, a single Dimensional Maze itself was not enough, if there were cultivators of space were to come to Yunwu Commandery, it would be broken very quickly. So, Zhang Ruochen ended up spending more time to set up a Temporal Array.

Immediately after, he rushed to Tongming River with the Saint Devourer who had broken through to the realm of a Seven-step Saint King while Awesome, the Little Taoist stayed behind in Yunwu royal city.

The distance between the Yunwu royal city and Tongming River was only tens of thousands of miles away. For a cultivator of a Saint King realm, this was not considered far, and it was impossible for the elites of the Fane of Youshen to not know that Yuan Che and the rest had perished.

But, why didn't they rush over to Yunwu royal city to deal with Zhang Ruochen?

Zhang Ruochen could only think of one possibility, and that was that they had broken through the Dragon Tomb at the bottom of the Tongming River.

They must not be allowed to dig out the remains of the Golden Dragon, and Zhang Ruochen rushing to Tongming River was not to fight against the cultivators of the Fane of Youshen head-on, but first to investigate the situation.

Secondly, if the cultivators of the Fane of Youshen had really broken through the Dragon Tomb, Zhang Ruochen could ambush them from the dark.

And at least hold them back.

As long as the evil spirit had refined the Saint Souls of Yuan Che and the others, its strength will definitely increase exponentially. By then, Zhang Ruochen will gather all of his forces, and may very well fight them on equal footing.

Time...

Every minute, every second was that urgent, and Zhang Ruochen did not have the time to prepare a perfect plan, and could only take one step at a time.

At dusk.

On the horizon, burning crimson clouds lit over the yonder, and its reflection on the waters of Tongming River made the river looked like a burning inferno.

Zhang Ruochen used his thirty-six transformation technique to become a big man with a mustache as he rode on a ship, and drove towards the direction of the underwater dragon palace with the current.

Moyin wore an antiquated pink palace dress, revealing her two delicate and jade-like arms, and a large portion of her snow-white chest as she knelt down by the side of the carriage and poured wine for Zhang Ruochen.

With the increase in her cultivation level, Moyin's appearance and temperament became more and more charming and attractive. And its beauty alone was almost on par with that of Mu Lingxi, and if she was placed in any other macroworlds, she was a beauty that could attract a Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the deck and roused his Saint Qi into his left leg.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

The blood in his left leg was boiling like magma.

A series of wondrous precepts moved around his blood, bones, and skin like a crimson dragon.

Suddenly, three crimson precepts rushed out of the left leg and like three fierce flame dragons, rushed into Zhang Ruochen's

Saint meridian and towards the sea of Qi between his brows.

Zhang Ruochen tensed his nerves as he mobilized his spiritual powers, Saint Qi and Saint Path precepts, and went all out to fight against the three crimson precepts.

After spending who knows how long only did Zhang Ruochen managed to refine the three crimson precepts, and forced them back into his left leg.

“Huh!”

Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh of relief and found that his Saint robes were drenched in sweat.

It was rather dangerous earlier, but it came with its own great rewards.

Zhang Ruochen could tell that there were close to a hundred thousand of those crimson precepts in his left leg. These precepts were far stronger than the Saint Path precepts cultivated by a Saint King, and they were probably divine precepts cultivated by Yanshen.

Only by refining all of the hundred thousand crimson precepts that Zhang Ruochen could freely use the power of God’s Left Leg as he wills.

However, just now Zhang Ruochen had used all of his four hundred thousand Saint Path precepts from all over his body and went all out to refine three of the crimson precepts. If he wanted to refine all hundred thousand of them, it was clear that Zhang Ruochen still had a long way to go.

“Master, situation abound.”

When Moyin was pouring wine for Zhang Ruochen, her eyelashes gently raised as her soft voice was transmitted to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately deployed his Dimensional Domain, covering an area over a dozen miles.

Within the domain, even the movement of winds and grass would not escape from his perception. And soon, Zhang Ruochen felt two extremely powerful Saint auras on the river bank.

Two Seven-Step Saint King of the Fane of Youshen, Liao Yijun and He Yuan, were standing in a shadow by the bank of Tongming River as they observed the ship in the distance.

Liao Yijun's eyes shrank deeply as a throwing knife appeared in his palm with tens of thousands of black lines flowing on the blade.

“Wait.”

He Yuan pressed against Liao Yijun's wrist and as he stared at the alluring woman on the ship, his eyes lit up.

Liao Yijun frowned and said. “Our senior had asked us to stand guard here is to prevent other people from approaching the waters ahead. We cannot afford any incidents.”

“With the cultivation level of the two of us, what sort of incident could happen? We can kill the man straight away, but the woman is a rare stunner. Aside from Senior Ruan Ling in our fane, who else has such a beautiful appearance, body, and temperament? Don't tell me you are not tempted at all?” He Yuan smiled.

Liao Yijun had to admit that the woman in the pink palace dress on the ship was indeed a beauty comparable to Senior Ruan Ling.

Ruan Ling was a disciple of Youshen and was extremely talented with countless pursuers. Liao Yijun and He Yuan could usually only imagine her because even talking to Ruan Ling itself was difficult.

Now that there was a beauty on par with Ruan Ling, Liao Yijun was naturally feeling fanciful.

Liao Yijun was quite cautious, and he said, “That mustached man on the ship is no simple character and is a Five-step Saint King. Better be careful when you strike.”

“Don't worry, if I cannot even take out a Five-step Saint King, won't I, He Yuan be the joke of the entire Fane of Youshen?” He Yuan laughed contemptuously and sounded quite conceited.

Sitting on the ship, Zhang Ruochen picked up his small bronze wine cup and drank heavily.

Rustle...

A breeze blew.

He Yuan wore a white coat as he appeared silently on the ship and stood before Zhang Ruochen, staring at Moyin with a smile without even concealing his purpose.

“Master, someone had intruded into our ship.”

Moyin deliberately pretended to be shy and scared, as she leaned towards Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing that scene, He Yuan’s mood soured. How could such a beautiful woman be ruined by such a brute of a man?

Zhang Ruochen stared back and pretended to be furious as he roared. “Who are you? Who let you board this ship without my permission?”

He Yuan smiled mockingly as he walked towards Zhang Ruochen and unleashed his powerful Saint aura.

Moyin, seemingly unable to bear the Saint aura, screamed as she collapsed onto the deck.

He Yuan bore an aura of a superior person, as he said. “Tell me, what realm do you hail from?”

Zhang Ruochen did not answer He Yuan. Instead, he glanced at Moyin on the ground with a smile.

“It doesn’t matter if you don’t want to say it. You’re a dead man anyway.” He Yuan roused all of the Saint Qi in his body as tens of thousands of swordsmanship precepts intertwined in his palm as he prepared to use the power of his sword to kill Zhang Ruochen with a thunderclap.

“A dead man, are you referring to yourself?” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Seeing that the mustached man was so calm, He Yuan felt something was wrong and immediately blasted the power gathered in his palm. However, under the table, over a dozen

razor-sharp roots blasted out and pierced his Saint body, and turned him into a pincushion.

Voosh!

The Saint Qi and Saint Path precepts in He Yuan's body were sucked away by those roots.

“Saint Devourer...”

A look of horror appeared in He Yuan's eyes as his rather handsome face immediately became distorted.

“Hehe, that's right, I'm the Saint Devourer. Weren't you wanting to eat me? Sadly, your cultivation level is not powerful enough, and you ended up being eaten by me.”
Moyin had long gotten up from the ground as her lips curled in a charming arc.

“Arrrghh.”

He Yuan struggled as he roared in pain, but he could not escape. His body gradually shriveled and became desiccated. The moment his corpse fell onto the deck, it was reduced to a pile of ashes.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. “Who told you to strike so soon? Should have waited a little longer.”

“But I can't wait any longer!”

Moyin pretended to be pitiful and spoke rather innocently.

By the riverbank, Liao Yijun sensed something was wrong and immediately sent a message to He Yuan, but there was no response.

“Whoosh.”

Liao Yijun decided to make a move as he sent a throwing knife of a Ten-thousand Marks Saint Weapon level flying out.

The power of the Saint Path erupted from the throwing knife and caused the waters of the Tongming River to roil violently. As the knife slashed downwards, the ship was cut into half with a loud ‘BANG’.

Liao Yijun stared at the water closely, only to see the ship slowly sinking to the bottom of the river, yet he saw no one flying out of the ship.

“Crap.”

Just as Liao Yijun just wanted to turn around and run away, dense silver roots rushed out from the mud and constricted him.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the void and appeared above and behind Liao Yijun, and slapped the latter's head and sending it sinking into the ground.

As the Saint Devourer consumed Liao Yijun, Zhang Ruochen transformed into He Yuan's appearance.

Earlier on, Zhang Ruochen did not immediately kill He Yuan because he wanted to observe the latter's behavior so he could accurately imitate it.

Chapter 1789 - The Heavenly Polars Geomantic Compass

Chapter 1789: The Heavenly Polars Geomantic Compass

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Even after Zhang Ruochen transformed into He Yuan, his left leg remained quite heavy, and he still limped uncontrollably as he walked.

That was a big giveaway!

Therefore, Zhang Ruochen dared not stand out too much and hid his aura as much as he could while he snuck to the bottom of the Tongming River.

When he arrived at the underwater dragon palace, Zhang Ruochen found that all of the palace's formation inscriptions had been breached. Within the dragon palace, over a dozen figures stood before the towering dragon's tomb. Clad in black robes, they exuded a strange and eerie aura.

Supreme-Saint Inscriptions had been laid all around the tomb by the Golden Dragon, and even a Nine-step Saint King would find it difficult to breach its defenses. Yet, they had all been eaten away by the Fane of Youshen's cultivators who had used Blood of the Devil.

With the dragon's tomb breached, a large area in the southeastern corner collapsed as a result.

Two of the black-robed cultivators had pretty strong auras, and Zhang Ruochen could feel quite a bit of pressure from them. They were, without a doubt, Nine-step Saint King elites.

One of them was standing below the dragon's tomb in white bone armor that covered the wearer's entire body, making the person's age and gender indiscernible.

The white bone armor was made out of a Supreme Saint's immortal bones, and the precepts of the Supreme Saint had been retained in the bones. There were defensive inscriptions engraved on it as well.

Behind him were two carrion.

Even though they were carrion, their flesh and skin had a metallic luster. They looked like a pair of grim reapers as their bodies radiated a heavy deathly aura, which turned the surrounding river water black. The blackness spread dozens of meters through the water.

Another Nine-step Saint King elite was standing on top of the dragon's tomb with his hands behind him. He looked to be about fifty or sixty years old with his white hair undulating in the water. Plus, he radiated a stronger aura than the white-bone-armored cultivator and two carrion combined.

Aside from him, there were seven to eight black-robed cultivators present. Each was a first-rate elite.

Zhang Ruochen dared not act rashly and became even more cautious as he said to himself, "That cultivator in white bone armor is probably He Yuan's master, Venerable Hiddenheart. He cultivates both Spiritual, as well as Martial Paths, and he is proficient in seeking out dragons and refining their corpses. Not only that, he has about a dozen Abominations at his disposal, and his strength is far beyond Yuan Che's.

"The one standing on top of the dragon's tomb is probably Venerable Hiddenheart's junior, Feng Chengdao. He is someone who is close to the Greater Precept World."

Venerable Hiddenheart was holding a simple geomantic compass in his hand and constantly infusing it with Saint Qi.

Whoosh!!

With the geomantic compass as the center, the water began to flow rapidly and form a vortex.

To be precise, it was the heavenly and earthly qi in the water that were flowing rapidly. They carried the river water with them, causing the strange phenomenon.

About an hour later, a flash of excitement appeared in Venerable Hiddenheart's eyes, and his hands trembled a little as he said, "The Heavenly Poles Geomantic Compass has found the dragon corpse's aura. It is deep underground. Give me a bit more time, and I will be able to lock onto its position. No matter how deep it is hidden, I will be able to dig it out."

Most of the cultivators of the Fane of Youshen knelt on one knee. "Congratulations, Venerable."

Feng Chengdao laughed. "Great! Once we dig out that dragon corpse and refine it into a Wyrmlord Abomination, we will definitely be able to dominate the Eastern Region. By then, those sacred medicines will be ours to take, yeah? Supreme Sainthood is close at hand. HAHA!"

"I cannot wait any longer."

Zhang Ruochen's heart tensed up as he thought hard about countermeasures.

Suddenly, he pulled out a short blade, a Ten-Thousand Marks Saint Artifact to be exact, and swiped it over his left leg.

Shrring!

The blade could not cut through the skin of his left leg and only left a white mark, which soon disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen smiled helplessly and used the short blade to make five bloody wounds on his body. Then, he smeared a large amount of blood on his left leg before he put away the short blade and rushed toward the dragon's tomb in a panic.

"Not good! Not good, Master! Zhang Ruochen has made his way to the Tongming River!"

Zhang Ruochen rushed up to Venerable Hiddenheart and fell forward heavily.

The Fane of Youshen's cultivators all reacted as if they were facing a major foe, and they turned to look behind Zhang Ruochen.

“I want to dig up the dragon’s corpse, and I do not have time for him, but very well... He actually showed up to meet his doom.” Venerable Hiddenheart let out an evil laugh as he immediately dispatched his two carrion underlings to intercept Zhang Ruochen.

Right at that moment, “He Yuan”, who was still lying down, suddenly raised his hand and released a blast of dark light from his hand.

It was a Dimensional Rift.

“You...”

Since “He Yuan” and Venerable Hiddenheart were too close to one another, the latter sensed the dimensional fluctuations but could not avoid the attack. Therefore, he quickly turned his body, so that it would avoid his vitals.

“Pfffft.”

The Dimensional Rift cut Venerable Hiddenheart’s arm off, and blood gushed out, dyeing a large area red.

There were feelings of confusion and fury in Venerable Hiddenheart’s eyes.

Zhang Ruochen dared not engage in battle. He instantly grabbed the broken arm and deployed his Great Dimensional Shift.

Noticing the fluctuations in the dimension around him, Venerable Hiddenheart finally came to a realization and shouted, “So it’s you, Zhang Ruochen!”

“Frigid Palm Strike.”

Tens of thousands of Saint Path Precepts rushed out of Venerable Hiddenheart’s remaining arm and struck Zhang Ruochen with fury, breaking the latter’s body into pieces.

“Damn it, that was just a phantom. After him!”

Venerable Hiddenheart roared furiously, and the sound wave he generated shook the river waters within hundreds of miles, kicking up waves that were dozens of feet high.

Whoosh...

Zhang Ruochen walked out of a void and appeared by the river bank. His left shoulder bones were all shattered and mangled while a searing pain ran across his body to the point that most parts of his body were starting to feel numb.

Earlier on, he had failed to avoid that palm strike from Venerable Hiddenheart and consequently suffered serious injuries.

“A Nine-step Saint King is just too scary. Even after I used the Great Dimensional Shift, I was still half a step too slow. If I had been any slower, I would probably be dead at the bottom of the river now.”

“Master, over here.”

Moyin was waiting by the shore and had already pushed the Golden Dragon Carriage to its limits at that point.

Zhang Ruochen jumped into the carriage, and the nine golden dragons pulled it up into the skies. Their explosive speed was much faster than that of any Nine-step Saint King.

Sitting in the Golden Dragon Carriage, Zhang Ruochen quickly ate a healing sacred pill before he looked at Venerable Hiddenheart’s broken arm.

There was an ancient, black geomantic compass in the broken arm’s hand.

“This is Venerable Hiddenheart’s Heavenly Polars Geomantic Compass. By taking it, it will be difficult for Venerable Hiddenheart to find the exact location of the Golden Dragon’s remains.”

Zhang Ruochen was about to grab the Heavenly Polars Geomantic Compass when out of the blue, dazzling light erupted from the broken arm as it dropped the compass, hitting Zhang Ruochen in the chest.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression instantly changed, and he quickly deployed the power of dimensional distortion to neutralize the blow.

“Although a Nine-step Saint King is strong, an arm alone cannot do anything to me.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately roused the formation inscriptions within the Golden Dragon Carriage to suppress the arm. He then fired out a Chenyan-Class Divine Purification Flame and burned the arm to ashes.

On the Tongming River, Venerable Hiddenheart sensed that the link between him and his arm had disappeared. His eyes instantly turned blood-red; he hated Zhang Ruochen with all his being.

With his current cultivation as a Nine-step Saint King, having his arm cut off and then destroyed made it very difficult to regrow a perfect arm again. Even if he consumed sacred pills or sacred medicines and forcefully regrow an arm, it would definitely possess defects. That would inevitably affect the formation of an immortal body greatly and his attempt to attain the Supreme Saint rank.

It might very well be the reason that he would never reach the rankings of a Supreme Saint.

Boom!! Boom!!

Feng Chengdao rushed out of the water and shouted, “They must never escape!”

“Heavens and the earth, heed me and strike!”

Tens of millions of Saint Path Precepts from inside Feng Chengdao’s body rushed to gather under his feet, forming a circular seal. Both the spiritual energy and Saint Qi around him converged upon his being.

The next second, Feng Chengdao pointed at the sky.

Whoosh!!

He fired out a blinding light beam that actually caught up to the Golden Dragon Carriage even though it had already traveled thousands of miles away by then.

The creatures on the ground could see the light beam crossing the sky while thundering sounds echoed in their ears. The wave of powerful Saint Path Energy caused, who knows how many, civilians on the ground to faint and bleed from their nose as well as ears.

On the Golden Dragon Carriage, Zhang Ruochen and Moyin poured all of their powers into the Eight-Dragon Umbrella.

“Rawwwrrrr!”

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella became as big as a cloud while eight golden dragons flew out of it, coiling together and forming a majestic portrait.

Boom!

The light beam crashed into the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and shook the Golden Dragon Carriage violently. It almost fell from the sky as a result.

However, the light beam had already flown thousands of miles and lost much of its power. Hence, Zhang Ruochen and Moyin successfully blocked it.

Feng Chengdao could clearly see the collision thousands of miles away. He frowned as he said, “I always thought that Zhang Ruochen must have borrowed Yueshen’s power to defeat Blackheart Demonlord’s divine avatar. It appears that I have underestimated him in the past. This kid, despite his low cultivation level, he is no doubt a headache and needs to be rid of at the soonest possible time.”

“Since Zhang Ruochen is rushing back to Yunwu Commandery, it means that he cares about the humans there. Let us go to the royal city. He will definitely appear,” Venerable Hiddenheart spat bitterly.

While Feng Chengdao and Venerable Hiddenheart led a group of cultivators from the Fane of Youshen to Yunwu Royal City, Zhang Ruochen sent a Communication Talisman to Awesome, the Little Taoist.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen received the reply talisman from Awesome, the Little Taoist.

“All of Yunwu Commandery’s humans have entered the inner worlds within the Exquisite Dimensional Orbs.”

Zhang Ruochen heaved a sigh of relief and promptly sent another message to Awesome, the Little Taoist, asking him to

fall back to Royal Mountain along with Xie Chengzi, the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, and the Demon Ape.

There were both Dimensional and Temporal Arrays on Royal Mountain. No matter how strong the Fane of Youshen's cultivators were, they would not be able to break in so soon. Besides, Awesome, the Little Taoist had a Supreme Saint Artifact in his hands. With the evil spirit also on the mountain, they were not totally helpless.

On the way back to Royal Mountain, Zhang Ruochen received another Communication Talisman.

It turned out that Luo Xu had sent someone to bring the two Godstones to the Martial Market Bank in Qianshui Commandery's royal city for Zhang Ruochen to fetch them.

“As expected of the Martial Market Bank, they surely are efficient.”

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed, so he drove the Golden Dragon Carriage in the direction of Qianshui Royal City, hoping to obtain the Godstones as soon as possible.

Chapter 1790 - Water Under the Bridge

Chapter 1790: Water Under the Bridge

Qianshui Commandery was one of the largest commanderies outside the Eastern Region's divine lands. Many famous rivers such as the Tongming River, the Wansang River, and the Baiyue River flowing through its borders, and were connected to thirty-three other commanderies. Its water and land-based roadways are very well developed and could be said to be in a very favorable geographical location.

In addition, the thirteenth Merit sub-terminal was built in the Qianshui Royal City, which immediately made this place a bridgehead fortress for the battles between the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court.

In the city, there were more and more saint-level elites coming from all realms in the universe, but most of them hid their aura away and did not show off just because Qianshui Royal City was a mortal city in Kunlun Realm as if quietly following some sort of rules.

Some cultivators even set up saint shops in the Martial Market to trade various cultivation resources.

No matter how terrible the fighting was elsewhere, Qianshui Royal City was thriving and was many times more prosperous than before.

When Zhang Ruochen entered the city, he noticed the interior of the city walls were all engraved with formation inscriptions, and the inscriptions were all quite complicated and arcane, very likely a Ninth-Rank Formation Array.

“With such a formation array protecting it, the Qianshui Royal City can be literally called an ironwall. It seems like Earthlord-realm Formation Masters from the Celestial Court had come to the Kunlun Realm.”

One could become an Earthlord with the rank of a Saint King, and Earthlords were definitely talented and experienced people in the way of the formation arrays. Such people could determine the victory or defeat of a large scale War of Merits and were extremely rare. At the very least, they could not find one in the entirety of Guanghan Realm.

Outside Qianshui Royal City, countless refugees had gathered and wanted to enter the city to escape the war. Recently, there had been continuous outbreaks of battles between Saints, and that terrified those civilians.

However, Qianshui Royal City was only so big, and it was impossible for it to accept the continuous influx of refugees, and could only expel them beyond the city walls.

Zhang Ruochen arrived at the city gate and immediately unleashed his saint aura. The saint guards manning the gate did not dare to stop him and immobilizing let him through.

However, an ancient mirror hung below the city, and after the examination by the ancient mirror, determining that he was not an Infernal Court cultivator in disguise, only did Zhang Ruochen officially enter the city.

It was easy getting out of the city, getting in, however, was difficult.

Looking at the bustling scenery in the city, Zhang Ruochen sighed to himself. “The war brought not only devastation to Kunlun Realm, but also hope of rebirth. This War of Merits, if it lasts for a hundred years, it will definitely be a realm where both suffering and opportunities coexist, and will definitely stimulate the Kunlun Realm to give birth to a large number of talents and strong persons.”

“Of course, there is a bigger possibility of it being destroyed by both internal and external woes.”

Even the gods could not predict where the Kunlun Realm will head to in the future.

Perhaps the destiny of Kunlun Realm was annihilation, but there would always be a group of stubborn ones who would not surrender to fate, as they puff their chest, grit their teeth,

endure whatever shame, bleed and fight as they screamed at the heavens and declare war against destiny.

When he arrived at the Martial Market Bank's Qianshui Commandery branch, the first person Zhang Ruochen saw was actually Lei Jing.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly clasped his hands together and bowed. "Greetings, Master."

Lei Jing was once the principal of the Martial Market Academy at Tianmoling and was Zhang Ruochen's first master. He had played a great role in helping Zhang Ruochen before his growth.

A day as his master was a master for a lifetime.

And now, Lei Jing had cultivated to the realm of a Demi-Saint and was now working in the Martial Market Bank's Qianshui Commandery branch.

"Haha."

Lei Jing was obviously quite happy as he laughed and patted Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder with his large hand, and said. "Good lad, it had only been a few years and your cultivation had reached the realm of a Saint King. Not bad, not bad, you must drink a couple of rounds with Master tonight."

While he was just a Demi-Saint, Lei jing did not exude any pressure at all and looked all carefree.

"Sure!" Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Immediately after, Lei Jing sighed again, knowing that Zhang Ruochen's life these past few years had not been easy. He wanted to say something but stopped, and instead said. "Forget that, let's get down to business. Your senior sister had been waiting for you for a long time now."

"Which senior sister?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"The one who brought you something."

Lei Jing took Zhang Ruochen to a quiet courtyard of the Martial Market Bank. In the courtyard was planted with a

Four-seasons Begonia, with a fragrance of flowers and the trace scent of calligraphy ink.

Suddenly, Lei Jing stopped and said. “She’s over there. Go on!”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the pond and saw Luo Shuihan’s graceful figure. She wore an immaculate white robe, and the white robe was whiter than snow, yet her person was whiter than her robes. The green water of the pond reflected her image, and the fragrance of the surrounding flowers made her look just as stunning as when Zhang Ruochen saw her at the western courtyard for the first time.

There was an elegant and artistic temperament around her.

The Saint Tome Maiden had such a temperament too, but as the maiden was active in court, and was well acquainted with the ways of the land, with troubles in her heart, and schemes within her being. She was always out and about, worrying about the safety of kin and country, or weighing the heroes of the world.

But Luo Shuihan was a hermit, with no quarrels in the world. She was like a cloud of mist floating in the sky and was untouched by worldly things.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that Luo Shuihan had actually reached the realm of a Saint King.

Luo Shuihan had always wanted to walk the path of Luo Xu. In fact, her talents surpassed Luo Xu, and Luo Xu did not have the conditions she had back then at all. He relied on his own hard work and continuous efforts to make up for what he lacked innately to achieve what he had today.

In addition to her own efforts, Luo Shuihan stood on Luo Xu’s proverbial shoulder of a giant, and with Luo Xu paving the way for her, her cultivation speed was naturally fast.

Of course, Luo Shuihan must have her own opportunities and fortune, otherwise, she would not have reached her current place.

The Three Demons of the Western Courtyard are all women of talents, each with their own personality and fortunes.

Seeing Luo Shuihan again, Zhang Ruochen sighed in his heart as he thought of the past.

“Senior sister.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Luo Shuihan took out a crystal box and handed it to Zhang Ruochen. “The item you wanted in is it.”

Zhang Ruochen took the crystal box and only after propping up a Dimensional Domain did he open the box. The box was inlaid with a formation array, and even so, two blinding divine light rushed out of it like two scorching suns, containing terrifying energies within.

Bam!!

Quickly closing the box, Zhang Ruochen suppressed his excitement. He did not want to appear too immature before Luo Shuihan and tried his best to keep his composure as he said, “How many saint stones?”

Luo Shuihan shook her head lightly and said, “This is just a small favor, you don’t have to pay any saint stones.”

Zhang Ruochen said. “I appreciate, senior Luo Xu’s kindness! But Senior Sister, you should know that I, Zhang Ruochen don’t like to owe anyone anything, just name the price.”

Luo Shuihan fell silent, and a moment later, she said. “No need for saint stones!” However, this is one thing that I might need to trouble you.”

“What’s the matter?”

“You should know about Luoshui, right?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded gently.

Luo Shuihan said, “Luoshui has a deep relationship with the Luo Saint-Clan, and with the recovery of the Kunlun Realm, Luoshui would soon undergo a lot of changes, and the eyes of the cultivators will probably be attracted to there.”

Zhang Ruochen obviously knew that Luoshui was extraordinary, and Luo Xu’s cultivated Luoshui Fist was actually learned at Luoshui.

There was a possibility that it was not Luo Xu who had learned the fist techniques there, but there were other secrets. After all, Luo Xu was already proficient in Luoshui Fist when he was out and about in the martial arts realm.

Given how exquisite Luoshui Fist was, how could a mere martial artist of the Huangji-Realm learn it?

Of course, that was Luo Xu's secret, and he would definitely try to keep that secret hidden. Luo Xu was already being very generous when he thought the Luoshui Fist technique to Zhang Ruochen, and Zhang Ruochen naturally pretended not to know anything and did not deliberately ask anything about it.

“Then what can I do? Take Luoshui away?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Luo Shuihan gently shook her head and said. “You cannot take Luoshui away. There is a great secret hidden there, and the opportunities of Master Xu, and mine, are obtained there.”

“The civilians of Luoshui's bank are more or less related to the Luo Saint-Clan. Master Xu hopes you can pick them up and take them away so that they don't perish in the chaos of war.”

Zhang Ruochen agreed and said. “This is just a small matter! The two Godstones from Senior Luo Xu, I'll accept them, and take it that I owe him a favor. If the Luo Saint-Clan were to get into any trouble, just let me know, and Zhang Ruochen will definitely rush over to help.”

Luo Shuihan smiled lightly, “A favor from Zhang Ruochen is much more valuable than two Godstones. There's no loss in us gifting you them.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly thought of something, and immediately took out a list and handed over to Luo Shuihan, as he said. “I need the materials in the list. It shouldn't be difficult for the Martial Market Bank, right?”

Luo Shuihan took the list and read it carefully as she said. “They are all materials for a formation array, and a rather high-level one. Give me a night, and I should be able to help you to get all of them by tomorrow morning.”

After parting with Luo Shuihan, Zhang Ruochen went to see Lei Jing.

Lei Jing had long taken out the best wine he had from his wine cellar. Even himself was only willing to taste only a sip a year, but at this moment, he and Zhang Ruochen were drinking it by the bowls.

As they drank, they walked about their experiences over the years.

Zhang Ruochen asked about his former senior Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi. Lei Jing did not want to hide the truth from Zhang Ruochen and told him everything. Back then, when Zhang Ruochen's three meridians were completely ruined and caused quite the trouble with many people related to him affected. Si Xingkong, the easygoing senior was brutally killed by the Immortal Vampires, and neither his wife nor children were spared, and his end was gruesome.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen crushed the wine bowl in his hand and deeply blamed himself. At the same time, his hatred towards the Immortal Vampires grew even more.

Lei Jing then told him that Chang Qiqi was still alive but had gone incognito, gotten married, and had children, living his life like a mortal.

That night, Lei Jing and Zhang Ruochen talked about many things and people, and no one knew how much they drank, and both of them got slightly tipsy.

Perhaps because he was tipsy, Lei Jing asked about Huang Yanchen.

Lei Jing knew that Huang Yanchen was the last name Zhang Ruochen wanted to hear. If he was sober, he would have definitely not asked about it.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and told Lei Jing that there was no news of Huang Yanchen.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen did not know if he really got drunk, or if he was just too tired that he got himself drunk. In short, as he lay on the table, he heard in a daze Lei Jing sighing. "Aih! Actually, she did return to Qianshui

Commandery... Yunwu royal city... Western Court... Seen
her once... Will never return... Hell's Gate... Tears..."

He did not hear it clearly, and by the time he woke up the next
day, Zhang Ruochen could not remember anything.

Chapter 1791 - Upheaval at Luoshui

Chapter 1791: Upheaval at Luoshui

Early in the morning, the air was cold, and the mist was like a heavenly bridge.

Luo Shuihan stayed up all night and sent dispatches everywhere to gather all of the materials on the list, and put them into a dozen large bronze boxes.

Zhang Ruochen went through the list one by one and nodded satisfyingly.

There were some materials on the list that were extremely rare, and Zhang Ruochen had never heard of them before and thought that there were no such things in Kunlun Realm. He was immediately impressed. “The Martial Market Bank sure is resourceful.”

As expected of a faction that lived through the great upheaval a hundred thousand years ago, and their background is far beyond Zhang Ruochen’s initial estimations.

In the Middle Ages, the Martial Market Bank was a top faction among the behemoths of the Kunlun Realm and had more than one god behind them.

After paying a large number of saint stones, Zhang Ruochen asked Luo Shuihan, “Does the Martial Market Bank have any Tears of the Void?”

Helping the Ancient Abyssal Sword converge its form was something Zhang Ruochen had to do next.

The rest of the materials were all ready, but he still lacked a few more Tears of the Void. Zhang Ruochen did not expect the Martial Market Bank to have the item, and had only asked to try just try his luck.

Luo Shuihan frowned as she said. “That’s a legendary treasure, and I’ve only seen them in ancient tomes. I’m not sure whether the Martial Market Bank has them or not, but of course, I can ask for you.”

“Okay, then I’ll be troubling you for that. Let me know if there are any news. We can discuss the price in saint stones later.”

Zhang Ruochen placed the dozen bronze chests into his Dimensional Ring, before going to Lei Jing to bid his farewells. Immediately after, he left the Qianshui royal city.

Moyin drove the Golden Dragon Carriage and rushed towards Luoshui.

Since he was trusted with the matter, he would see it through.

In any case, The Fane of Youshen should not be able to break into the Royal Mountains for the time being, and he had ample of time. At the same time, Zhang Ruochen was also a little curious, not only because of both Luo Xu and Luo Shuihan’s opportunities, but also the God-Defiance Stele.

The power of the God-Defiance Stele was the most bizarre of powers Zhang Ruochen had ever seen, and it must have quite the history to it.

And half of that stele was actually salvaged from Luoshui.

An hour later, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the bay of Luoshui.

Several years ago, Zhang Ruochen had stayed here to train the Luoshui Fist technique and to unravel the secrets of Luoshui. When he came to Luoshui again, he could barely recognize it and thought that he had come to the wrong place.

Was this still Luoshui?

Before him was the endless blue waves like an ancient ocean.

The Luoshui in the past was definitely not that vast.

Plus, a faint mist floated on the surface of the waters, and mysterious powers flowed with in it, blocking Zhang Ruochen’s vision and spiritual senses, leaving him only able to see the waters within a hundred miles, and any further away it was a patchy blur.

Zhang Ruochen unfolded a pair of dragon wings, and like a human-shaped goose, he flew into the water and headed toward the depths of the water.

As he walked upon the waves, he went ahead for a hundred miles.

Zhang Ruochen smelled a faint fragrance, and it smelt like tulips.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen actually saw a tulip several miles away that was the size of a tower, and each piece of the petal looked like it was carved out of rubies, and was crystal clear. Beneath the shining sun, it looked particularly gorgeous.

“That’s one-hundred-thousand-year-old sacred medicine.”

Zhang Ruochen was extremely surprised, and his emotions went out of control and got exceedingly excited.

Luoshui was not only filled with both heavenly and earthly saint Qi, and even the heavenly and earthly precepts were all active. How did a-hundred-thousand-year-old ancient sacred medicine like this appear?

It was too abnormal.

What sort of changes had taken place at Luoshui? Was it the same as the Royal Mountains, and was it an awakened location?

“Master, be careful. It’s not a simple tulip and is probably a Malevolent Plant, a Demonic Tulip. The fragrance it emits is extremely stimulating and seductive, and could affect the mind and emotions of a cultivator with flesh and blood.” Moyin said.

Zhang Ruochen immediately stopped as he held his breath and mobilized the Divine Purification Flames and refined the fragrance he had inhaled into his body.

There were problems indeed.

With his deep cultivation, how could he not control his own emotions?

After refining the fragrance in his body, Zhang Ruochen's thoughts cleared, and he immediately backed away upon sensing a dangerous aura.

The Demonic Tulip, among the Malevolent Plants, was not much weaker than the Saint Devourer. It was proficient in spiritual attacks, and even if it was only ten thousand years old, it could use its fragrance and spiritual powers to affect living beings in a radius of thousands of miles. Of course, the mortals here referred to creatures like snakes, insects, rats, and the like.

However, the one before him was a hundred thousand years old Demonic Tulip.

Even if Zhang Ruochen was a Saint King, should he get close, he would probably die.

“Crap.”

Zhang Ruochen noticed that the petals of the Demonic Tulip exuding a blood-red brilliance.

Whoosh!!

A blood light blasted out in all directions, and immediately dyeing the sky and waters red, and even more terrifying was a powerful spiritual power was carried within the blood light.

Zhang Ruochen looked over and saw thousands of blood-red Demonic Knights rushing towards him as deafening roars and the sounds of slaughter rang in his ears, shaking his saint soul so hard that it threatened to fly out of his body.

“It's a spiritual attack.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Pearls of Vanity and held it in his palm.

The saint Qi in his body started to circulate frantically as they converged towards the Pearls of Vanity.

A series of Buddha's shadow flew out from the pearls and surrounded Zhang Ruochen as if over a dozen Golden Arhats and Bodhisattvas were protecting him, reciting a Sanskrit chant in their mouths.

Using the Pearls of Vanity's spiritual defensive capabilities, Zhang Ruochen fled back to the shore and only stopped until he was hundreds of miles away.

“That's terrifying. Even with my peak Level 57 spiritual power, I almost could not resist it.” Zhang Ruochen's face was quite pale, and his spiritual strength was damaged to a certain extent.

After taking a sacred pill for recovering his spiritual powers, Zhang Ruochen took over two hours before fully recovering.

By the time he returned to the Bay of Luoshui, the Demonic Tulip had long since disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen was much more cautious this time around and retracted his aura as he dived deep into the deeper parts of Luoshui, but after several hundred meters down, he encountered another great danger.

His body sank underwater uncontrollably as if there was a hand pulling his legs downwards.

Zhang Ruochen looked down and saw a series of mysterious inscriptions in the water, and these inscriptions were entangling his leg and pulling him down, with his waist sinking into the water.

Whoosh!!

Zhang Ruochen deployed the power of space before he escaped the inscriptions under the water, and escaped back to shore.

Afterward, Zhang Ruochen went to explore several times, and every time he reached about a hundred miles in, he would run into some inscriptions, some would shoot out lightning, some would form sky fires, some would tear apart space.

Those inscriptions were too terrifying, and they were definitely not something arrayed by a being of a Saint King realm. With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation level, it was impossible for him to get in.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen still found something and had managed to pick over a dozen precious sacred medicines on

the surface of the water.

In one of his attempts, he managed to break into the water region about four hundred miles in and saw several massive black islands floating on the water.

That was right.

They were floating and slowly moving.

The black islands are hemispherical in shape and were quite massive, not that different from a celestial body that fell from the skies. Due to the distance, Zhang Ruochen could not see what was on the island, but he could sense a fleeting yet mighty power there.

Zhang Ruochen dared not continue to rush in, and immediately returned to the shore.

“No wonder Senior sister Luo said that I can’t take Luoshui away. Luoshui is really extraordinary. What actually is the big secret that is hidden here?”

“In the past, there must be a hidden dimension here, and with the recovery of the Kunlun Realm, it had gradually revealed itself. Ah, forget it, I’ll first move the civilians by the shore and resettle them to Qiankun Realm, and that’ll be the fulfillment of my promise to Senior sister Luo.”

The waters of Luoshui seemed to have all turned into a spiritual spring, and mortals that consume them are immune to diseases and have their lifespan prolonged.

Zhang Ruochen marched along the river downstream.

As he arrived at a fishing village near Luoshui, Zhang Ruochen had an ominous feeling even before he entered it.

The village was unusually quiet, and there were no human voices or barking of dogs.

Zhang Ruochen walked into the fishing village and gasped. He only saw all of the villagers there had turned into corpses, or to be precise, stone corpses.

A boy stood at the entrance of the village, his body was so desiccated that only skin and bones were left, and his body

petrified.

If not for the clothes he was wearing, Zhang Ruochen would have taken the boy for a statue.

Zhang Ruochen was not a cold-blooded person, and upon seeing this, he was furious. He held his fingers out and pressed against the boy's forehead and carefully sensed it.

“This... this is the aura of the Infernal Realm's Stone-Clan cultivators.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

Zhang Ruochen stomped onto the ground in fury, and sinking the ground in a radius of tens of miles, and the entire village was buried under the ground.

As he continued downstream, all of the fishing villages and small towns Zhang Ruochen passed by were in the same state.

There were no survivors, and all of them were petrified.

While Zhang Ruochen was furious, he still maintained his good senses and noticed something suspicious that puzzled him.

Even if these Stone-clan cultivators were to slaughter those fisherfolks, where did all of the blood in their bodies went to?

One needed to know that human blood was practically useless to a Stone-clan cultivator.

Zhang Ruochen quickened his pace and came to an ancient city near Luoshui.

This ancient city was called Luocheng and had a population of about several hundred thousand.

Fortunately, humans in Luocheng have not suffered the same fate.

Zhang Ruochen felt the aura of Sainthood cultivators in Luocheng, and so he wore a mask and retracted his aura as he quietly walked into the city gate.

Since those Stone-clan cultivators had killed all of the fisherfolks around Luoshui, they would definitely not let the

humans in Luoshui go.

“I want to see what sort of monster are you?” Zhang Ruochen had the intent to kill, and prepared to wait at Luocheng for his quarry.

Inside Luocheng, the largest restaurant was called Saint Xu Place and was named after Luo Xu had visited the premises.

Zhang Ruochen limped into Saint Xu Place and immediately sensed over a dozen sharp gazes staring at him. After not sensing any saint aura from him, only did those gazes turned away.

“To have so many powerful people gathered at Luocheng, not sure if there are any Infernal Court cultivators hiding among them.” Zhang Ruochen said quietly to himself.

A steward of Saint Xu Place saw that Zhang Ruochen was crippled, and wore an unhappy look as he said. “We are full, and there are no more seats. Sir, you should go somewhere else!”

Zhang Ruochen glanced around the restaurant and saw a table with only two people sitting on it. One had a giant cleaver on his back, looking like a butcher, while another was white and fat with a dull expression.

“Isn’t there a seat over there?” Zhang Ruochen pointed to that table.

Chapter 1792 - The Kunlun Realm's God of War

Chapter 1792: The Kunlun Realm's God of War

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

The big butcher-like man with a big cleaver on his back with exposed brutish arms guffawed and said. "There's a spot here. Come and sit."

"Thank you."

Zhang Ruochen walked to the table at the corner of the restaurant.

The steward of Saint Xu Place saw that Zhang Ruochen had left a series of deep footprints at his wake and was shocked. Knowing that this person was probably someone he could not afford to offend, so he did not dare to stop him.

A few of the cultivators in the building also saw the scene, and all of them stared at Zhang Ruochen again.

"I saw things wrongly earlier, he's actually a saint-level master who had completely hid his aura away." The tall woman in a black silk dress said in a low voice before chuckling.

A series of black light patterns were interwoven around her body, wrapping her like a silkworm cocoon, and no one could see her appearance or tell her age.

But it could still be vaguely seen that her skin was fair and her figure crisp and straight, the outline of her body was as beautiful as those drawn by a master painter and was extremely alluring.

On the opposite of the black cocoon was a white cocoon.

Within the white cocoon was a beautiful lady in a snow-white robe who sat there quietly.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at them, and while they did not deliberately release their saint aura, he could still feel two powerful auras emanating from them. From this, he could judge that they were definitely top-level masters.

The butcher laughed as if no one was around him. “Brother, those two are the twin beauties of black and white from the Taibai Realm, the Black Phoenix and the White Zhuque, most ordinary cultivators cannot deal with them, and this brother here advise you to not provoke them.”

Zhang Ruochen said nothing and nodded before secretly observing the two people next to him.

The butcher drank as if his life depended on it as he held a three-foot-tall wine cauldrons, and would take a giant swig from time to time. He even asked if Zhang Ruochen wanted to drink, but how could Zhang Ruochen accept a stranger’s wine, and so naturally he declined.

The chubby fool did not drink a sip of alcohol at all and only ate meat.

The servants of Saint Xu Place kept on serving food, but could not keep up with the speed on the fool gorging himself.

During the time Zhang Ruochen had come in, the fool had already eaten seventeen pots of meat, and it seemed like he still had not eaten enough, and was continuing to devour his food.

A group of cultivators was talking about the recent events in the Eastern Region.

“The Undead Wraith army is continuously rushing out of the Nether Realm, and trying to cross the River of Corpses to enter the Kunlun Realm. But many saints of the Celestial Court had gone over to the River of Corpses to stand guard, and saint battles were erupting on a daily basis. The fighting in both the Godfall Tombs and the River of Corpses is so brutal and destructive I have no idea if the saint armies of the Celestial Court is able to stop them?”

“If the River of Corpses defensive line is breached, then the entire Eastern Region will suffer.”

“Don’t worry, Luoshui is at the edge of the Eastern Sea, and is who knows tens of thousands of miles away from the River of Corpses. Those Undead Wraiths may not even be able to fight their way here after another ten years.”

“Don’t be too optimistic. As far as I know, some of the demons from the Infernal Court had already arrived at Luoshui. Strange things had happened to the fishing villages and towns around Luoshui, how can they not be linked to the Infernal Court?” Clearly, most of the cultivators would naturally feel a little afraid after hearing about this.

A young girl’s voice suddenly rang out. “I heard that Zhang Ruochen had returned to Yunwu Commandery, how about we all escape to Yunwu Commandery for refuge?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little surprised as he had not expected to hear his own name.

The girl was about fifteen or sixteen and looked rather pretty.

Sitting next to her was a graceful and noble-looking old woman, whose cultivation level had reached the Ninth Transformation of Dragonfish and should be regarded as one of a well-known person in Luoshui.

Zhang Ruochen’s reputation in the Kunlun Realm, especially around the vicinity of Yunwu Commandery was great, and it could be said that he had reached the level of being a household name, and even ordinary people know that he is a distinguished person.

The cultivators in the Saint Xu Place all whispered to one another.

“Zhang Ruochen had rushed back not long ago, and just as he returned to Yunwu royal city, he had killed several powerful saint-level enemies, and his actions are as hardline and brutal as usual.”

The young girl spoke eloquently. “What sort of character is Zhang Ruochen? A person who could reconnect his three meridians even after having them destroyed and the Nine Jiezi

was no match for him. He did not kneel before the empress and mustered millions to capture the saintesses. Also, he and Lady Yueshen went to the Celestial Court and slaughtered all over the place there. With no peers capable of defeating him, and for such a person to stand guard at Yunwu Commandery, who would dare to cause trouble?”

Clearly, the little girl adored Zhang Ruochen quite a bit, and her eyes lit up when she said all that.

“Luoshui is too far away from The Eastern Region’s Divine Lands, and the powerhouses of the imperial court cannot protect us. So why don’t we all go to Yunwu Commandery, and ask Zhang Ruochen for shelter?”

“The evil spirits of the Infernal Court will definitely not spare Luo Cheng. I feel that we should indeed go to Yunwu Commandery, as after all, Zhang Ruochen is the Kunlun Realm’s god of war.”

A few ridiculing laughter rang out. “Zhang Ruochen can barely even protect himself, and you want to seek asylum from him? Are you looking for your death?”

“That’s right, the Venerable Hiddenheart and Feng Chengdao of the Fane of Youshen are Nine-step Saint Kings that had cultivated for over two thousand years. If they were to strike, Zhang Ruochen would be hard-pressed to survive this month alone.”

“Zhang Ruochen dare to call himself the God of War of Kunlun’s Realm? HAHAHA, what a joke!”

“There’s no one else in Kunlun Realm?!”

“If it wasn’t for us not wanting to get into a squabble with the Fane of Youshen, the grudge of Zhang Ruochen killing Fengjian alone is enough for us Six Scions of Tianyuan to not let him go.”

Six cultivators dressed in white robes sat in one of the private rooms in Saint Xu Place.

On the surface, all of them looked like they were in their 30s or 40s. However, Zhang Ruochen could tell that the true age of the six were probably all above 500 years old.

“Fengjian? Six Scions of Tianyuan?”

Zhang Ruochen frowned as if he had never heard of them. Suddenly, something struck Zhang Ruochen as he seemingly remembered something and a smile appeared on his face.

Wasn't Fengjian the leader of the Heavenly Realm's Tiankui Realm in the Celestial Domain of Truth? It does seem like he had perished in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

He sure cannot escape from his foes, and Zhang Ruochen never had a good impression of the cultivators of the Heavenly Realm.

The young girl was very angry and said. “Zhang Ruochen is the God of War of Kunlun Realm, and you people only dare to talk crap about him here. If you are actually capable, then go to Yunwu Commandery, he can beat all six of you with just one hand.”

“Pfffft.”

One of the Six Scions could not contain his laughter and spat out his drink.

“Are the humans of Kunlun Realm that stupid? They used to be in the top five of the ‘Ten-thousand Realms Merit List’. How can all of them be so ignorant?”

“Junior brother, you are a Seven-step Saint King. In any case, there's no need to stoop down to her level.”

“Senior brother, you are right, but what she said was just too hilarious. For an ant-like creature like her, she doesn't know that I can kill Zhang Ruochen, the God of War in her eyes, with just a single finger.”

The young girl was so angry that she ground her teeth and walked toward the private room, and was about to argue with the Six Scions of Tianyuan. As she walked, she said. “You are the ignoramus! You are the fools! Zhang Ruochen is already very powerful, and you are definitely not his match!”

“Insolence!”

Tianyuzi, one of the Six Scions of Tianyuan growled and unleashed a powerful saint aura that engulfed the entire Saint

Xu Place.

Inside the building, a series of collapsing sounds were heard.

A large group of cultivators fell from their chairs as they were pressed onto the ground by the saint aura, and could not move.

Tianyuze suddenly stood up and said sharply. “A mere mortal dare to be insolent before six Saint Kings, did you think just because we won’t stoop to your level you can take advantage of that? I can condemn you to death with just your earlier words alone.”

Suddenly, Tianyuze’s pupils shrank slightly and she found the fifteen-or-sixteen-year-old girl was still standing outside the private room without being suppressed by his saint aura.

Someone had protected her with Saint Qi.

Tianyuze stared at the cultivator who had released his Saint Qi and realized it was the cripple wearing the mask from before.

“You, the cripple, want to be a busybody that much?” Tianyuze said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen’s lips curled up as he said sarcastically. “A Saint King of the Tiankui Realm wants to condemn a Kunlun Realm’s mortal to death? What power!”

The butcher stared at Zhang Ruochen with a smile on his face.

The fool stopped gorging down his food and looked stupidly at Zhang Ruochen.

The black and white beauties of Taibai Realm too looked at Zhang Ruochen and communicated with one another.

Immediately after, swords were drawn in Saint Xu Place.

“Sirs, please calm down...”

The steward of Saint Xu Place immediately walked to the private room to apologize to the Six Scions of Tianyuan. He wanted to pull the young girl away but was pushed away by Tianyuze.

“Get lost.”

With Tianyuzi's level of cultivation, a light push was enough to send the steward flying into the wall, and no one knew if he was dead or not.

"That's too much!" Zhang Ruochen said.

Tianyuzi walked out of the room and went straight to Zhang Ruochen as he said, "So what?"

"Junior brother, just teach her a lesson is enough. We have to follow the rules set by the Celestial Court and the Fane of Merits, and not kill someone as we like." Tianmingzi, the eldest of the scions said from the private room.

The Six Scions of Tianyuan were all first-class powerhouses amongst the Saint Kings, and few cultivators dared to offend them.

All of them felt that the cripple did not need to challenge the six scions for a mortal, and that was asking for trouble. Of course, they also felt that Tianyuzi was too narrow-minded and lacked tolerance, for a dignified Seven-Step Saint King to stoop to a level of a mere little human girl.

They dared not offend the Six Scions of Tianyuan, so no one intervened.

Zhang Ruochen still turned his back to Tianyuzi and laughed. "Fortunately he's not dead, otherwise you'll be paying with your life today."

"All right, then. I'll kill a mortal, and see if you can make me pay with my life." Tianyuzi, five fingers formed into a claw and struck at the young girl's forehead like lightning.

Bam!!

Tianyuzi flew out and his body crashed through the walls of Saint Xu Place and fell into the street outside.

Zhang Ruochen stood beside the young girl as he slowly retracted his fist, seemingly he had done something that was very simple.

Most of the cultivators could not see clearly when did Zhang Ruochen appeared beside the girl, and how did he send Tianyuzi flying with just a punch alone, and were shaken.

It turned out that the cripple was that powerful.

“What speed, what strength.”

The Black Phoenix blurted out as she stared at the cripple with her beautiful eyes.

The White Zhuque too had been observing Zhang Ruochen, and transmitted her voice to Black Phoenix, “That person’s control of his power is the most terrifying. Generally speaking, the power to send a Seven-step Saint King flying is enough to level mountains. However, his punch only sent Tianyuzi flying, and there was barely any shockwave that had struck the other cultivators in the building. Can you pull that off?”

Black Phoenix shook her head slightly.

“Neither could I,” White Zhuque said.

Chapter 1793 - Of the Precept Dominion Realm?

Chapter 1793: Of the Precept Dominion Realm?

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

“Uncle, you are so cool! Are you a cultivator from Kunlun Realm?”

The young girl did not show any fear or awe just because Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level was so strong, and was still very lively and adorable as she punched him in the chest.

Zhang Ruochen looked behind at the young girl and grabbed her by the wrist as he pulled her back and said. “When you meet a wicked person, don’t try your luck, you will suffer for that.”

“Cripple, watch your mouth, who’s the wicked person now?”

Tianmingzi, Tianjuezi, and Tianshangzi—all three of them walked out of the private room into the main hall.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The two other Scions of Tianyuan, Tianxuzi and Tianjinzi, turned into two white lights and rushed out of Saint Xu Place to check on Tianyuzi’s injuries.

Zhang Ruochen spat back. “Killing someone just because of the disagreement, isn’t that the hallmark of a wicked person?”

“Are mortals even humans?” Tianjuezi said.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes shrank deeply.

“You humans are really strange. It’s clear that you had cultivated from being a mortal human to a saint, and you are

saying that mortals aren't humans? Interesting, interesting.” Black Phoenix seemed to be unafraid of the six scions and spoke sarcastically.

Tianmingzi glared at Tianjuezi and pulled him back.

Tianmingzi was the head of the Six Scions of Tianyuan. He looked about forty years old, with a blue crown on his head, and gave out a somewhat refined temperament, yet his eyes were quite sharp and a trace of lightning moved within his eyes.

The Divine Seal in Zhang Ruochen's eyes activated as he stared back at Tianmingzi, and his presence was no weaker than the latter.

A moment later, Tianxuzi and Tianjinzi carried Tianyuzi back into Saint Xu Place.

Tianyuzi's saint robes were already torn into strips of cloth, his chest appeared a little sunken, and his lungs were smashed by Zhang Ruochen's punch, and his saint soul too was damaged to a certain extent. He stared viciously at Zhang Ruochen and said. “Senior brother, you must kill this bastard and avenge me.”

Tianmingzi said calmly, “Sir, for you to wound my junior brother with just a punch, surely you must not be a person without a name. How about you tell us your name so that we can get to know you.”

“No need for that,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Tianjuezi stared daggers at Zhang Ruochen and said eagerly. “You spit on our honor! Senior brother, don't stop me, let me cripple him thoroughly and avenge junior brother.”

Black Phoenix's sweet voice rang out once again. “The Celestial Palace and the Fane of Merits have rules that sainthood cultivators are forbidden from fighting in mortal cities, or else you will suffer divine retribution.”

Tianmingzi's brows wrinkled as he stopped the ill-tempered Tianjuezi.

If this was just the Six Scions of Tianyuan against the cripple, Tianmingzi would not be as restrained as he is now. Even if the aftermath would result in all of the civilians in the city killed, he would definitely avenge Tianyuzi.

He would even use the crippled's weakness of 'caring about the lives of mortals' against him.

But, there were many other saint cultivators present, and should that happen, someone would definitely collect evidence and report it to the Celestial Palace, and that would be detrimental to the Six Scions.

"Senior brother."

Tianjuezi was furious, and he sent Tianmingzi a telepathic message. "Kill all of the cultivators present, including that Black Phoenix and White Zhuque. Capture them, and plant a Saint Worm into them, and turn them into our servants. By then, we can deal with them however we see fit. Hehe."

Tianmingzi responded. "The Black Phoenix and the White Zhuque are both powerful persons of Seven-step Saint King-realm. You think it's easy to capture them? Plus, that cripple's strength is very strong as well, and cannot be underestimated."

Finally, Tianmingzi's gaze was affixed on the graceful old woman in the distance, who seemed to be the elder of that young girl.

That old lady may only look like in the realm of the Ninth Transformation of Dragonfish, but Tianyuzi's saint aura did not seem to affect her at all.

That is to say, that old lady had hidden her cultivation.

With Tianmingzi's cultivation level, yet he was unable to see through her, and naturally had made him wary of her.

"Let's leave Luocheng first, and wait until they are out of the city before we strike against them," Tianmingzi said by telepathy to the rest.

"Stop."

That elegantly dressed old lady coughed slightly as she stood up and walked toward the Six Scions of Tianyuan. While she

did not exude any powerful saint aura, but her presence itself gave out a very strong pressure.

The Butcher and the Fool glanced at each other, and a look of caution appeared in their eyes for the first time.

The Black Phoenix and the White Zhuque too were slightly surprised, and there was a hint of astonishment in their eyes. Clearly, they were still inexperienced and had missed something again.

“Grandma.”

The young girl walked over to the old lady and held her by the arms.

Tianmingzi’s Saint Qi started to rouse as a large amount of Saint Path precepts gathered in both his hands as he said calmly. “Madam, do you wish to say anything?”

“Nothing, I just want to kill someone.” The old lady said plainly.

“Kill who?”

The old lady raised her finger and pointed at Tianyuzi as she said. “Xiaoli is a chosen of mine that I purposely came to Kunlun Realm for. If someone wants to kill her, then this old one will of course need to stand up for her.”

“I’m afraid that there is a misunderstanding!” Tianmingzi said.

“There’s no misunderstanding.”

Tianjuezi sneered. “Old lady, do you take us Six Scions of Tianyuan as squishy persimmons, that you can kill whoever you want?”

The old lady looked up and revealed a pair of gray eyes.

No one knew if those pair of eyes had any magic to it, but the moment she stared at Tianjuezi, the latter immediately trembled as if he had seen a ghost and dared not utter another word.

Tianmingzi realized that the old lady before him must be some sort of terrifying figure and quickly said. “The Celestial Palace has forbidden.—”

Before he could finish speaking, a scream rang out behind Tianmingzi.

Tianmingzi turned around and look over, only to see a blood hole appeared at the center of Tianyuzi's brows, as wisps of black mist escaped from the hole.

In just an instant, a Seven-step Saint King was completely devoid of life and turned into a pool of black blood.

Even Zhang Ruochen gasped, and with his eye power, he could not see how the old lady had struck.

The old lady and the young girl walked out and seemingly talking to herself. "If you make a mistake, you should be punished."

Tianmingzi was a Nine-step Saint King of the Lesser Precept-World realm, but he dared not make any move as cold sweat appeared on his head, and was very suspicious if the old lady had already cultivated to the point of Precept Dominion.

The moment one reaches Precept Dominion, it means that they have touched the threshold of Supreme Sainthood.

The old lady and the young girl both left Luocheng.

The Six Scions of Tianyuan... or to be precise, the Five Scions of Tianyuan now, headed in another direction.

As night fell, there was no moonlight.

Luocheng would soon be swallowed by darkness, and the wind from Luoshui blew into Luocheng, making it extremely cold.

Perhaps because they could see that Zhang Ruochen was a Saint King-realm master, the saint cultivators in Saint Xu Place quickly broke the ice with him, and Zhang Ruochen learned quite a number of things from them.

It turned out that they had gathered in Luocheng to try their luck in the deep waters of Luoshui to pick up sacred medicine and look for a supreme opportunity.

"It's said that on a moonless night, the reflection of the stars would form spots on the surface of the water and can guide the

cultivators deep into Luoshui. Usually, the deep waters of Luoshui are protected by ancient inscriptions and cannot be entered at all.” A One-step Saint King named Lin Shuo said so.

“A moonless night.”

Zhang Ruochen recited it once and put it to memory.

Another Half-step Saint King cultivator said. “The Six Scions of Tianyuan are quite powerful characters, especially Tianmingzi who had reached the realm of a Nine-step Saint King. Brother, you have offended them, and you must be careful from now on.”

The Black Phoenix’s lifted her slender hand and held a luminous cup as she initiated an invitation Zhang Ruochen, and smiled. “Cripple, I have good wine made from Ten Thousand Years Goldenlight Grapes, want to have a drink, and be friends?”

All of the saint cultivators present immediately showed an envious look, and encouraged Zhang Ruochen to go over quickly.

The Black and White Beauties of Taibai Realm were quite famous scions of heaven, and their beauty was comparable to those in the ‘Nine Immortal Beauties’ painting, or maybe a little less. But as the top beauty of their worlds, which common cultivators would have earned the right to be invited by them.

Zhang Ruochen’s strength was more than enough, and his character had been affirmed by them, so he had such an honor.

Zhang Ruochen had a good impression of Black Phoenix so he walked over and smiled. “Did Maiden Phoenix came to Luoshui to seek opportunities as well?”

Hearing the name ‘Maiden Phoenix’, Black Phoenix let out a smile and said. “Yes, and no. By the way, have you trained in the Celestial Domain of Truth?”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly startled and asked. “How did you know?”

“How would a cultivator who had never trained in the Celestial Domain of Truth exercise such a level of control as yours?” Black Phoenix said.

Zhang Ruochen said. “That is to say, both of you two maidens have trained in the Celestial Domain of Truth before?”

Black Phoenix nodded and said. “A person who can train in the Celestial Domain of Truth must be a top scion of heaven, and the ability to fight across realms. Did you participate in the Divinity Bestowment Altar Assembly?”

Just when Zhang Ruochen was thinking about how to answer that question, the ground trembled slightly.

Boom!

Continuous loud noises rang out outside Luocheng, and the earth shook more and more violently.

White Zhuque uttered two words softly. “They come!”

The two ladies stopped communicating with Zhang Ruochen and immediately turned into two streams of light, one white one black as they broke through the roof and appeared at the top of Saint Xu Place.

The saint cultivators in the building all rushed out one after another and flew to a higher point in the city.

Zhang Ruochen held his Eight-Dragon Umbrella that was concealed in light to support his body as he stood on the street and looked up above. He saw layers of black clouds converging from all directions above Luocheng.

A blob of dark red light flickered among the clouds.

Outside Luocheng, colossal boulders rushed out of the ground and formed into a ring-shaped stone mountain hundreds of meters high, enclosing the entire city within.

“Sure enough, it’s the aura of the Infernal Court’s Stone-clan.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath as a faint murderous intent radiated from his body.

“RAAAAWWRRR!!”

The boulders in the ring-shaped stones mountain continued to roll and form into a stone golem one after another, and soon an army of stone golems was formed, and it encircled the city.

A black phantom wings tens of meters long appeared on Black Phoenix's back, as she unleashed her saint aura and pointed her sword in a direction of the night and said. "Shi Kai, us sisters have been waiting for you for a long time now. Still not showing yourself?"

Chapter 1794 - Shi Kai

Chapter 1794: Shi Kai

“Who is Shi Kai?”

Suspicion was growing in Zhang Ruochen’s heart when he saw a swarm of flaming boulders flying over like a meteor shower, cutting through the night, and letting out rumbling sounds as they bombarded Luocheng.

Not good.

If those flaming boulders were to fall into the city, the cultivators may be able to save themselves, but the common people would definitely perish.

Both the civilians and martial artists in Luocheng were all trembling and many fell onto the ground.

“The end... the end is nigh...”

“Please, master cultivators, save us, the city will be forever grateful.”

...

The saint cultivators in the city all looked grim, and wanted to only preserve their strength to fight against the foes from the Infernal Court, and did not have any intention to protect the humans in Luocheng.

Protecting those mortals will only put them in danger.

Whoosh!!

Zhang Ruochen waved his sleeve and eighteen flags flew out and were planted on eighteen positions around Luocheng.

That was the Flag Array Blackie had refined, called the ‘Conflagration of Heaven and Earth Formation’. It was said that this formation array was a Ninth-Rank formation, and it took hundred-and-eight of the flags to fully unleash its power.

But, due to limited resources, it had only managed to refine eighteen flags.

Of course, whether this formation was called the ‘Conflagration of Heaven and Earth’ or not is unknown. After all, Blackie’s naming schemes had always been flamboyant.

“Deploy.”

Zhang Ruochen roared as his long hair fluttered and halos of saint light burst out of his body and enveloped Luocheng within.

The saint Qi in the light were infused into the eighteen flags.

Immediately, the flagpoles turned into an iron column as thick as a millstone, as the flags unfolded and covered the sky.

A dense swarm of flame pythons rushed out of the flags and weaved together to form a giant net that wrapped around the city beneath it.

Boom!! Boom!!

Boom!

Over tens of thousands of flaming boulders came raining down, and collided with the Conflagration of Heaven and Earth Array.

This wave of attack lasted over a dozen breaths before it ended, and all of the boulders were blocked by the formation array. The civilians in the city heaved a long sigh of relief, and many old folks were simply frightened and fell onto the ground.

All of those saint cultivators looked surprised.

Not only they were surprised that the cripple actually would save the mortals of Luocheng. They were even more surprised that he had such a powerful flag formation with him.

The cripple was really a powerful person.

Just when all of the saint cultivators relaxed a little.

There was a deafening explosion from inside Saint Xu Place. A stone golem bigger than Saint Xu Place burst out from the

ground and tore a nanmu drum tower, which was more than twenty feet high, to pieces.

The stone golems hands grabbed both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque and pulled them down from the air.

“Oh no, Shi Kai was hiding... in the city...”

Both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque were caught off guard, and just as they were about to swing their saint swords to break both of Shi Kai’s hands, they found out that his hands were covered with wards and suppressed the whole of their strength.

“A Stone-clan Supreme Saint’s Forbidden Wards.” White Zhuque’s face turned pale.

“You b*tches, pursuing me for hundreds of miles, and today, I will make you suffer the worst of agony.” The giant golem let out an angry roar from its mouth, and its eyes glowed with fire.

“Both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque are both top-class scions of heaven. Their strength is no weaker than that golem’s, but for them to be so easily ambushed by it, their combat experience is just insufficient.” Zhang Ruochen sighed and shook his head.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen had to go all out in controlling the ‘Conflagration of Heaven and Earth Array’ to resist the golems outside the city, and simply could not help them.

He too did not know what purpose the golem had as it tossed both the ladies down onto the ground, and bombarded them with over a dozen punches, wounding them seriously, before using two chains to lock onto their necks and dragging both of them out of the city.

Both of the cocoon-like protection on Black Phoenix and White Zhuque were long shattered, and revealing an almost suffocating beautiful facade. Any male cultivators who saw their beautiful faces would have love and pity welling in their hearts.

But at this moment, both of them were miserable as they grabbed onto the chains on their neck, and futilely trying to break free.

“Let the two maidens go.”

A few saint cultivators rushed out and tried to save the Black and White Beauties.

“Get lost.”

The stone golem waved its ten-feet-long arm out and formed a saint Qi wave, instantly vaporizing them into clouds of blood.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The stone golem walked past and left a series of broken as on the slate ground in its wake.

Seeing that it was going out of Luocheng, Zhang Ruochen went all out, and the saint Qi in his body poured out like a tide.

The Conflagration of Heaven and Earth Array unleashed a large burst of flames, which turned into a like wave of inferno several meters high that rushed out and turned all of the ten thousands of stone golems outside the city into molten slag.

That stone golem called ‘Shi Kai’ suddenly turned around and stared at Zhang Ruochen standing in the middle of the street and laughed. “There’s a powerful one here, Qi Xiaotian, I’ll leave him to you!”

In the face of the flames from the array flags, Shi Kai walked over to one of them and grabbed the flagpole with its stone arm.

“What?”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly taken aback and realized that the flames from the array flags could not do anything to Shi Kai.

A network of red wards appeared on its stone body, and the flames could not get close.

Shi Kai pulled up the array flag and tossed it towards Zhang Ruochen.

Shi Kai's cultivation level was very powerful and was probably the peak of an Eight-step Saint King, plus with that terrifying power on his body, Zhang Ruochen did not dare to face him head-on.

Zhang Ruochen backed away like a bolt of lightning.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

The flagpole was planted on the position where Zhang Ruochen had stood earlier, and the millstone-sized pole fully sank into the ground and kicked up a large number of rocks, collapsing many homes in the process.

Shi Kai no longer bothered with Zhang Ruochen as it dragged both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque into the darkness.

“Why would it let the humans of Luocheng go?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little confused, and just as he wanted to chase after Black Phoenix and White Zhuque to rescue them, suddenly, the black clouds above his head were pierced by a blood light as a cauldron with countless dazzling patterns on it appeared in the blood light.

The blood-red cauldron was the size of a palace, and there were some ancient magical marks on it.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and took a closer look, only to see that within the cauldron were countless of fresh human blood.

Voosh!

The light from the cauldron blasted out as it exuded a strange power.

The humans in Luocheng felt extreme pain and all of them screamed. The blood within their body was crashing uncontrollably against the blood vessels as if wanting to burst out of the body.

“So it was this blasted thing that had consumed the blood of the fisherfolks.” Zhang Ruochen activated the power of the Fire God's Gauntlet and both his arms were ablaze.

The Butcher and the Fool walked out swaggeringly from the ruins.

The Butcher's built was burly and carried a powerful sinister aura around him. "Little brother, you are no match for Qi Xiaotian, leave him to us. You go and rescue those two beauties!"

"I don't like playing hero saving the damsel," the Fool said with a smile and looked like the Laughing Buddha.

The Butcher raised his head and looked at the blood-red cauldron in the sky and said. "The two of us had been investigating who was causing trouble at Luosheng, so that's... why... we...are in... Luocheng..."

Bam!!

The Butcher fell onto the ground with his head looking up, and slammed head-first into a piece of gravel.

"Watch out!" Zhang Ruochen thought that the Butcher had suffered a sneak attack, and immediately activated his armor of words, and let out a vigilant expression.

The Fool still kept on smiling as he waved his head. "It's okay, it's okay, he just fainted at the sight of blood!"

Zhang Ruochen was stunned.

Fainted at the sight of blood?

Boom!! Boom!!

The aura around the Fool suddenly changed as a dazzling golden light exuded from his whole body, and a silhouette of a golden pagoda rushed out from his body and covered him within it.

His bare feet suddenly stamped against the ground, and he blasted off into the sky like a cannonball.

BAM!!

The golden pagoda rushed to the sky and collided with the blood-red cauldron.

One pagoda and another cauldron actually flew above the clouds.

With a loud bang, a strong saint power shockwave blasted out from the sky, shattering all of the black clouds in the radius of thousands of miles.

That seemingly harmless and gluttonous fool was actually a superhuman?

Zhang Ruochen was still a little confused, and then he looked at the Butcher who had fainted due to the sight of blood, he got even more confused.

No longer dwelling on it, Zhang Ruochen picked up the fainted butcher, and deployed his Greater Dimensional Shift, and rushed out of Luocheng. With a wave of his sleeve, he recalled all of the eighteen flagpoles.

After a roughly-four-hundred-mile pursuit, Zhang Ruochen saw Shi Kai in the distance and was slightly glad.

Both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque were fairly decent sainthood cultivators, and would not indiscriminately kill mortals, plus they were also doing their best against the cultivators of the Infernal Court. Zhang Ruochen did not wish for these two powerful persons to fall.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen also knew that if he were to face Shi Kai head-on, he was most likely not Shi Kai's match.

And so, he could only win this battle by his wits and not recklessness.

Both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque were overjoyed when they saw the cripple pursuing them from behind as if the two who were about to drown were tossed a life-saving rope.

Shi Kai glanced behind it, and a smile appeared on its stony face.

WHOOSH!!

Suddenly, a torrent of blood came out of nowhere.

It was a swarm of Bloodbats, and each was the size of a dustpan and claws as sharp as blades. Some of the Bloodbats were as big as a hill, and they unleashed a tyrannical aura.

Zhang Ruochen was swarmed by the bats, and he killed hundreds in a row. As he did not want to get bogged down by them, he prepared to use his Greater Dimensional Shift to continue to pursue Shi Kai.

Suddenly...

Zhang Ruochen saw a familiar slender figure on the back of one of the Bloodbats.

“It’s her. She’s actually not dead.” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

On the back of the Bloodbat stood a woman full of sinister beauty. Her snow-white body was wrapped in a blood-red mist, making her voluptuous chest, slender waist, and long legs appear fleetingly. She was extremely alluring.

This woman was the Goddess of the Fane of Immortality, Yinghuo.

After Chi Yao had become a goddess, she went to kill the ten blood emperors of the Immortal Vampires, and after that, the imperial army invaded the Northern Region in a massive operation to wipe out all of the Immortal Vampires in Kunlun Realm.

Who would have thought that this demoness was still alive?

Chapter 1795 - The Fury of the Phoenix and the Zhuque

Chapter 1795: The Fury of the Phoenix and the Zhuque

Yinghuo did not recognize Zhang Ruochen as she held the Compendium of Beasts, as she controlled thousands of Bloodbats, they surrounded Zhang Ruochen whole.

Whoosh.

A moment later, the Bloodbats dispersed.

The cripple had disappeared without a trace.

“Was he eaten to oblivion?”

Yinghuo’s curving eyebrows formed a gentle frown, and she felt a little weird.

The cripple, for him to be able to pursue Shi Kai, his strength must have been extraordinary, how could he be so feeble?

Zhang Ruochen had long disappeared into hundreds of miles away. In order to save someone, he did not fight with Yinghuo and used Dimensional Shift to teleport away.

At this moment, he held the Ancient Abyssal Blade in one hand, and the Eight-Dragon Umbrella in another as he blocked Shi Kai.

Shi Kai stopped and looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was like an ant, and said, “For you to be able to escape Luocheng, that meant you are somewhat capable. But why did you chose to chase me and meet your doom?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the iron chains in Shi Kai’s hands as he thought about countermeasures, and said to himself. “Only by breaking the chains, and freeing both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque can I deal with Shi Kai.”

Shi Kai seemed to have seen through what Zhang Ruochen was thinking and laughed. “Tianmingzi, still not showing up

yet?”

Zhang Ruochen sensed five powerful saint aura appearing from the night veil, and his heart immediately sank, realizing that he had walked into Shi Kai's trap.

Of course, the trap was not necessarily set for him, but he had jumped into it nonetheless.

A series of laughter rang out in the void.

Immediately after, the Five Scions of Tianyuan appeared in five positions around Zhang Ruochen, surrounding him.

Seeing the Five Scions of Tianyuan, both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque went pale, as they looked at each other and smiled bitterly. It seems like this is the end for them.

Tianmingzi stroked his beard and smiled triumphantly.

“Cripple oh cripple! You are just too meddling, and your doom today is fated.”

Zhang Ruochen very quickly regained his composure and said, “The Six Scions of Tianyuan are known figures in the Tiankui Realm, and for you to work with the cultivators of the Infernal Court, aren't you afraid that if I were to report this to the Celestial Palace, not only your demise is assured, your sect too will face imminent destruction.”

Tianmingzi was confident and replied. “Cripple, you are also a cultivator who had reached the realm of a Saint King, how can you be so naive? There is only eternal interests, and no eternal enemies, so what if we work with Shi Kai? If we just kill you, who else would know?”

“Then you better pray that you can really kill me.” Zhang Ruochen spat back.

Shi Kai did not want to stay here for much longer and said. “I have captured Black Phoenix and White Zhuque and brought them here. Now can you lot first plant the Saint Worms into them? These two b*tches are quite strong. If not for you lot bringing me into Luocheng and placed me in Saint Xu Place. I had no way to approach them discreetly. Ambushing them is as difficult as climbing the heavens.”

Black Phoenix and White Zhuque now finally understood how they had suffered the sneak attack, and were furious, wishing that they could rip the Five Scions of Tianyuan apart, and reducing them to ashes.

Tianmingzi smiled. “Don’t worry, once we plant the Saint Worms in them, no matter how strong their willpower is, they will be reduced to obedient good girls. Master Jie will definitely love this gift, and our cooperation opportunities will be more in the future.”

These people seemed to think that Zhang Ruochen was done for, and dared to spill whatever secret they had before him.

“Tianmingzi, dare to fight me?”

Black Phoenix crawled up from the group, and a sharp, cold light appeared in her phoenix eyes

But, at this moment she looked miserable, and her black silken dress was torn in many places, revealing her snow-white skin, and her slender beautiful legs were exposed before everyone, and even her lace underpants was also exposed.

The Five Scions of Tianyuan stared at her alluring body and smiled. Among them, Tianjinzi and Tianjuezi’s eyes glowed with lust and were full of desires.

“Black Phoenix and White Zhuque are the most famous beauties from Taibai Realm, how about we have some fun with them before gifting them to Master Jie?” Tianjinzi said.

Tianmingzi still had a serious look on his face, but he gently nodded.

Black Phoenix looked at the eyes of the Five Scions and how could she not know what they were thinking. She gritted her teeth and immediately rushed toward them.

Bam!

Shi Kai’s stone arms tugged, and pulled Black Phoenix back, and her body fell back onto the ground.

Tianmingzi walked straight away and pulled out a porcelain bottle as he smiled. “Want to fight with me? Sure, once I plant the Saint Worm in you, we can fight all day long.”

Black Phoenix's face was deadly pale and did not want to be humiliated, so she wanted to blow up her saint source.

But the chains in Shi Kai's hand locked down the Saint Qi in her body.

White Suzaku looked pitiful as having her neck chained was quite the humiliation for this proud daughter of heaven, and felt like she was a collared dog. If she were to be planted with the Saint Worm, she dared not imagine how would she end up in the future.

“Are you really treating me like I don't exist?”

A burst of flame appeared under Zhang Ruochen's feet as he activated the inscriptions in the Ancient Abyssal Blade, and blasted off, as he charged at Shi Kai.

“Haha, instead of thinking of escaping with your life, you actually dared to strike, this is the first time I've seen a Saint King as foolish as you.”

Tianjuezi's voice was wild as he pulled out a battle ax and swiped at Zhang Ruochen as he confidently said, “Don't interfere, I will avenge Tianyuzi myself and cripple his other leg.”

The battle-ax was as big as a door and instantly burst out the full strength of the Fifth Radiance.

Zhang Ruochen's pupils narrowed as his body rotated like a spin top as the Ancient Abyssal Blade collided in succession.

Bam! Bam!!

In the end, seemingly unable to match Tianjuezi's strength, Zhang Ruochen's body was sent flying.

“I am an Eight-step Saint King, you are still a long way from me, cripple.”

Tianjuezi leaped up to pursue as he had the battle-ax in both hands and slashed at Zhang Ruochen.

Long before the battle-ax landed, its force had already torn the ground apart, creating a fissure that was dozens of feet apart.

And if it really landed, even a thousand-foot-high mountain peak would have been split in half.

A menacing smile appeared on Tianjuezi's face as if he wanted to torture and kill Zhang Ruochen, therefore, the ax was aimed at Zhang Ruochen's right leg.

A playful smile flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

If it was fight strength against strength, Zhang Ruochen's Five-step Saint King realm may not be a match for Tianjuezi.

But Zhang Ruochen was not just a martial artist, he was also a master of time and space.

WHOOSH!!

Tianjuezi's vision blurred for a moment, and the cripple had disappeared.

Not good.

Tianjuezi's reaction was fast, as he patted his waist, and immediately activated a talisman hidden in his belt, and forming a defensive shield.

Zhang Ruochen did not attack Tianjuezi but shifted not too far away from where Tianmingzi and Black Phoenix was, immediately charging at them.

Tianmingzi was about to implant the worm and suddenly, his eyes glanced sideways. "Damn it, why Tianjuezi can't even deal with a cripple?"

Tianmingzi's cultivation had reached the realm of a Nine-step Saint King, and he grasped at the void as more than seventy thousand precepts of the palm appeared in his hand. With the push of his palm, a force wave surged out.

Zhang Ruochen's entire vision was completely covered by a handprint.

That handprint was colossal with five fingers piercing into the sky, while the palm was like a flying chunk of earth.

Black Phoenix knew that the cripple would not be able to block the attack, and closed her eyes as she dared not look.

However, the act of the cripple desperately trying to rescue her, she had branded it in her heart.

In the past, even the famous heroes who had wanted to pursue her had been refused by her with the excuse of ‘I won’t look for a partner in the path before I reach the realm of a Supreme Saint.’

But at this moment, she thought that, if she could survive this tribulation today, even if the cripple were to be disabled, or no matter how ugly he was, she must give him a chance.

As she thought of this, she heard a crisp sound by her ear.

Crack!

The chain that was clamped onto her neck was cut off by a sword slash, and immediately, a potent surge of Saint Qi filled her body.

Black Phoenix opened her beautiful star-like eyes and only saw the cripple was by her side, and she had no idea how did he dodge that palm strike from Tianmingzi.

At this moment, a strange emotion welled within Black Phoenix. How did this cripple be so majestic and cool?

“Strike now,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Black Phoenix nodded as a cold, sharp light appeared in her eyes. Black flames gushed out of her jade-like body and instantly turned the area within a hundred miles into a blazing domain.

“For her cultivation to so powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen was sent flying back by the force of the flames.

“You have insulted me earlier, and now you shall suffer the fury you deserve.”

A pair of huge phoenix wings appeared behind Black Phoenix, and both wings looked like heavenly black blades and slashed at Tianmingzi.

Black Phoenix, who was in a state of rage was a bit stronger than usual and sent Tianmingzi, who was still astonished,

flying several miles away.

Tianmingzi was not injured, and after regaining his balance, stared at Black Phoenix, and then at Zhang Ruochen as he muttered in a low voice. “The power of space, that cripple is a cultivator of dimensions.”

Seeing that Black Phoenix broke free, Shi Kai and the other four Scions of Tianyuan were shocked and immediately charged at her, as they tried to suppress her again.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen used his Dimensional Shift again, and reappeared beside Shi Kai, and struck out like lightning as he cut off the chains of White Zhuque’s neck.

Immediately, a sharp, harsh voice came out of White Zhuque’s mouth.

The sound wave was so strong that one could faintly hear it even thousands of miles away.

White Zhuque was no longer quiet like before, as her fury raged and her long hair fluttered. As she flew into the air, she turned the entire sky white.

“You shall face the fury of the Zhuque.”

White Zhuque directly used her strongest trump card, as she held the Pennannular White Jade Ring, as she fell from the city, and launched her attacks at Shi Kai with a vengeful abandon.

The Pennannular White Jade Ring was a fragment of a Supreme Saint Artifact and was the size of the palm, it was white as jade and crystal clear.

Voosh!

A densely packed Supreme Inscriptions crisscrossed over the surface of the Pennannular White Jade Ring and exuded a trace of Supreme Power.

Shi Kai clearly knew the power of the Pennannular White Jade Ring, and it let out a roar as Supreme Saint wards appeared on both of its palms, and blasted out an intermediate-level saint technique palm strike, to fight against White Zhuque’s attack.

Boom!! Boom!!

Like a beam of light, Pennnanular White Jade Ring shattered Shi Kai's right palm and shot through his palm before hitting it in the right leg and shattering it into pieces. The shockwave that came from the power of the Pennnanular White Jade Ring shook the ground till it sank and formed a large crater.

Chapter 1796 - Killing Tianjuezi

Chapter 1796: Killing Tianjuezi

“RAWRRR!”

Shi Kai was extremely pissed off, as it howled into the air.

Immediately after, wisps of white gas gushed out of the broken palm and leg.

Under the stimuli of the white gas, the rubbles within a radius of several hours meters all flew up toward Shi Kai and merged into its body and reform its left arm and legs.

However, the Supreme Saint wards on both of its palm were shattered now, and Shi Kai’s strength had decreased significantly.

White Zhuque had obviously consumed a lot of Saint Qi in that attack earlier and was unable to continue to spur the Supreme Power of the Penannular White Jade Ring. She then deployed a huge pair of Zhuque wings, as she swooped down with a saint sword in hand and slashed at Shi Kai.

Shi Kai spat out a white light beam out of its mouth, and there was a piece of jade of unknown materials within the light that clashed against White Zhuque’s sword.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

BAM!!

The two masters fought almost to a standstill, and White Zhuque actually had the upper hand.

Zhang Ruochen had already retreated to a distance away, as he nodded slightly he said to himself. “The Stone Clan is one of the top three clans in the Infernal Court. While the number of their clansmen are lesser than any of the other three mid or lesser races, but within the same realm, the Stone Clan is quite powerful.”

“That Shi Kai, with him being at the peak of an Eight-step Saint King, he probably could fight against a Nine-step Saint King of the Lesser Precept-World realm.”

Of course, what surprised Zhang Ruochen more was White Zhuque’s strength. She should only have just broken through the Eight-step Saint King realm not too long ago, yet her combat prowess was quite a bit stronger than Shi Kai.

On the other end, Black Phoenix, who was in a berserk state was fighting head-to-head with Tianmingzi, knocking down mountains one by one and rending cracks all over the ground.

The other few Scions of Tianyuan wanted to help Tianmingzi but could not get into the combat zone. And it was difficult to intervene even with a ranged attack.

So they pointed their blades at Zhang Ruochen.

“Damned cripple, if not for you, both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque would have succumbed to the Saint Worm, and become our thralls.”

For their downed pray to get away, it was really the case of the greater one wishes, the greater the disappointment was. Tianjinzi was furious as his pupils turned golden and a large amount of Saint Path precepts flowed in his eyes.

“Gaze of Destruction.”

Two golden light beams blasted out from Tianjinzi’s eyes, unleashing a powerful, destructive force. Two deep trenches were formed wherever the beams blasted past.

The Gaze of Destruction is a Jingmiao-level intermediate saint technique.

In combination with Tianjinzi’s thirty thousand Saint Path precepts with the saint technique, the attack power unleashed could destroy anything.

Zhang Ruochen opened the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and spun the surface to fight against the two golden beams of light.

VOOSH!

All of the ground, rocks, and vegetation beneath Zhang Ruochen's feet were all melted into golden droplets in an instant.

At the same time, Tianjuezi took the battle-ax the size of a door and leaped past the Eight-Dragon Umbrella, unleashing the full strength of the Fifth Radiance, and slashed at Zhang Ruochen. The battle-ax exuded five layers of difference brilliance, as a destructive Saint Path power surged out of it.

Zhang Ruochen held the Eight-Dragon Umbrella in one hand as he fought against Tianjinzi.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen held the Ancient Abyssal Blade and activated the wards within the sword, and the souls of thirteen elephants appeared on his arm as he slashed back, and met the Tianjuezi's blow head-on.

Tianjuezi surely was an Eight-step Saint King and was three realms above Zhang Ruochen. This ax blow was so powerful that it blasted Zhang Ruochen into the ground.

WHOOSH!!

Zhang Ruochen burst out of the ground behind Tianjuezi.

Even with the Armor of Words blocking the attack, he was still wounded by the battle-ax, and saint blood flowed down Zhang Ruochen's right shoulder and flowed along his arms and blade onto the ground.

Tianjuezi turned around and snorted. "You sure are a tough cookie, I'll kill you within ten ax strikes."

Immediately after, Tianjuezi once again activated the power of the battle-ax as halos of saint power burst out.

White Zhuque, who was fighting with Shi Kai, saw Zhang Ruochen in a dangerous situation, and immediately sent a telepathic message. "Cripple, you are not their match. Leave now."

White Zhuque thought that the cripple was holding off Tianjuezi, Tianjinzi, and the rest for them, and said again, "Both Black Phoenix and I are free now, and if we want to escape, they cannot do anything at all. When I'm done with

Shi Kai, it will be the death of the Five Scions of Tianyuan. Retreat now, and save your life.”

Zhang Ruochen seemed to not have heard White Zhuque’s voice as he stared at Tianjuezi before him, and said. “Want to kill me in ten ax strikes? You are overestimating yourself.”

Zhang Ruochen roused his Precepts of Truth and merged it together into his blade, and with a slash, the sword flew into the sky.

This sword not only contain the powerful sword force, but it also was also unleashing six times the attack power.

“Hmph.”

Tianjuezi snorted coldly, with some disdain.

But the next moment when the battle-ax and the Ancient Abyssal Blade clashed, Tianjuezi’s expression changed.

The sword in the cripple’s hand was bursting out power like a divine steel mountain and crashed against the giant ax.

Tianjuezi’s entire body shook as he flew backward uncontrollably.

“Precepts of Truth, it’s the Precepts of Truth...unleashing six times the attack power...”

Tianjuezi’s eyes widened, as he spat a mouthful of saint blood onto the battle-ax, and in a very short time, he activated the full strength of the Sixth Radiance.

The full power of Sixth Radiance may seem like just an additional layer of saint power halo than the Fifth Radiance, but its power was many times stronger.

Suddenly, Tianjuezi found that he could not move, as the time around him seemed to have come to a standstill, and the activated full strength of Sixth Radiance could not be unleashed.

On the other hand, the cripple charged it with his sword like a meteor.

SHINNKK.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade sunk into the center of Tianjuezi's brow, as his head shattered and turned into a cloud of blood mist.

Zhang Ruochen held the Ancient Abyssal Blade and fell to the ground.

BAM!!

Tianjuezi's headless body too fell heavily onto the ground.

The next moment, the headless body shot up from the ground and swung the battle-ax with the power of the Sixth Radiance toward Zhang Ruochen's waist.

"His vitality is so strong that he has not died off yet?"

Zhang Ruochen used the Dimensional Shift and avoided the ax blow.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

The ax swept past, and a thousand-meter-high mountain in the distance was sliced in half and collapsed.

Tianjuezi's Sea of Qi was after all smashed by Zhang Ruochen's sword thrust. And that ax strike exhausted all of the Saint Qi stored in within the meridians in the body, and immediately, the headless body became colder and colder, and finally went silent.

Tianjinzi, Tianshangzi, and Tianxuzi all had jaw-dropped expressions. Clearly, none of them were expecting Tianjuezi, who had the absolute upper hand, to be killed so suddenly and decisively.

Zhang Ruochen first took Tianjuezi's saint source, before taking out a Yin Bottle, and stored the latter's saint soul fragments within it.

White Zhuque had been paying attention to the battle between the cripple and Tianjuezi. Seeing the cripple killed Tianjuezi, there was a thoughtful look in her eyes as she faintly guessed the true identity of the cripple.

Earlier on, she had clearly sensed spatial fluctuations.

Tianjinzi roared, “Cripple, hand over Senior Brother Tianjuezi’s saint source and saint soul fragments, or we will make your life a living hell.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled faintly. “Even an Eight-step Saint King like Tianjuezi died under my blade. Your cultivation has yet to reach the realm of an Eight-step Saint King right? Who gave you the courage to challenge me?”

Tianjinzi, Tianshangzi, Tianxuzai’s cultivation level were all peak Seven-step Saint Kings, and even if the three of them were to strike together, Zhang Ruochen was not afraid of them.

Tianxuzi said. “Activate the Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation to kill the cripple, and avenge Senior Brother Tianjuezi.”

Tianjinzi, Tianshangzi, and Tianxuzi each took out a shining piece of mail and infused all of their Saint Qi into it. Suddenly, three massive Saint Qi vortexes appeared between the heavens and earth.

Three Saint Qi vortexes collided and turned into a Xuanwu, tens of feet high.

The Xuanwu was just a phantom, but the aura it exuded was far stronger than Tianjuezi, someone of the Eight-step Saint King realm.

In fact, the Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation needed all six of the Scions of Tianyuan to unleash its full power. They had used this formation to kill a Nine-step Saint King once.

WHOOSH!!

The sound of breaking wind came.

Tianmingzi rushed out of the night veil and dashed toward the Xuanwu phantom, wanting to rendezvous with Tianjinzi and the others, and personally take control of the formation.

Black Phoenix chased after Tianmingzi and shouted. “Cripple, stop him. We can’t let him enter the formation.”

Zhang Ruochen used the Imperial Swordsmanship technique, and blasted the Ancient Abyssal Blade out, transforming it

into a sword light and flew toward Tianmingzi. Zhang Ruochen then instantly roused the power of the Fire God's Gauntlet and mobilized the Precepts of Truth to unleash a six-fold attack power as he blasted out with a palm strike.

Tianmingzi just flicked his finger to deflect the Ancient Abyssal Blade away.

“Futile attempt, DIE!”

Tianmingzi's eyes were bloodshot, as he struck his palm out against Zhang Ruochen's palm strike, and wanted to use this strike to kill Zhang Ruochen.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

The palm strike indeed sent Zhang Ruochen flying away like a scarecrow. His Armor of Words was shattered, and he vomiting blood wildly in his mouth. But Zhang Ruochen quickly fell onto the ground and stabilized himself. Not only he was not dead, he instead slowly stood up.

Tianmingzi looked at his palm and wondered if his strength had weakened. Why couldn't he even kill a Five-step Saint King?

Zhang Ruochen wiped the blood on the corner of his mouth as he said to himself. “If only I had broken through to a Six-step Saint King, then I could fight Tianmingzi without losing so badly.”

Tianmingzi joined Tianjinzi and the rest and took out a piece of mail.

Suddenly, the Xuanwu phantom got even more condensed, and the area covered by the Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation became wider and wider and looked like it had the power to swallow the clouds.

Black Phoenix landed beside Zhang Ruochen, and first looked on with a concerned look as she inquired about his injury. And after learning that he was fine, she said. “The Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation has been activated. Only a combination attack formation from White Suzaku and I can break it. The battle from now on will be even more dangerous, you leave first.”

Not too far away, there was a yawning sound.

The Butcher, seemingly looked like he had just woke up, sat up from the ground and stretched, as he shook his rather dazed head.

He stood up and walked toward the colossal Xuanwu Phantom, and the big cleaver on his back automatically flew out as he majestically said, “Isn’t that just a Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation? Just a slash and it’ll be done for.”

Chapter 1797 - The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans

Chapter 1797: The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans

“Biting off more than you can chew!”

Tianmingzi stood at the heart of the Xuanwu phantom and ignored the oncoming Butcher.

The most powerful aspect of the Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation was defense. How could a mere brute break it?

“Xuanwu Voidbreak,” Tianmingzi said softly.

A series of dense light patterns appeared on the surface of the Xuanwu phantom, and immediately after, it lifted its foot that was as thick as a pillar and stomped on the Butcher.

Woosh!

The vegetation and gravel around the Butcher's body were all blasted away.

Not only did the Butcher not retreat, he instead laughed and stretched his hand out. A massive claw appeared and held onto the sole of the Xuanwu phantom's feet.

“How is that possible?”

The four Scions of Tianyuan in the Xuanwu phantom were all astonished.

The Butcher gave a backhand slash, and blasted out a sword Qi the size of a river of light, and smashing the Xuanwu phantom with an annihilative force.

SHINNKK!

Among the four Scions of Tianyuan, Tianjinzi, Tianxuzi, and Tianshangzi were cut in two on the spot. Even Tianmingzi,

whose cultivation level was that of a Nine-step Saint King, flew out like a cannonball and crashed into the mountain dozens of miles away.

A look of surprise appeared in Black Phoenix's beautiful eyes. She did not expect the Butcher to be so powerful, and for him to break the Six-Mail Cloud Swallowing Formation with just a slash as if he was just chopping vegetables.

“Hahaha! A group of clowns you are... too feeble... fee...”

Before the Butcher could finish talking, he fell on his back.

“What happened?”

Black Phoenix thought that the Butcher had suffered a sneak attack, and immediately put up a protective black flame screen and covered both her and Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said impassively. “Don't worry, he just fainted at the sight of blood.”

The Black Phoenix's beautiful eyes blinked twice, not knowing what to say, and after a while, she said. “I'll deal with Tianmingzi. I'll leave here to you!”

With a 'swish', Black Phoenix disappeared.

A Saint King level cultivator, even when cut in two, would not die as long as his Saint Soul was not destroyed.

So, Zhang Ruochen summoned out three sword hilts, and stabbed Tianjinzi, Tianxuzi, and Tianshangzi at the center of their brows, before he walked over with confidence.

He then took out the Yin Bottle, and Zhang Ruochen began to collect the soul remnants of the three.

Saint Devourer rushed out and planted its roots on the corpses of the four Saint Kings, and started to absorb them.

By the time Black Phoenix returned with Tianmingzi, who was seriously wounded and unconscious, the four saint corpses had already turned into desiccated corpses. When the cold wind blew, a soft cracking sound rang out, and they were all reduced into four piles of mud.

Bam!!

Black Phoenix tossed Tianmingzi onto the ground, and used a rope specifically to imprison a Saint King, and locked it on Tianmingzi's neck.

“What's the point of keeping him alive?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Black Phoenix's eyelashes rose up, as her long hair fluttered in the wind, laughing as she said. “Killing him just like that is too easy for him. Tianmingzi and the others are just pawns, and there are even more powerful characters behind them. Want to implant a mind-control worm in me, and take this saintly maiden as a thrall, there is a heavy price to pay for that.”

When he heard ‘this saintly maiden’, Zhang Ruochen felt a little weird, Black Phoenix in the past would not have called herself that.

Of course, with Black Phoenix's cultivation and beauty, a ‘saintly maiden’ was definitely a matching moniker.

Zhang Ruochen placed his hands on his back and said. “You are going to hand him to the Sub-terminal of Merits, and hand him over to the Celestial Palace and the Fane of Merits to judge him?”

“Yes.”

Black Phoenix added, “Colluding with the beings from the Infernal Court and attempted murder of Celestial Court comrades are serious crimes. Not only must Tianmingzi die, but the people behind him must die too, and even the god of Tianyuan would have to pay some sort of price.”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes stared at Black Phoenix's body before saying, “You should change into a new saint robe. It's a waste to stand before me like this!”

Black Phoenix's silken dress was torn all over, revealing a large area of snow-white skin.

“Never mind, take it as a repayment of gratitude.”

Black Phoenix said boldly and even tossed Zhang Ruochen a flirtatious gaze, deliberately teasing him.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and shook his head before dragging the Butcher on the ground as he turned around and left into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen dared not provoke such an assertive, daring, and straightforward woman like Black Phoenix. Should she have any misunderstandings, he was afraid that he will eventually hurt her.

It was due to him doing something he should not have done while drunk, and worries that he ends up making beauties suffering for him.

“That damn cripple is just too upright a character! For him to turn around and leave when an unparalleled beauty is standing before him.”

Black Phoenix gently bit her alluring, bouncy lips, and stared at Zhang Ruochen’s limping silhouette, a smile appeared in her eyes.

WHOOSH!!

A white light fell from the sky and onto the ground, before forming into a figure of unparalleled beauty.

It was White Zhuque.

“When Shi Kai saw Tianmingzi was taken captive, it used its Earthwalker technique to escape. As long as we are on land it is just too difficult to capture or kill those Stone-clan cultivators!”

White Zhuque felt some regret, and the light of hatred still flashed in her eyes.

This time around, both she and Black Phoenix, could be said to have been disgraced by Shi Kai’s hands.

If not for Zhang Ruochen rescuing them, they would probably have been a goner.

This grudge was as big as the heavens.

Immediately afterward, White Zhuque added, “However, Shi Kai had been severely wounded by me, and he should not be able to cause trouble in the short term.”

Black Phoenix changed into an extremely gorgeous thousand-feather phoenix saint robe. It was colorful, with a faint fragrance about it, revealing the curvature of her body vividly.

There was an adage of clothes maketh a man, and this rang especially true.

Black Phoenix had excellent temperament, and by putting on this saint robes, she was even more beautiful and alluring, like a real Phoenix fairy descending upon mortal realms.

White Zhuque revealed a strange look in her eyes as she said. "Sister, this thousand-feather phoenix robe is too eye-catching! Weren't you saying that we should keep a low profile while we are outside?"

Black Phoenix ignored White Zhuque as she turned a circle around Zhang Ruochen as she let out a chime-like smile.

"Cripple, is this saint robe beautiful?"

"It is," Zhang Ruochen replied.

Black then said, "Then, if the saint robe more beautiful, or me? There can only be one answer."

Zhang Ruochen naturally would not think that Black Phoenix, who was of a Saint King realm, would love a cripple that she had never met before just because he saved her once.

It was obvious that Black Phoenix took him for an unromantic block of wood and deliberately tried to poke at him.

Zhang Ruochen played along with her. "Of course, you are more beautiful."

"Hehe."

Black Phoenix smiled and said. "Then, if this saintly maiden were to give you a chance to pursue me, do you want it?"

White Zhuque showed a thoughtful look, apparently thinking if Black Phoenix was joking or being serious. At the same time, she was also considering whether to tell Black Phoenix the guess she had in her heart.

"Please don't tease me. Let's go back to Luocheng first."

Zhang Ruochen was worried about the people in Luocheng, so he rushed back first.

Black Phoenix wanted to chase after him but was pulled back by White Zhuque as the latter used telepathy and said something to her.

“What? He...? Is it possible? Doesn't look like it! According to the legends, the Scion of Space and Time is a magnificent person and is one of the most outstanding figures among the rising stars in the ten thousand realms of the Celestial Court. God knows how many daughters of heavens want to meet him, how could he be a cripple?”

“I might be wrong then!”

Black Phoenix nodded slightly and felt that the cripple had only learned a few spatial techniques and was definitely not the Scion of Space and Time, Zhang Ruochen. After all, his lameness was not an act.

...

Morning, the next day.

In Luocheng, Zhang Ruochen, the Butcher, the Fool, Black Phoenix and White Zhuque gathered together and the table was full of dishes and fine wine.

The Fool grumbled. “A pity! Just a little bit, you know, it was really just a little bit I could hold Qi Xiaotian back. But the Immortal Vampires' lifeforce is so strong, and Qi Xiaotian had a pot of Supreme Saint Blood with him. I had already beaten him to a pulp, but with just a swig, he had fully recovered.”

The Butcher responded with disdain, “Qi Xiaotian is so weak and you can't even deal with him. Shameful. Let's see how do you explain this to Her Highness once we get back.”

The Fool spat back. “You are amazing too. Collapsing without making a single move? If you faint at the sight of blood, why don't you dig those pair of eyes off?”

“All right, you damn fool, you wanted to blind me from long ago, yeah?”

...

Zhang Ruochen coughed dryly and interrupted the arguing Fool and Butcher before asking, “You two seemed to be well-acquainted with Qi Xiaotian, who is he?”

Zhang Ruochen recalled running into Yinghuo last night, so he asked.

The Butcher was loud as he guffawed. “Qi Xiaotian is one of the divine scions of the Qitian tribe, one of the ten tribes of the Immortal Vampires, and holds a high status and is quite powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that not only the Immortal Vampires in Kunlun Realm were divided into ten tribes, even the Immortal Vampires of the Infernal Court too had ten tribes.

The Qitian tribe was the most powerful tribe of the ten Infernal Court Immortal Vampire tribes.

“It seems like you have not seen The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans before.” Black Phoenix smiled with her red lips and white teeth on display.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What is The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans?”

Black Phoenix tool out a cyan gemstone and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen infused his spiritual power into the cyan gemstone, and instantly, a series of figures appeared before him with dense introduction texts.

Some of those figures were as tall as the mountain, some looked like demons, some had silver wings, some had beauty comparable to the portraits of the Nine Immortal Beauties.

Black Phoenix added. “The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans records the ten clans of the Infernal Court of those that are strong and have greater potential amongst the Saint King realm. It not only contains their facial images, but also records their cultivated techniques and weapons used, and even their weaknesses.”

“At the same time, The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans also marked their danger index.”

“For example, Shi Kai, who is at the pinnacle of an Eight-step Saint King realm has a danger index of level four. Qi Xiaotian’s danger index had reached level five.”

Zhang Ruochen found the graceful and alluring figure of the Rakshasa Princess Luo Sha. Her danger level was actually seven, and that surprised Zhang Ruochen. Was The Rakshasa Princess that dangerous?

Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual powers withdrew from the cyan gemstone. “This is a good thing.”

Black Phoenix smiled. “I’ll give it to you!”

“Really?” Zhang Ruochen was a little surprised.

Black Phoenix added, “For this saintly maiden to give you this precious treasure without even batting an eyelash, aren’t you going to give something back?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately searched for a suitable item in his storage space and prepared to exchange it for the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans.

The Fool smiled. “Actually, that thing is not particularly precious. You just need a saint stone to buy it from the Sub-terminal of Merits.”

The Butcher hurriedly tried to stop the Fool but was too late as the Fool had already blurted it out.

Black Phoenix’s pair of black phoenix eyes stared at him and said, “No one would take you for a dumb person if you don’t speak.”

The Fool heard the Butcher’s telepathic message and realized that he had said something he should not have. He hurriedly went over to Zhang Ruochen and said in a hushed voice. “I... I... was just talking nonsense earlier, and don’t take it for real. It’s a good thing, a precious thing indeed. I’d say that you can’t even buy one for a hundred million saint stones.”

Flames were about to pop out of Black Phoenix’s eyes. Where did this annoying idiot come from?

“Found it!”

Zhang Ruochen was not concerned about the true value of The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans, but he wanted to make friends with two masters in Black Phoenix and White Zhuque. He pulled out a wooden vial and handed it over.

Chapter 1798 - Qi Xiaotian

Chapter 1798: Qi Xiaotian

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

“This is?”

Black Phoenix took the wooden vial and opened it.

Suddenly, a potent breath of life escaped from the vial.

The restaurant was a wooden structure, and at this moment, the yellowed tables, chairs, beams, and pillars were all sprouting branches and leaves. In an instant, the entire restaurant became a lush land of green teeming with vitality.

The aura flowed around the beam, and the dead wood got a second lease of life.

A gleam of light appeared in Black Phoenix eyes, as she realized that the spring water in the wooden vial must be quite rare.

Zhang Ruochen said. “It’s a bit of the fountain of life I had gotten by chance. No matter how badly injured you are, just by drinking it, your wounds will heal quickly, and help you return to your peak.

The fountain of life is created from the new seedlings of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

As the tree grows, the fountain of life under the tree had become a big pool.

Giving a small bottle as a gift to someone was a trivial matter.

Black Phoenix however did not think so. One should know, the aura of the fountain of life alone was enough to give life to dead wood. It could be seen that even a small vial was enough

to be comparable to a sacred healing pill, and was worth at least tens of millions of sacred stones.

Black Phoenix was a little embarrassed to take it and said solemnly. "The fountain of life is just too precious, and it's like having one more life, I cannot take it. The Maleficent Records of the Ten Clans of the Infernal Court indeed only needs one saint stone to purchase."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Don't have to be so reserved. Take it as a sign of friendship."

Black Phoenix wanted to continue to decline, but the Fool sitting by the side was ready to make a move as he lunged at the wooden vial, yelling. "I want it, I want it."

Black Phoenix flicked her sleeves aside, and put the small wooden vial away as she glared at the Fool again.

Immediately, she put away the small wooden vial like a treasured item, her beautiful eyes flickered as she said. "Then I shall oblige you and take it! Cripple, you are not weak, and are also trained in the way of the dimensions. Surely you are no common folk, what is your real name?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said. "A drifting duckweed has no roots, thus ask not a wanderer of that. A Butcher was just called the Butcher, a fool being called the Fool, the White Zhuque is being called thus, and the Black Phoenix is also the same, why do you need to ask that much? Call me the Crippled, it's a pretty good name."

"Hehe."

Without warning, Black Phoenix approached Zhang Ruochen with her five fingers like lightning, revealing thousands of phantoms of her fingers.

A trace of lightning flowed along her fingers.

Black Phoenix grabbed nothing and failed in her ploy as Zhang Ruochen had disappeared from where he sat and stood several feet away.

Black Phoenix withdrew her hand and looked somewhat discouraged as she said, "We are at the very least friends in

adversity, why are you still so cautious against us? This saintly maiden just wanted to take your mask off and see how you look like, that's all."

Zhang Ruochen said. "If I was not cautious, I'm afraid I'd be long dead already, and how could I live until today? Weren't you two lacked caution that you fell for Shi Kai's ambush?"

Both Black Phoenix and White Zhuque fell silent.

While their cultivation level was far beyond Zhang Ruochen, but if it was a real combat situation, it was very likely they would have perished in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

With just this test alone, Black Phoenix had already noticed that the crippled was not as simple as he looked.

What Zhang Ruochen said earlier was undoubtedly a shock to them.

Black Phoenix and White Zhuque escorted Tianmingzi and left Luocheng.

When they left, Black Phoenix told Zhang Ruochen that they will come back as the deep waters of Luoshui was definitely an awakened sacred soil with great opportunities hidden in it.

At the same time, she also told Zhang Ruochen that the sacred medicines in Luoshui had the same characteristics as the medicines growing at the Divinity Bestowment Altar, and could increase the Saint Path precepts in a cultivator's body, and improve their cultivation level.

The Butcher and the Fool also bade farewell to Zhang Ruochen and said that they were going to meet Her Highness.

As for the Her Highness they were talking about, Zhang Ruochen did not ask too much about her. After all, there were many ancient civilizations that cooperated with the Celestial Court, and the number of Celestial Maidens numbered in the hundreds.

Zhang Ruochen then moved the civilians of Luocheng into the Qiankun Realm and then spent another day and night to get to the various major fishing villages and small towns at the edge

of Luoshui and picking up the surviving fisherfolks before rushing back to Yunwu Commandery.

...

Luoshui was a borderland.

The western shore of Luoshui had fisherfolks living there, close to Qianshui and Yunwu Commanderies.

The eastern shore of Luoshui was a desolate and uninhabited primal jungle. Legends say that all sorts of powerful wild beasts, with dense miasma covering the swamp, with mortal dangers lying within. The people of Yunwu Commandery called the place, the Xuanhuang Wasteland.

The Xuanhuang Wasteland stretched all the way east, and the end of the continent was after who knows how many tens of thousands of miles later, entering the vast Eastern Sea.

The eastern shore of Luoshui, at the borderlands of the Xuanhuang Wastelands, a large mountain that was shrouded in white mist all year round stood tall.

The insides of the mountain had long been hollowed out, with more than a dozen large formation arrays deployed within it. Even if an ordinary Saint King cultivator was to come here, they would be hardpressed to notice the weirdness inside the mountain.

Below the mountain was an underground cavern.

Qi Xiaotian sat on the dragon stone chair at the top, with silver wings on his back and his face pale.

At this moment, Qi Xiaotian was furious, and he roared, “Investigate, investigate immediately, who were the people that fought against us last night? That idiotic looking fatty is actually stronger than me, he must be one of the top-level masters of the Celestial Court.”

Shi Kai sat to the bottom right of Qi Xiaotian and was feeling dejected as he snorted coldly. “If not for the Six Scions of Tianyuan being utter garbage, and cannot even deal with a crippled man, I could have at the very least take Black Phoenix and White Zhuque last night. But... the identity of

that cripple is probably not simple. For him to actually use the power of dimensions. The cultivators of dimensions are a rare bunch.”

“Power of dimensions?” Yinghuo asked softly.

Qi Xiaotian stared at her and asked, “What’s the matter? You know the identity of that cripple?”

Yinghuo stared back at Qi Sheng who was sitting opposite her.

Qi Sheng was once of the strongest among the younger generation of Immortal Vampires in Kunlun Realm, and was the prince of Qitian tribe, and was one of the rare few legendary sons of heaven who could challenge Zhang Ruochen.

But the Qitian tribe in Kunlun Realm was just a tiny branch of the tribe.

Even if Qi Sheng was once a prince, he was now under someone else. Not only was Qi Xiaotian’s cultivation level far beyond him, but he was also one of the imperial princes of the Infernal Court’s Immortal Vampires, and had the backing of a Supreme Saint.

Qi Sheng was no longer as high-spirited as before, and now gained a taste of keeping a low profile as he stood up and bowed respectfully at Qi Xiaotian, and said. “It is said that the scion of time and space, Zhang Ruochen had recently returned to Yunwu Commandery, and Luoshui is close to Yunwu. Now that a cultivator of dimensions had appeared at Luoshui, it is no coincidence!”

Qi Xiaotian laughed and said. “As far as I know, the so-called scion of time and space is just a junior who had barely even matured.”

Qi Sheng had fought Zhang Ruochen more than once and knew how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. “However, the information I got was that Zhang Ruochen had taken care of many of his powerful foes in the Celestial Court, including Gong Ziyang of the Fane of Dimensions, the Fane of Bloody War...”

Qi Xiaotian waved his hand and said. “I know you have suffered a great defeat at Zhang Ruochen’s hands, and it is inevitable that you are afraid of him. But within the lands of Luoshui, I, Qi Xiaotian is king. He better not provoke me or else he will die a horrible death.”

Qi Sheng felt that Qi Xiaotian was underestimating his foe a little too much and frowned as he wanted to speak again.

Qi Xiaotian interrupted and said. “Qi Sheng, I feel that you should immediately collect more human blood, and gather the sacred medicines in Luoshui, and help me refine the Blood Pill of Thousand Ages as soon as possible. This is your top priority.”

“All right.”

Qi Sheng did not say more as he turned and left the underground cavern.

Qi Xiaotian stared at Qi Sheng’s back as his eyes shrank deeply, and said to himself, “I don’t know what’s so good about this coward that Yinghuo had been resisting me for him. If it weren’t for you having some useable value, I’d long refine you into a pot of blood and swallowed it whole.”

“My lord, I will also help you collect human blood.”

Yinghuo stood up and bowed before Qi Xiaotian, then she turned around to chase after Qi Sheng.

Qi Xiaotian smiled and said, “Yinghuo, a beauty like you is rare even among the Immortal Vampires, you don’t have to do this sort of menial work. Stay in the underground cavern tonight, I will teach you a Tongxuan-level intermediate saint technique of the Immortal Vampires.”

“Thank you, my lord, but Yinghuo still wants to collect more human blood as soon as possible to help you refine the Blood Pill of Thousand Ages.”

As she said that, Yinghuo transformed into a thin shadow and flew out of the underground cavern.

Bam!!

Qi Xiaotian's hand slammed heavily onto the table, his gaze chilly.

Shi Kai burst out laughing as he said, "Brother Qi, you are a Nine-step Saint King regardless, why can't you even take a woman for yourself?"

"That woman is not that simple. She already has a supreme artifact that recognizes her as its master, so I can only subdue her. Even so, I cannot do so by force." Qi Xiaotian's gaze was solemn.

Shi Kai said, "You told me that there is an ore vein left over from ancient times; you are not hoodwinking me, right?"

The mist in Qi Xiaotian's eyes dissipated as he laughed. "How can I lie to you, with our bond as brothers. Plus, I hope that you will break through to the realm of Nine-step Saint King as soon as possible, and we will join hands to take control of the Eastern Region. By then, won't every treasure and resources in the Eastern Region all be ours?"

The cultivators of the Stone-clan are different from the other cultivators in that they needed to absorb special energy from the mineral veins of the earth to quicken their cultivation.

The higher the quality of the minerals within the veins, the faster their cultivation speed gets.

Ancient mineral veins would undoubtedly be a fatal temptation for Shi Kai, not only it would help it break through the realm of a Nine-step Saint King, but also possibly gain the opportunity to break into the realm of a Supreme Saint.

Shi Kai looked rather excited as it asked, "Where is that vein located?"

"In the Xuanhuang Wastelands, come with me," Qi Xiaotian said.

Chapter 1799 - Two Years of Closed-door Cultivation

Chapter 1799: Two Years of Closed-door Cultivation

When Zhang Ruochen was back near the imperial city of Yunwu and did not see the cultivators of the Fane of Youshen, he was a little surprised.

“The Heavenly Polars Geomantic Compass has been robbed, and even arm cut off, yet Venerable Hiddenheart doesn’t come to seek revenge?” Zhang Ruochen remained alert.

In the Royal Mountain, the Saint Qi was dense, and sacred herbs with pleasant aroma grew on the cliff. There was spring water flowing in the mountain, the soil multicolored with beautiful, aurora-like optical haze rose in the air.

The deeper he went into the mountains, the more sacred it was.

A vast blanket of black ghostly air appeared. As rumble rose, a thirty-meter-tall skeleton lunged out.

The black skeleton turned into a bone staff and landed in Zhang Ruochen’s hand.

The strength of the evil spirit had increased tremendously after distilling the souls of Yuan Che and others.

After communicating with the evil spirit, Zhang Ruochen learned that, not long ago, the cultivators from the Fane of Youshen had indeed been at the Royal Mountain. But they got stuck in a dimensional array and a time array and attacked by Awesome, the Little Taoist, and the spirits. At last, they left after getting bitten black and blue.

The cultivators of the Fane of Youshen fled and disappeared without a trace.

But Zhang Ruochen did not think the Fan of Youshen would grin and bear it and withdraw from Yunwu Commandery after

the defeat. They would surely want revenge, and once they did, it was going to be even more forceful.

There were always countermeasures.

Zhang Ruochen did not harp on the matter, however. He unleashed his mind power and gathered Awesome, the Little Taoist, Xie Chengzi, the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Demon Ape, and nearly a hundred female Saints below a palace-styled refiner pavilion.

Following immediately, he summoned the Demi Saints and Saint-level beings of the Kunlun Realm.

“Your Highness, Prince!”

All the Saints bowed before Zhang Ruochen.

Standing upright like a long spear, Zhang Ruochen took out the sundial and placed it on the ground. “I am going to activate the sundial and enter the cultivation practice in seclusion for a period.”

“Time flow within two thousand feet of the sundial will experience changes; a year of cultivation would only be equal to a day on the outside world.”

All the Saints were struck dumb by this incredible doodad.

But considering who His Highness, the Prince was, they were relieved.

“Lord, are-are we getting to practice in seclusion together?” asked Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit loudly.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Of course. Otherwise, why would I gather you all here?”

“That is wonderful! I want to take this opportunity to break into the Saint-level realm.”

“Long live, Your Highness!”

“Long live, Your Highness!”

...

A round of ear-shattering cheer rose around the sundial.

Zhang Ruochen arranged several thoughtful Saintesses to guard the access road to the Royal Mountain in case the cultivators of the Fane of Yueshen attacked during the isolated practice. He then took out two Godstones and placed them in the two indentations in the sundial.

As the Godstones released their divine power, a rain of light particles emanated from the sundial and was suspended in every corner within an area of 2,000 feet from the sundial.

Of course, the ordinary cultivators could not see those light rain particles.

As Zhang Ruochen sat down with his leg crossed below the sundial, six Saint Souls appeared, each cultivating a distinct thing.

Three Saint Souls were surrounding the imperial artifact of precept, each on one side, and comprehending the precept.

A Saint Soul was holding up the Saint Monk Xumi's long beard, appreciating the Precepts of Time and of Dimension.

Another Saint Soul was studying the Saint skills, such as Ninth Sword, the twelfth move of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, and the Wheel of the Law's Rebirth of the fourth realm of the Sword of Time.

The last Saint Soul was guarding him, distilling the red precept in his left leg.

In the left leg were a hundred thousand red precepts, the distillation of which would enable Zhang Ruochen to use the power of the God's Left Leg at will, unlike now where he was only a cripple.

Zhang Ruochen possessed the Canon of Truth. He was far quicker than other cultivators in understanding the precept.

Besides, those cultivators who possessed the Canon of Truth could comprehend the precept from heaven and earth without the engraving of the Path of Truth. This was the reason even without practicing cultivation in the Celestial Domain of Truth, Zhang Ruochen's Path of Truth had not declined but was gradually improving.

What worth mentioning was, after Zhang Ruochen killed Wang Xu in Mount Yueshen, he had gotten two ten-thousandths of the Canon of Truth.

That meant Zhang Ruochen had twenty ten-thousandths of the Canon of Truth in his body now.

When the closed-door practice was in its third month, Zhang Ruochen had comprehended 450,000 precepts.

The Heavenly Stream palpitated slightly in the Sea of Qi. It was a sign that he was about to transcend to become the Six-step Saint king.

...

The total of precepts had reached 460,000.

The palpitation of the Heavenly Stream became stronger and stronger as if a giant wave was rolling up in a river.

The fourth month into the closed-door cultivation, the total number of precepts had reached 470,000.

Inside Zhang Ruochen's Sea of Qi, a rumble rose.

The Heavenly Stream calmed down and stopped its palpitation, but the flow of the precept was quicker than before.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen had attained the Six-step Saint King realm.

"Not enough. Continue," said Zhang Ruochen in his mind.

Time ticked away as cultivation continued.

When the two Godstones on the sundial exhausted their divine power, two years had passed.

During the two years of cultivation, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation base had improved by leaps and bounds, the number of precepts in his body had reached 630,000.

Of course, he still had a long way to go before attaining the realm of the Seven-step Saint King.

Generally, only when the number of precepts reached one million, could one enter the realm of the Seven-step Saint

King.

There was a big junction point between the Six-step and Seven-step Saint Kingdom. But if Zhang Ruochen was confident that, it would not affect him. So long as he could find more Godstones, he could quickly comprehend the path and enter the Seven-step Saint Kingdom.

Even a person of Luo Xu stature could only buy two Godstones in Martial Market Bank. The possibility of buying the Godstones through other means of the cultivators was very low. By the looks of things, he had to find other means.

Zhang Ruochen thought of Kong Lanyou from the Ming Hall, Murong Yefeng and Murong Yue from the black market, and Ling Feiyu from the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

Ling Feiyu.

She should have returned to the Kunlun Realm.

And she must now be in charge of the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

These people could have access to the Godstones, and they were trustable.

Zhang Ruochen inscribed three communication light runes and sent them out. But as soon as they left the Royal Mountain, a strange power intercepted them.

Due to the close distance, Zhang Ruochen's spiritual power could sense it.

"Prepare for combat!" he shouted as soon as he sensed something was not right.

His voice alerted the others, who were still in the midst of practicing their cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen tucked away the sundial. Using a Great Dimensional Shift to teleport himself to the edge of the Royal Mountain, he looked out into the distance.

Two Saintesses guarding the Royal Mountain flew up behind Zhang Ruochen and gave a bow. "Congratulations, Your Highness. Your cultivation base has made progress again."

“Did anyone intrude into the mountain during my closed-door cultivation for the past two days?” said Zhang Ruochen with his hands behind his back, his aura unusual.

The two Saintesses shook their heads.

As Zhang Ruochen took out the Azuresky Bow and Whitesun Arrow, the dragon soul and elephant soul appeared on both his arms. The glow on the bow and the bowstring was so bright that it almost blinded the two Saintesses.

Bang!

The Whitesun Arrow shot out like a fogbow.

Boom!

After traveling about 100 miles, the Whitesun Arrow hit the void with a thunder-like boom.

On the spot where the Whitesun Arrow hit, a thousand-foot black altar appeared, suspended in the air with flags flying on it.

The two Saintesses were shocked to see that and were kneeling on one knee on the ground.

“Your Highness...”

“I don’t blame you two. There is a clever stealth array on the periphery of the altar. Even a Nine-step Saint King could have not noticed that, let alone you two,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Dozens of Saint-level cultivators from the Fane of Youshen were standing on the altar.

Standing in the front were three figures—Venerable Hiddenheart, Feng Chengdao, and a faceless figure holding a divine scepter.

This faceless man was the one who intercepted the three communication talismans with spiritual power.

The faceless man looked at the content of the talismans and burst into laughter. “I wonder why a Saint-level cultivator needs the Godstone so desperately.”

Feng Chengdao laughed. “There is only one reason: he must have possessed something precious that only the Godstone could activate.”

Venerable Hiddenheart was not as patient as the faceless man and Feng Chengdao. “As the exponent of Saint Monk Xumi and the Divine Enjoy of Yueshen, it is unbecoming of you to rob me of my valuable possession in Tongming River. You are an utter disgrace to the two great holy figures! If you still have a slight sense of uprightness, come out of the dimensional array and fight with me one-on-one.”

“You got it!”

Zhang Ruochen flew out of the Royal Mountain with alacrity and took out the Ancient Abyssal Blade. “Come on! Let us fight like gentlemen!”

Venerable Hiddenheart was startled.

His shouting earlier was intended to humiliate Zhang Ruochen, goading him to come out and getting himself killed. But Zhang Ruochen took the bait so easily. That worried Venerable Hiddenheart.

“Zhang Ruochen is still too young and easily provoked. Immediately use the power of the altar to suppress him, Elder Wu,”

said Venerable Hiddenheart to the faceless man through telepathy.

The faceless man shook his head lightly.

“Zhang Ruochen has come out of the dimensional array, but he could flee back inside using a Great Dimensional Shift. It could be too reckless for us to use the power of the altar.”

“Venerable, I thought you, as a Nine-step Saint King, could apprehend a small fry like Zhang Ruochen with ease? Are you scared?”

“Am I a joke to you?”

Venerable Hiddenheart stood straight. Not wanting to be looked down upon, he lunged out of the altar with his saintly might toward Zhang Ruochen.

“You are asking for trouble, kid!”

Chapter 1800 - The Nine-step Saint King Is Picking a Fight

Chapter 1800: The Nine-step Saint King Is Picking a Fight

The saintly might of a Nine-Step Saint King was stirring up a storm as far as hundreds of miles away.

Dark clouds had swollen in the sky, blocking out the sun.

On Earth, the wind was howling like a horror beast, Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth seemingly boiling.

“Hand of Brilliance!”

Venerable Hiddenheart’s sole arm was a riot of color. As he struck out with his hand, shock waves formed in front of his palm and moved down toward Zhang Ruochen below.

Hand of Brilliance was Jingmiao-class, intermediate Saint technique. When used together with Precepts of the Palm, it was incredibly powerful.

Facing the powerful move, Zhang Ruochen could have used a Dimensional Shift to escape back to the Royal Mountain. Even the cultivators from the Fane of Youshen were expecting him to do so.

Nevertheless, he stood unmoved on the spot with the Saint Qi forcefully revolving in his body.

Venerable Hiddenheart’s lips curled up as a thought came to mind. “When I struck my palm out and the force landed on Zhang Ruochen a few days earlier in Tongming River, it had hurt him quite a bit.”

“Brilliant Hand is my killer move that is much more powerful than that palm the other day, yet Zhang Ruochen is trying to take it head-on? Fine. I will crush your Saint body into pieces with this palm!”

Zhang Ruochen took a step back with his right leg in a lunge.

As the Eight-Dragon Umbrella opened, a bright golden glow immediately appeared on the umbrella.

Boom!

Venerable Hiddenheart's palm hit the Eight-Dragon Umbrella as if he had hit a large bell. Shock waves of Path burst out into all directions, destroying everything in its path.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen slid back a few miles before he could stop the momentum.

His body was half-buried in the ground, Saint Qi violently surging in his meridians and blood pulsing through his veins. He felt as if his internal organs were turned upside down. But at least he had survived the attack.

“How could this be?” Venerable Hiddenheart was in disbelief.

If it were Zhang Ruochen, in his Six-step Saint Kinghood, failing to kill a Three-step Saint king in one move, he would have been stunned, too.

“Breaking through into the Six-step Saint Kinghood has indeed boosted my strength considerably.”

Zhang Ruochen guffawed in excitement, his Saint Qi rushing from his body into the Eight-Dragon Umbrella.

Roar!

Eight giant golden dragons lunged out from the surface of the umbrella toward Venerable Hiddenheart in a counterattack.

Venerable Hiddenheart immediately flew backward. The eight golden dragons gave chase, circling about him and continuously striking out their claws with a whoosh and swoosh.

With the thrust of both hands, the shadow of a bell appeared and Venerable Hiddenheart successfully blew away the eight golden dragons.

“Eat my sword, too!”

As Zhang Ruochen clenched the hilt of the Ancient Abyssal Blade, dense swordsmanship precepts rushed out of his body while inscriptions appeared on the blade.

The sword arrived like a greased lightning in front of Venerable Hiddenheart.

With no time to think, Venerable Hiddenheart whisked out a Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact-class round shield in front of his body. The shield spun at high speed to form an ever-increasing vortex that carried chaotic energy.

Zhang Ruochen had improved on his swordsmanship during the two-year closed-door cultivation.

His Ninth Sword skill had not reached the complete stage, but there had been significant improvement compared with two years ago.

When he uttered the word “Break!”, the Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact-class shield broke like porcelain by his sword.

“My-My Radiant Shield!”

Venerable Hiddenheart’s eyes reddened as red as he could not accept this reality. How could a Sixth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact-class shield be so fragile?

The Abyss Ancient Sword had already had fused a large number of sacred artifacts and transformed into a Seventh Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact in the past two years.

Standing on the altar, Feng Chengdao focused his vision. “Legend has it that both Zhang Ruochen’s sword and the Blood Dripper of Kunlun’s empress are forged using materials from nature. They could defeat every soldier in the world. I fear that it will not be easy for Venerable Hiddenheart to neutralize Zhang Ruochen.”

“Venerable Hiddenheart will become a laughingstock in the Fane of Youshen if he failed to defeat Zhan Ruochen.” The faceless man laughed.

“Venerable Hiddenheart is the weakest among the Nine-step Saint Kings in terms of combat strength. It doesn’t help that he has lost an arm and that the circulation of his Saint Qi isn’t smooth. But his biggest strength is his ability to control the Abominations. So killing Zhang Ruochen is just a walk in the park for him.”

The Abyss Ancient Sword instantly absorbed the morale and essence Qi of the broken shield. Zhang Ruochen summoned his Precept of Truth into the sword, increasing as much as six times the attack power.

Meanwhile, Venerable Hiddenheart struck his palm continuously to form beams of defensive light.

Boom! Boom!

The Abyss Ancient Sword and Venerable Hiddenheart flew past and missed each other after a series of explosions.

Venerable Hidden heart raised his palm, the white-bone armor on his arm broken, his fingers bleeding.

Even the armor made of Supreme Saint bones could not withstand the attack of the sword in Zhang Ruochen's hand.

Venerable Hiddenheart was as mad as he was furious. Being a Nine-step Saint King, there was nothing more humiliating than being wounded by a Six-step Saint King.

“War Dragon! War Tiger!”

He took out a shroud. It jittered for a second, then two Abominations flew out.

Produced from two corpses of beings with an almost Supreme Saint-level cultivation and various precious metal and drugs and countless conditioning, each of the two Abominations was as powerful as Venerable Hiddenheart.

As the shroud continued to jitter, dozens more Abominations flew out.

These Abominations might not be as powerful as War Dragon and War Tiger, but they were all of Saint King levels.

Because Venerable Hiddenheart possessed the ability to produce and control the Abominations, his stature in the Fane of Youshen was a tad higher than that of Feng Chengdao, whose cultivation base was nearing the Greater Precept World.

Fighting him was akin to fighting three Nine-step Saint Kings and a group of saint king-level elites at the same time.

Even the ordinary Nine-step Saint Kings would lose their nerves at seeing Venerable Hiddenheart.

“That old geezer from the Fane of Youshen has summoned so many Abominations. Things are not looking good for the Lord. We’ve got to give him a hand.”

The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit tried to lunge out of the Royal Mountain, but Awesome, the Little Taoist, dragged him back in.

“Don’t add to the problem. Zhang Ruochen may not necessarily lose.” Awesome, the Little Taoist stared at the black altar suspended in midair, thinking whether to shoot the thing down using his Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the ground, eyes affixed at the dim sky and those hideous Abominations. “I will leave those Abominations to you. I have got to take the life of Venerable Hiddenheart,” he said into the air.

He summoned a Great Dimensional Shift and disappeared into thin air.

An enchanting lady appeared in the same spot where Zhang Ruochen was standing earlier. She was none other than Moyin, who had consumed a large amount of sainthood source for the past two years and achieved the Eight-step Saint Kinghood. Her strength was a notch higher than the ordinary Nine-step Saint Kings.

Her hair shot out, growing as long as a thousand-feet long black whip, and struck all the Abominations in the air down to the ground.

Following immediately, Moyin raised her Seventh Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact-class Infinite Blade. Divine Purification Flame appeared on the blade as she flew out gracefully.

“The Saint Devourer... Zhang Ruochen is letting a Saint Devourer live inside his body!”

Venerable Hiddenheart recognized the true form of Moyin and was no longer underestimating but wary of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen quietly appeared above Venerable Hiddenheart, condensing a Sword Way Xuangang before striking down at once.

Feng Chengdao shouted a warning on the altar. "Watch out!"

Venerable Hidden had sensed the danger and immediately summoned a defensive talisman.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen's sword struck the light shield formed by the defensive talisman and shattered it at once. Venerable Hiddenheart fell into the woods below and smashed up a cloud of dust.

Feng Chengdao could no longer sit by and watch. He pointed at Zhang Ruochen and a beam of light shot out of his finger.

Zhang Ruochen knew there was still a wide gap between him and Feng Chengdao, so he did not want to meet him head-on but dodge using a Dimensional Shift.

Looking up at the altar, Zhang Ruochen sneered at Feng Chengdao. "Venerable Hiddenheart and I agree to fight like men. Are you risking your reputation, trying to disregard the rule, and join hands with Venerable Heart against a junior like me?"

Feng Chengdao laughed. "I don't care about reputation, Zhang Ruochen. I am going to kill you no matter what you say."

Instantly, he leaped out of the black altar and reappeared a hundred feet away.

Feng Chengdao was only at the level of the Lesser Precept World, but he was many times more powerful than Venerable Hiddenheart. His body was flashing continuously and leaped across a hundred feet with each flash.

He was getting closer and closer to Zhang Ruochen. "The cultivators from the Fane of Youshen are shameless!" The Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit suddenly barked.

Upon hearing that, the Fane of Youshen's cultivators on the altar were furious.

The faceless man holding a sacred staff guffawed and flew the black altar toward Royal Mountain.

His spiritual power had reached the early 59th order. Because of this, he could still feel the vigorous Saint Qi of heaven and earth in the Royal Mountain despite he had the shield of the dimensional array and the time array. That place could be a holy land of enlightenment.

In any holy land of enlightenment, there was surely a large number of cultivation resources.

With Venerable Hiddenheart and Feng Chengdao joining hands, Zhang Ruochen would surely die. So he could just ignore him.

The black altar must have possessed some mysterious power; because the dimensional array on the periphery of the Royal Mountain was starting to give way. Even the Mark of Time was blocked by the black light emitted by the altar.

The cultivators in the Royal Mountain started to panic.

They could not imagine the consequence once an army of the Fane of Youshen's elites broke into the Royal Mountain.

Yet, Awesome, the Little Taoist, appeared calm. "Lend me your Saint Qi so I can shoot that thing down."

The Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Demon Ape, Xie Chengzi, and a whole bunch of Saints and Demi Saints sent their Saint Qi to Awesome, the Little Taoist at once. At the same time, the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror was slowly rising to the air and giving out a brilliant purple glow.